



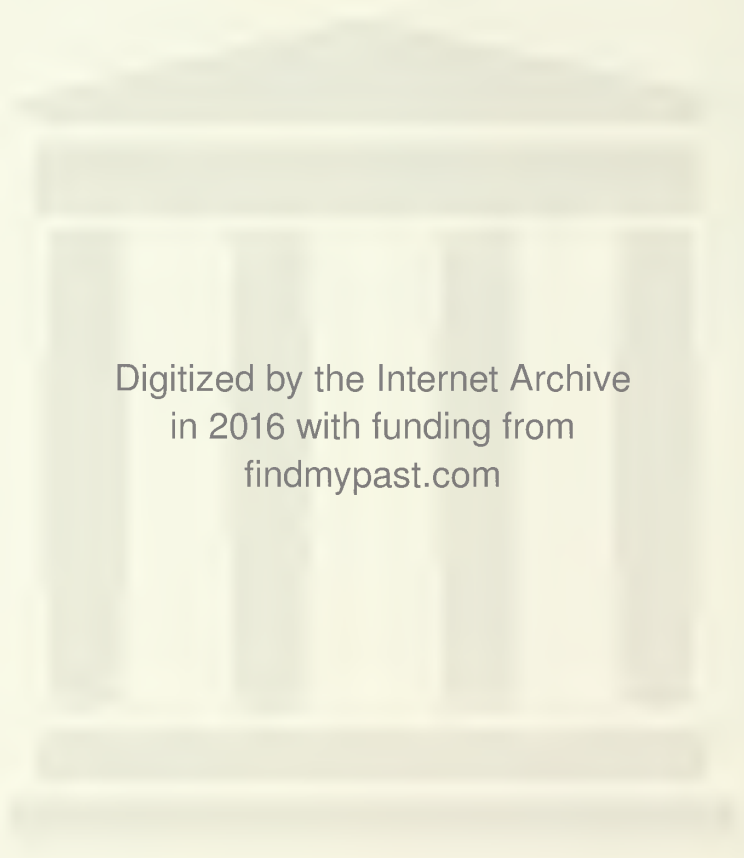
REYNOLDS HISTORICAL  
GENEALOGY COLLECTION

ALLEN COUNTY PUBLIC LIBRARY



3 1833 01744 4693

GENEALOGY  
979.4  
H624E  
1931-1933



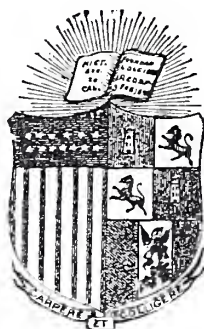
Digitized by the Internet Archive  
in 2016 with funding from  
findmypast.com



Organized November 1, 1883  
PART II & III

Incorporated February 13, 1891  
VOL. XV

## ANNUAL PUBLICATIONS



# HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA

1932

LOS ANGELES, CALIFORNIA



OFFICERS, DIRECTORS, AND COMMITTEES  
OF THE  
HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA  
FOR 1932

OFFICERS

J. GREGG LAYNE.....	President
LILLIAN A. WILLIAMSON.....	First Vice-President
PHIL TOWNSEND HANNA.....	Second Vice-President
LAURANCE L. HILL.....	Secretary-Treasurer
DR. OWEN C. COY.....	Curator

BOARD OF DIRECTORS

J. GREGG LAYNE	LAURANCE L. HILL
LILLIAN A. WILLIAMSON	LINDLEY BYNUM
PHIL TOWNSEND HANNA	ARTHUR M. ELLIS
H. R. WAGNER	

COMMITTEES

PUBLICATION	PROGRAM
Mrs. A. S. C. Forbes, Chairman	Lillian A. Williamson, Chairman
J. Gregg Layne	H. R. Wagner
Lindley Bynum	Estella Williamson
Elmer R. King	Marion Parks

MEMBERSHIP	LANDMARKS
Frank Rolfe, Chairman	Mrs. M. E. Wilber, Chairman
Harriette Saxton	Mrs. Florence Dodson Schoneman
Lindley Bynum	Mrs. A. S. C. Forbes
George Danson	

LOCAL SOCIETY RELATIONS	FINANCE
Mrs. A. S. C. Forbes, Chairman	Arthur M. Ellis, Chairman
William McPherson	J. Gregg Layne
George W. Beattie	Laurance L. Hill
Lindley Bynum	

## TABLE OF CONTENTS

	PAGE
Xth Olympiad . . . . .	271
Hoover . Dam . Project . . . . .	275
Fremont-Pico Memorial Park, Campo de Cauenga . . . . .	279
Acquisition of Campo de Cauenga by the City of Los Angeles . .	291
Report of Commodore Stockton . . . . .	293
Articles of Capitulation, Treaty of Cauenga . . . . .	305
The Adobe House, la Casa de Cauenga . . . . .	311
Affidavit by Eugene R. Plummer . . . . .	312
Don Geronimo Lopez—by Charles J. Prudhomme . . . . .	313
Restoration of Mission San Diego de Alcala— by Albert V. Mayrhofer . . . . .	317
Restoring California's First Mission—by J. Marshall Miller . . .	321
Los Angeles When it Was a City of Vines— by Mrs. A. S. C. Forbes . . . . .	337
Gardens of the Spanish Days of California— by Charles Gibbs Adams . . . . .	347
Arthur M. Ellis—a Biographical Sketch— by J. Gregg Layne and Wm. W. Cary . . . . .	357
Laurance L. Hill—a Biographical Sketch—by Marion Parks . . .	363
Constitution and By-Laws of the Historical Society of Southern California . . . . .	367
Roster—1932—of the Historical Society of Southern California .	372

## Historical Society of Southern California

### Greetings:

As the year 1932 closes, we, as a community have to record the triumphal success of the athletic games of the Xth Olympiad that were held in the Olympic Memorial Coliseum at Los Angeles, and appreciate the true magnitude of the project, the generosity of the citizens, the financial ability and integrity of the members of the Olympiad Commission, and the crowning worth of the athletic youth of the United States of America.

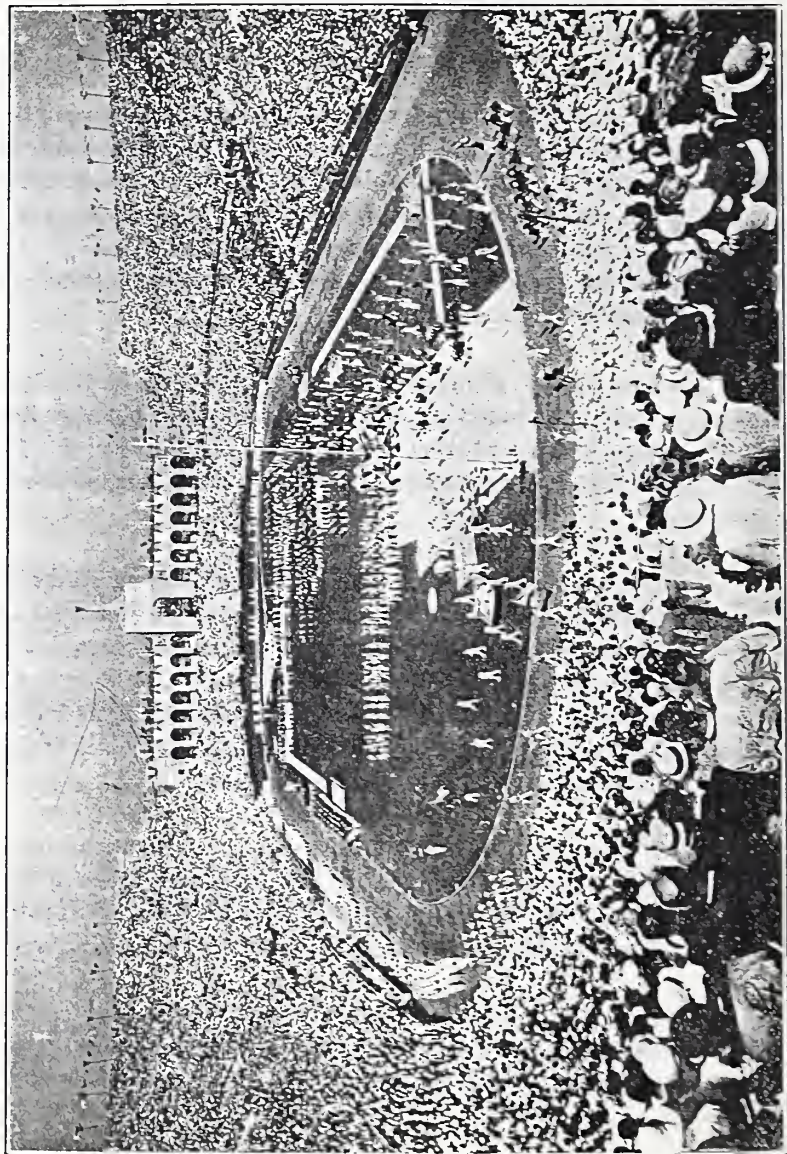
We have further to record the equally interesting project whereby the turbulent Colorado River was diverted from its course into a new channel, thus establishing the fact that the greatest of all engineering projects of the world, the Hoover Dam, was successfully launched.

In our landmarks work, we have great progress to record. Extensive excavations were made at Campo de Cauenga Memorial Park whereby the exact size and dimensions of the Casa de Cauenga was revealed. This is the historic site where Fremont met Pico and the Articles of Capitulation, known as the Treaty of Cauenga, were signed, thus establishing permanent peace in California and finally bringing this state into the possession of the United States.

Another great achievement to be noted is the restoration of San Diego mission chapel. This was the first established mission in the long chain of missions built by the Franciscan friars in Alta California. Also San Diego has marked thirty-eight historic landmarks.

These projects in history and landmarks work set a high mark for future attainments. May Patriotism, Prosperity, and Progress attend us — under Infinite guidance.

Publication Committee



OLYMPIC MEMORIAL COLISEUM — LOS ANGELES, JULY 30, 1932 Photo by Keystone



## XTH OLYMPIAD — LOS ANGELES

*"The main issue in life is not the victory but the fight; the essential is not to have won but to have fought well."*

The revival of the modern Olympic Games, the first of which were celebrated in Athens, Greece, in 1896, was due to the idealism and enterprise of Baron Piere de Coubertin. His first public announcement was as follows:

"Let us export our oarsmen, our runners, our fencers, into other lands. That is the true Free Trade of the future; and the day it is introduced into Europe the cause of Peace will have received a new and strong ally. It inspires me to touch upon the future step I now propose, and in it I shall ask your help, so that together we may attempt to realize, upon a basis suitable to the conditions of our modern life, the splendid and beneficent task of reviving the Olympic Games."

Two years later, a circular to all Athletic Associations brought together in the Amphitheatre of Sorbonne in June, 1894, enough delegates from various countries to organize the International Olympic Committee. At this meeting Baron de Coubertin proposed that the first games of the new era be celebrated in Athens, thus launching the series of modern Olympiads of which Los Angeles celebrated the Tenth.

The ceremony was opened promptly at 2:30 P.M. Saturday, July 30, 1932, in the Olympic Memorial Coliseum, Exposition Park, Los Angeles. Singing of The Star Spangled Banner by a choir of twelve hundred voices prepared the vast audience of one hundred and twenty thousand persons for the "Parade of Nations," when the flower of the world's athletes passed in review before the Vice-President of our nation, Honorable Charles Curtis. These youths entered in the order as prescribed by rule. Greece, founder of the Games, leading, and the United States, host of the Nations, at the rear. The list included thirty-eight nations. After the last group of athletes had moved into position, William May Garland, President of the Organizing Committee of the Olympic Games, gave an address of welcome.

Vice-President Honorable Charles Curtis then formally opened the games with the prescribed words:

"I proclaim open the Olympic Games of Los Angeles celebrating the Xth Olympiad of the modern era."

This was followed by an artillery salute and the Olympic torch ritual, when a mighty column of flame flared up from the peristyle where it was to burn throughout the games. Other addresses were made, and then came the final spectacle of administering the athlete's oath. As the solemn and impressive words of the oath:

"WE SWEAR THAT WE WILL TAKE PART IN THE OLYMPIC GAMES IN LOYAL COMPETITION, RESPECTING THE REGULATIONS WHICH GOVERN THEM AND DESIROUS OF PARTICIPATING IN THEM IN THE TRUE SPIRIT OF SPORTSMANSHIP FOR THE HONOR OF OUR COUNTRY AND THE GLORY OF SPORTS," rang out through the voice of Lieutenant George Calnan, a thousand individual representatives of other nations raised their right hands in token of acquiescence and participation of the oath. The Parade of Nations left the Coliseum. All was in readiness for the games.

During the games there were many heart-aches and disappointments, but the spartan spirit of CITIUS, ALTIUS, FORTIUS, (swifter, higher, stronger) steeled the brave hearts of the youths to smilingly accept defeat as well as victory. No one can ever forget, who heard the ringing words, CEREMONIE OLYMPIC PROTOCOLAIRE, (the Olympic victory ceremony) and the stirring applause that greeted the flags of the winning nations when hoisted to the notes of their national anthems. The sweeping victory of America's athletes astonished the sporting world and left a grave responsibility for the future youth.

Sixteen days of triumph and happiness, then came the closing day and its impressive ceremonies, one of which placed a pleasing responsibility upon the City of Los Angeles when Count Baillet-Latour, President of the International Olympic Committee, delivered into our keeping the Olympic Flag.

Mayor John C. Porter, representing the City accepted the flag in the words:

"Mr. Chairman, I wish to thank you and to assure you that the Olympic Flag you are entrusting to me will be kept in the City Hall

of Los Angeles until the end of the Xth Olympiad, when it will be entrusted to the City of Berlin in 1936."

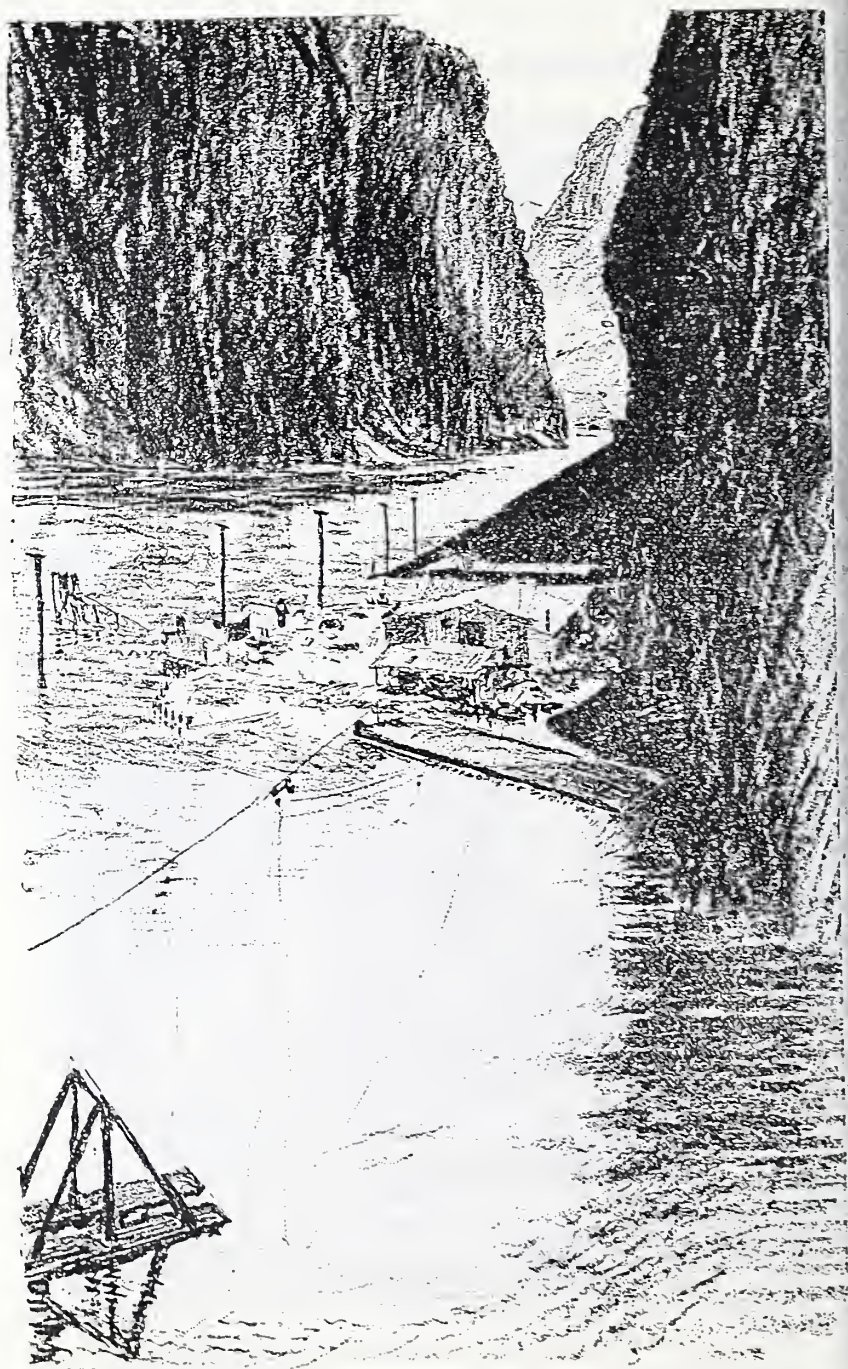
The Olympic torch flamed high and then faded as the echoes of "Aloha", the farewell of the Pacific, were hummed by the throng as they departed in suppressed feeling. The games were at an end.

Hail and Farewell!



Powell Eyre Press Service  
MAYOR JOHN C. PORTER RECEIVING THE OLYMPIC FLAG





February 1932

William Woollett

FLOOD SCENE AT MOUTH OF PORTALS NO. 1 AND 2

## HOOVER . DAM . PROJECT

*Reprinted from HOOVER DAM PROJECT. by WILLIAM WOOLLETT*

ON JULY 3, 1930, President Hoover approved the initial appropriation of \$10,660,000.00 for construction of a dam in Black Canyon, later named "*Hoover Dam*."

Final surveys were immediately instituted, followed as rapidly as possible by the construction under contract of thirty-three miles of standard gauge railroad line and thirty miles of paved highway to connect the project with trunk lines; the erection of 222 miles of transmission line to bring electrical power from the Sierra Nevada mountains; and the choosing of a site for a construction camp, where the town of Boulder City was later laid out to accommodate a population of 6,000 persons.

In the spring of 1931, erection of buildings was started in the construction camp and in twelve months the town included 900 homes, eleven dormitories for 1,500 men, several office buildings, churches, stores, restaurants, garages and theatre, with all conveniences of paved streets, electricity at low rates, an adequate supply of pure water and an efficient sanitary sewer system.

The principal contract for construction of *Hoover Dam*, power plant and appurtenant works was awarded to Six Companies, Inc., of San Francisco in March, 1931, and by the end of that month, this organization had commenced work at a dozen locations. Dormitories and residences were speedily erected in Boulder City, standard gauge railroad lines were laid connecting all major operations, roads were built along the sheer walls of Black Canyon to the inlet and outlet portals of diversion tunnels, cableways and bridges were flung across the river, a sand and gravel screening and washing plant of 500 tons per hour capacity, and a 250-cubic-yard per hour concrete mixing plant were erected.

Two months after the contract was awarded, Six Companies, Inc., was driving diversion tunnels through the walls of Black Canyon around the damsite, to carry the entire flow of the Colorado River while building the dam. Excavation for these four 56-foot average diameter bores, for their aggregate length of three miles, was completed a year later, involving the removal of a million and a half cubic yards of rock.

Lining the tunnels with a three-foot average thickness of concrete and building portals and gate structures, some to support 50 feet by





50 feet steel gates, each weighing three million tons, have been in progress since February, 1932, and will be completed, or nearly so, by February, 1933. According to present plans, the Colorado River started flowing through two of these tunnels on November 13, 1932, and by the time of the spring floods of 1933, each of the four tunnels will be carrying a portion of the river flow.

Work now in progress includes constructing an earth and gravel fill dam, 100 feet high and 700 feet thick, at a location downstream from the inlets of diversion tunnels, to turn the river from its old channel through the tunnels; excavating large niches in the canyon walls for four reinforced concrete towers, 75 feet in average diameter and 338 feet high; stripping loose and overhanging rocks from canyon walls above the damsite and structures downstream; excavating two channels of average dimensions 600 feet long, 150 feet wide, and 120 feet deep that will form the spillways; and driving 56 feet average diameter inclined tunnels connecting spillway channels with outer diversion tunnels.

WALKER R. YOUNG

*Construction Engineer, Department of the Interior*

*The illustrations of Hoover Dam, reproduced by courtesy of Mr. William Woollett, are from a series of etchings and drawings made by Mr. Woollett in which the progress of this gigantic engineering project is depicted in art. The series was exhibited in the Art Commission Rooms of the City Hall and at the Public Library, Los Angeles.*



CAMPO DE CAUENGA — FREMONT-PICO MEMORIAL PARK

## THE FREMONT-PICO MEMORIAL PARK

(CAMPO DE CAUENGA)

### *The Home of Don Tomás Feliz Its Excavation and Proposed Restoration*

By J. MARSHALL MILLER

(Editor's Note: The research and excavation work described in this article have been undertaken by the author, Mr. J. Marshall Miller, a member of the Historical Society of Southern California, for the purpose of assembling and organizing all available facts regarding the Cauenga house, in preparation for the anticipated restoration, hoping thus to eliminate the inaccuracies which often occur in hasty research.

Mr. Elmer R. King, member of the faculty of the John C. Fremont High School, with several of his students, gave able assistance in the excavation work.)

AS the molding of the adobe bricks was progressing, and the walls of his extensive dwelling slowly took shape, Don Tomás Feliz did not dream that this hacienda which he was erecting for his family on the sloping Cauenga\* plain was destined to become a famous landmark of California and the Southwest.

Here at the foot of the north slope of the Providencia (Santa Monica), Mountains, at the northern approach to Cahuenga Pass and within a few hundred feet of the Rio de Porciúncula (Los Angeles River), Don Tomás had selected a site for his home. Nearby a stretch of El Camino Real wound its leisurely way, linking Misión San Fernando with La Ciudad de Los Angeles. Near this spot were fought several battles between the northern and southern factions of Alta California in the days of Micheltorena and Pico. In this no-man's-land of early California the Casa de Cauenga was built in 1845. On the veranda of this house on January 13, 1847, Lieut.-Col. John C. Frémont and Gen. Andrés Pico met to sign the Articles of Capitulation (Treaty of Cauenga) which marked the close of military activities in California between Mexico and the United States, soon to be followed by the cession to the United States of the vast territory now comprising our Southwest.

At the time of the signing of the Articles of Capitulation, the Casa de Cauenga was only two years old. During the next several decades the property underwent several changes in ownership and the house went from varied uses eventually to disuse and ruination. By 1900 only a mound of adobe marked the site of this famous landmark, and



upon the subdivision and development of the tract in 1915-20, the last visible traces of the house were erased in the processes of grading and leveling. As the modern street and property lines run diagonal to the old walls, the later widening of Lankershim Boulevard has destroyed a corner of the foundation. Due to uncertainty of data regarding the exact location, and also to the lack of sufficient funds at the time of the purchase of the property by the City of Los Angeles in 1923, only a part of the ground formerly covered by the house was secured. Not until 1931, when the possibility of restoration was in view and excavation had begun, did the full extent of the original building become known.

Excavation and study of the foundations was undertaken to aid in establishing the true size and features of the house in anticipation of proper restoration, as well as to assure the exact identity and extent of the place. The sources of information pertaining to the early history of the building and its environs and to its original appearance were meager and scattered. No photographs or sketches of the place have been found of earlier date than 1904, and by that time the building was a total ruin. The only source of data which remained to us for the period previous to that date was early surveys or land plats, and in this field of inquiry we had considerable success. Information was obtained from pioneers who remembered the place. Descriptions in contemporary writings have also proved helpful.

Four early surveys are available which delineate that section of the valley. In some cases these give detailed facts about the house itself. The dates of these surveys range from 1854 to 1877.

The earliest survey of which we have knowledge is one by George Hansen dated July 24, 1854. This shows the southwestern portion of San Fernando Valley in the vicinity of Cahuenga Pass, and although it is of quite small scale, it shows the situation of the "Cahunga" house on a portion of the property owned by Tomás Feliz.

The "Plat of Ex-Mission San Fernando," a survey by Reynolds dated March 16, 1871, is a land survey covering the entire San Fernando Valley and outlining the area finally confirmed to Euligio de Célis. This survey shows the location and name of the "Cahuanga" house. The bounds of the entire original Ex-Mission area are shown. The site of the Cahuenga house was in the southeast corner of this area, and not on the Rancho San Rafael or the Rancho Providencia y

Cahuenga as has been supposed.

The third survey of which we have knowledge is a "Map of Portion of Ex-Mission de San Fernando" dated 1874 and signed by A. C. Ruxton, Surveyor, and Frank Lecouvreur, Del. Here again the place of the "Cahuenga House" is clearly shown and named. For many years it was thought that the Cauenga house was a subsidiary of Mission San Fernando and it was often called the "Cahuenga Chapel." This supposition is shown to be incorrect by reference to the 1874 survey which shows the "Carvanza Mission" situated northeast of the Cauenga house and across the road quite near the river.

The field survey book of John Goldsworthy, United States Deputy Surveyor, contains a comparatively large-scale survey of the location of "Cahuenga Ruins" and immediate vicinity, dated August 4, 1877. The extent of the house, which was even then partially in ruin, is clearly shown, with a corridor on the west side, another corridor on the north side and a porch on the east, the property on which the house was outlined being 150.21 feet by 200 feet. A short distance to the north is shown the old oak tree which was near the river bank. This tree is an old landmark usually associated with the Cauenga house. According to one Miguel Linares, brother-in-law of General Andrés Pico and an eye witness on this occasion, it was under this tree that the horses of Pico and Frémont stood while the two men met to sign the Articles of Capitulation in 1847. The inference has sometimes been incorrectly made that the treaty was signed under this tree.

On each of these surveys the house is located and named and its relation to surrounding landmarks clearly shown. Thus there is no question as to the exact spot it occupied or its identity.

Although the knowledge gained from surveys and descriptions was of great value, it was necessarily limited. The last possible source of information was the ruin itself. No particular investigations had been made at the site because the general impression was that the progress of the modern city with its streets and other improvements, had rid the site of all clues. But upon examination of the ground, it was soon discovered that at least some of the foundations and tile floors still remained intact below the present grade. This revelation was most encouraging and upon further excavation many interesting facts were brought to light and solved many puzzling problems.

Before discussing the findings at the site, consideration will be



SURVEY OF CAHUENGA HOUSES BY JOHN GOLDSWORTHY, U.S.A.  
DEPUTY SURVEYOR. MADE AUGUST 4, 1877



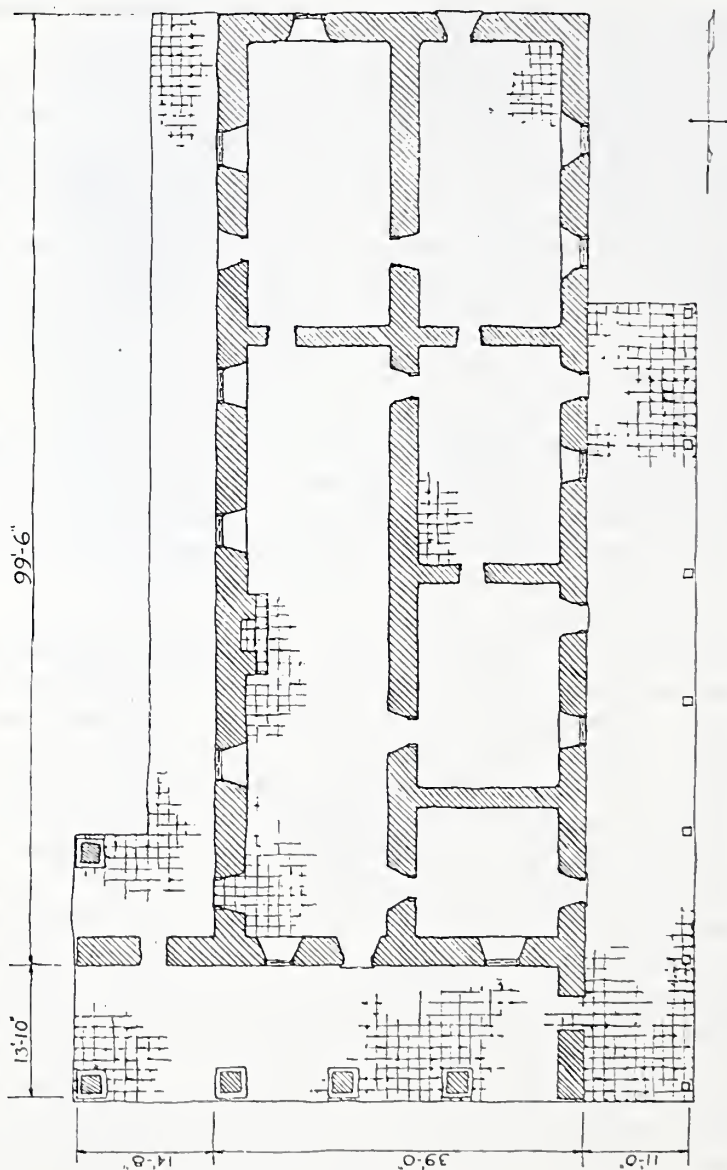
given to the location of the building and its setting in relation to topographical delineations and to recent improvements and developments in the vicinity resulting from the growth of the city.

The tract of land under discussion lies in the southeastern part of San Fernando Valley just north of Cahuenga Pass in the County of Los Angeles. It is in Township 1 North, Range 14 West, San Bernardino and Meridian, near the southwest corner. Upon the subdivision of the property the site of the house became known as Lots 15, 16, and 17 of the Universal City Tract in the City of Los Angeles. These lots are located on the northwest side of Lankershim Boulevard and opposite the Universal Motion Picture Studio. The lots as subdivided measure 50 x 200 feet each. Lots 16 and 17 are now in possession of the City of Los Angeles, while Lot 15 is still in private hands.

When the land in this section was subdivided and sold by the Lankershim estate, the whole tract was graded to a common level. Seemingly those in charge of the grading had no knowledge of or interest in the matter of investigation or preserving any remains of the Cauenga house. No doubt many valuable and interesting remnants and clues were destroyed or lost by the leveling of the land.

The house was of adobe construction. The foundations are of cobblestone set in lime mortar. The foundations of the exterior and other major walls are 3 feet thick and vary from 1 foot 6 inches to 3 feet in depth. The minor partition walls have foundations 2 feet in width and about 1 foot 6 inches deep. The tops of all foundations are approximately at the floor level. The surface of all the property in this vicinity slopes slightly toward the river, and in the laying of the foundations and floors, Don Tomás made no particular attempt to establish a differing level; consequently the levels of the floors and foundations conform more or less to the slope of the surrounding site.

Since all the adobe walls were carried on cobblestone foundations, the number, size, and extent of all rooms could be fairly well determined upon the unearthing of the foundations. All rooms were floored with tile. This tile, averaging in size about 14 x 14 inches and about 1 to 2 inches thick, is of typical mission shape, workmanship, and texture, and very probably came from the kiln near Misión San Fernando, or perhaps from mission ruins themselves. The roof tile, broken pieces of which were scattered all about the site, was a mission product and probably came from the same source as the floor tile. Typical roof



PLAN.  
 SCALE  $\frac{1}{8}'' = 10'$   
 CASA DE CAUENGA  
 J.M.M. DEL.

tiles of this period varied from 21 or 24 inches in length, and from 10 to 12 inches across the large end.

The adobe used in the making of the bricks was found on or adjacent to the site, and was probably procured, mixed, and molded near the river where water was at hand for mixing. Considering the fact that the main walls were three feet thick and the thinner ones two feet, it may be assumed that the size of the bricks was about 11 x 24 x 3 inches.

Upon completion of the excavation, the full extent of the main building was clearly shown. The building proper measures 39 feet 0 inches x 99 feet 6 inches. In addition, foundations for pillars were unearthed which indicated that there had been a corridor 13 feet 10 inches wide along the entire north end. Evidence was also present of a long porch adjoining this corridor along part of the west wall, and a short porch on the east side. The house lies almost exactly with the points of the compass, the long dimension being north and south.

There were six rooms in the house, separated by adobe walls, and floored with tiles. The largest room was found on the east side, measuring 15 feet in width and 61 feet 6 inches in length. This large room probably served as the living room or *sala grande*, and it was here that the social gatherings so characteristic of early California were held. The exact location of the kitchen has not been clearly determined, since it is not mentioned in description or drawings, and no traces of it have yet been discovered at the site. It is possible that it was in a separate unit apart from the main structure, and we hope that more extensive excavation will clarify this point. The small room in the southwest corner was the logical place for the altar, while the remaining rooms were probably sleeping rooms and guest rooms.

During the excavation process, all findings were accurately recorded, and many photographs were taken for verification and future reference. Following completion of work at the site, plans were drawn for the restoration of the house, incorporating the data gleaned from all known sources of information on the subject.

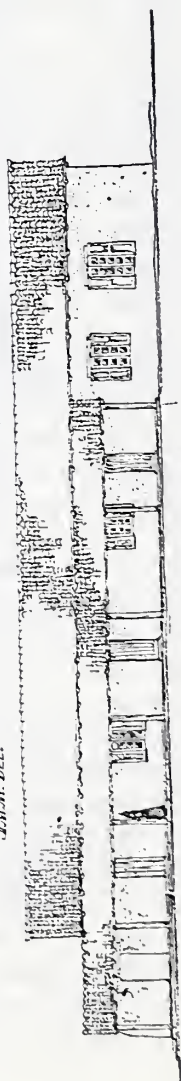
The structure was thoroughly typical of the rural home of the "late mission" period, the construction, details, and workmanship being of the same general type as found in the later mission structures. The use of adobe and tile bricks for wall and pillar construction; the extensive use of timbers for beams and rafters, for corridor posts,

# HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA



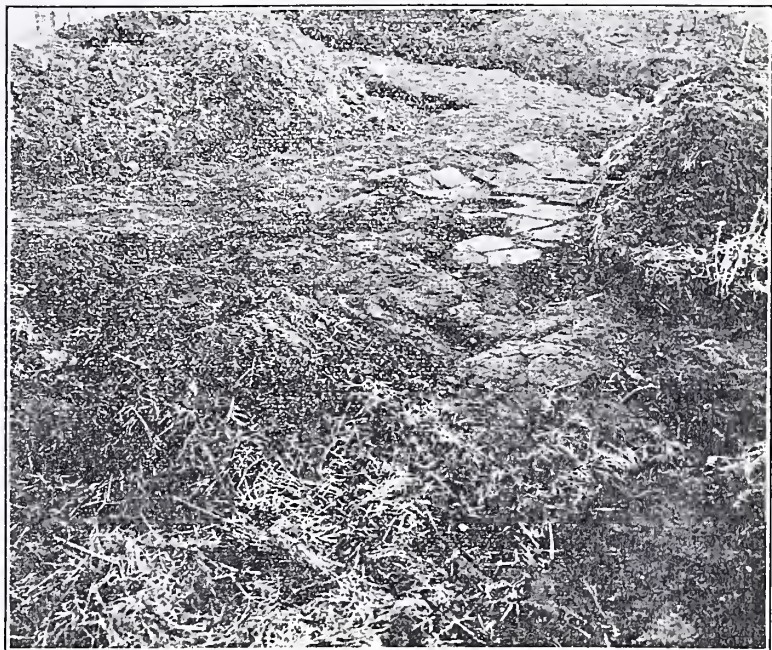
• NORTH ELEVATION •  
SCALE 1/8" = 1'-0"  
CASA DE CADENGA  
J.H.M. DEL.

• SECTION •  
SCALE 1/8" = 1'-0"  
CASA DE CADENGA  
J.H.M. DEL.



• WEST ELEVATION •  
SCALE 1/8" = 1'-0"  
CASA DE CADENGA  
J.H.M. DEL.





Lester S. Ford

EXCAVATION DISCLOSING PORTIONS OF THE  
FOUNDATION OF CASA DE CAUENGA

doors, shutters and grilles; the hand-wrought hinges, locks and nails; the hand-made roof tile and floor tile, and the roof covering of thatch and brea, as well as tile, were all typical of homes built in the 'thirties and 'forties as well as in the earlier mission-building period.

There is no question but that this site is one of the foremost of California's landmarks, as well as a vital spot in the history of the Southwest. Its significant historical value should serve as a stimulus to assure the restoration of this early home.

With the active support of interested individuals and groups, the restoration should be entirely possible. The Los Angeles City Park Department (the present custodians of the site) favors restoration. The Los Angeles Library Board are greatly interested in the possible use of a portion of the proposed building as a branch library especially for California. The faculty and student body of the John C. Fre-



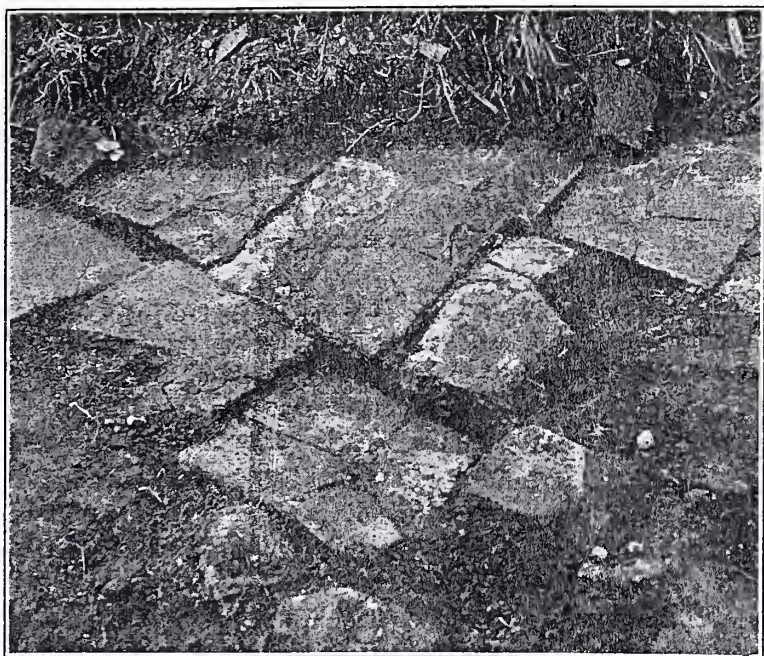
Lester S. Ford

EXCAVATION DISCLOSING PORTIONS OF THE  
PORCH FOUNDATION AT CASA DE CAUENGA

mont High School wish to secure an appropriate place to deposit and preserve their collection of relics and belongings of Andrés Pico and Frémont, and will lend their enthusiastic support to the restoration of the Cauenga house. With the cooperation of these groups and the support of the historical and other interested societies and organizations, this important landmark, for so many decades a formless ruin, shall once again live and serve. The restoration will result not only in a monument appropriate to commemorate an historic event, but in the re-creation, through accurate and careful use of facts and building materials, of a setting and atmosphere wholly typical of the life of the early California rancho, with its spirit of hospitality, of ease and of gaiety. As has been the case with other important landmarks, this will prove a definite asset to community and state, an historic shrine for those who have at heart the preservation of the glorious history of California.

\*The name Cauenga is derived from the name of a former Gabrielea Indian rancheria situated in this district. There are several different spellings of the word by different authors, the earlier form being most





California History Nugget

Lester S. Ford

## OLD TILE FLOOR AT CASA DE CAUENGA

inconsistent. Hugo Ried, in his writings of 1852, used Cabeugna. Lieut. Col. John C. Frémont, in his *Memoirs*, spells the word *Couenga*, as does Bryant who was a member of the U. S. forces in this vicinity in 1847.

In the Articles of Capitulation written by Don José Antonio Carrillo, we find the words *Campo de Cauenga*. Carrillo was a scholar and was recognized as one of the best educated men of the vicinity in his time. He had knowledge of both Spanish and Indian languages, and was well acquainted with the earlier rancherias of the neighborhood, so it is logical to assume that his spelling would be the correct form. His was the first recorded spelling, and is substantiated by the fact that the Spanish spelling of the name of the Indians living there was *Caue*.

Mr. John P. Harrington, a noted authority on Indian languages, their derivation and translation, states in a letter to F. W. Hodge on November 10, 1932, regarding the native form and meaning of the word, "It is almost certain that it starts off with *gaw* and that it is a diminutive form of the word meaning hill or mountain. Unfortunately the Spanish loan-word *Cahuenga* is from the locative, and the nominative form of the place name is nowhere recorded in Spanish records."

The *gaw* of the Indian has never been translated as *Cahu* but as *Cau*. Mr. Adolph Rivera, historian of the Ramona Parlor, N. S. G. W. a resident of the district who has made a study of its place names, states that the only proper spelling of the word is *Cauenga*.

## ACQUISITION OF CAMPO DE CAUENGA BY THE CITY OF LOS ANGELES

(Reprint from "The Clubwoman" November, 1923.)

*California History and Landmarks Club*  
By MRS. A.S.C. FORBES, President

THE California History and Landmarks Club was organized in 1916 with the definite object and purpose of arousing greater interest in the American part of the history and landmarks of this State. Different persons had from time to time attempted to save the historic spot where the Treaty of Cauenga was signed by Lieut.-Col. John C. Fremont and Gen. Andres Pico, but through lack of information or profound indifference the general public remained passive toward the project and the site was marked only by a Camino Real Bell. The Bell was erected by the Hollywood Woman's Club in 1910 and dedicated by Miss Elizabeth Benton Fremont, only daughter of Col. Fremont. The history connected with this spot and the pathos of this lonely Bell holding vigil over the most historic event in the annals of American-California appealed to the members of the California History and Landmarks Club with the result that a campaign was waged that has lasted over seven years, but we have won and the historic spot is now owned by the City of Los Angeles. It has been placed in the Park Department and will be made a fitting memorial to the memory of Col. Fremont and Gen. Pico. So far we have centralized on this work, therefore, to tell of our club is to tell of this project. We took up the work laid down by Mr. Horatio Rust of South Pasadena. In 1902 when Mrs. Fremont was still living Mr. Rust circulated a petition asking the legislators of California to appropriate the small sum of one thousand dollars for a suitable monument to mark this spot. The petition was signed by the Southern California Historical Society, The Landmarks Club, the Superintendent of Schools, bankers, merchants, hotel men, and individuals of all classes to the number of over two hundred. The legislature passed the bill but Governor Gage vetoed it. Mr. Rust tried again at the next session but failed to obtain any favorable results. Then there arose contentions as to the validity of the location. It was to quiet the title, as it were, that first interested us. We searched

the archives and found that in the San Fernando Mission lands there was included the tracts called "Cahuenga", "Encino", "Los Alamos", and "Calabasas." That about the year 1800 the tract called 'Cahuenga' was granted to one Rameriz. In 1845 Don Tomas Feliz moved to the rancho and built the adobe house near the Caluenga Pass where the Treaty was signed. Col. Fremont in his Memoirs says on Page 652 that of Cahuenga. Both Col. Fremont and his wife established the location the articles of Capitulation were made and entered into at the rancho as did Don Geronimo Lopez who carried the flag of truce. So just why there ever was any contention was and is still a mystery to us. Yet just so long as there remained any unproven step toward a complete verification we could not ask the public to make purchase of this site. When our proof was complete we asked the State Historical Survey Commission to make careful examination of the papers and examine the site. This was done. A written endorsement was given to us saying the proofs were "full and sufficient" to prove the validity of the site. We again took the project of purchasing the site as memorial to Fremont and Pico, to the public. We presented our papers to the women's clubs, the Native Sons and Daughters, The D. A. R., Pioneers Society and patriotic organization. Each and all approved of our asking the business men to provide a manner for the purchase of the site. We took it to the Chamber of Commerce and those public-spirited men recommended that the purchase be made by the City Council. The City Council referred it to the City Planning Commission for approval and investigation as to the validity of the location. The Planning Commission examined our papers and recommended the purchase. On May 25 a resolution was passed by the City Council authorizing the purchase (Purchase Price was \$15,000). So after seventy-seven years the people of the State of California are doing a belated honor to the man who brought Peace to California and paved the way whereby the glorious state became the property of the United States. The exact location is lots 16 and 17, Universal City tract of Los Angeles. It lies opposite the Universal City Film Company plant. There are two re-enforced concrete buildings on the property but as they are most fortunately designed along lines similar to the original adobe house they make an attractive nucleus toward this memorial. We will gather historical relics to make the memorial interesting and will assist the Park Department in making the place beautiful and attractive.





GENERAL STEPHEN W. KEARNEY    COM. ROBERT F. STOCKTON  
 REPORT OF COMMODORE STOCKTON  
 OF HIS OPERATION ON THE COAST OF THE PACIFIC

*From Executive Document No. 1 accompanying President's Message  
 at the 2nd Session of the Thirtieth Congress, December, 1848.*

*(The following article is prepared and printed in acknowledgment of  
 the cooperation of the John C. Fremont High School and members of  
 the Fremont Pioneers' Club in the work of excavation  
 at Casa de Cauenga)*

"SIR: On my return from California in November last, the circumstances of the times seemed to present reason for delaying a full report of my transactions and operations on the coast of the Pacific. The period, however, has now arrived in which I feel that I can, without the imputation of improper feelings or motives, lay before the Executive, in a tangible and official form, a narrative of the occurrences which I directed in California. It appears now to be no longer questioned that I actually possessed and exercised the power of governor of California and commander-in-chief of the forces of the United States in that quarter, and that, whether rightfully or wrong-



fully, I executed the duties and administered the functions appertaining to these high offices, for the administration of which I am alone responsible. The dispatches which were from time to time addressed to the Department were designed to furnish the government with accurate information of what transpired, it did not enter into my purpose to give a general narrative of the entire operations. Opening a full view of the circumstances which influenced my judgment in selecting the course which was adopted, and the policy by which that course was determined with your permission I beg leave, at this time to perform this duty. . . .

"Under the instructions of the Department, I arrived, in command of the United States Frigate Congress, at the harbor of Monterey about the middle of July, 1846. The American flag was there flying. I immediately went on board the United States frigate Savannah, then lying off that town and, in conformity with my orders, I reported myself to Commodore Sloat as forming part of the Squadron then under his command. From him I learned that in the preceding month of June, while lying off Mazatlan, he had received intelligence that war had commenced between the United States and Mexico; that he had forthwith proceeded to Monterey, landed a force, and hoisted the flag of the United States without resistance. In the course of our interview, Commodore Sloat apprised me of his intention to return in a short time to the United States, whereby the command of the squadron would devolve upon me. . . .

"Previous to the departure of Commodore Sloat, he had, at my instance and upon my representations, placed at my disposal the United States sloop-of-war Cyane, as well as the forces on shore. I immediately apprised Captain Fremont, then of the topographical corps, with whom I had previous communication, of the position in which I was placed and that I had determined upon my plan of operation. ,

"Captain Fremont and Lieutenant Gillespie, of the marine corps, had already raised a body of 160 volunteers, prepared to act according to circumstances. I informed those gentlemen that if they, together with the men whom they had raised, would volunteer to serve under my command so long as I should remain in California and require their services, that I would form them into a battalion, appointing the former major and latter captain. These arrangements were all com-

pleted in the course of the 23rd of July, and my letters of that date to Commodore Sloat, to Commander Du Pont, and Captain Fremont, on the file in the Department, will have apprised you of my movements.

"It was thus that the battalion of California volunteers was organized, which subsequently, under its gallant officers, took so patriotic and efficient a part in the military operations in that territory. It was received into the service of the United States to aid the navy, as essential as well to the maintenance of the position we then occupied as to execute the plans which I had contemplated in the interior.

"A few days subsequently, Commodore Sloat sailed in the *Levant*, thus devolving upon me the command of the entire force, both afloat and on shore. That force then consisted of the frigates *Congress* and *Savannah*, sloops-of-war *Portsmouth*, *Cyane*, and *Warren*, and the store ship *Erie*. The *Portsmouth* was at San Francisco, the *Congress* and *Savannah* at Monterey, the *Warren* was at Mazatlan, the *Cyane* had been sent with the California battalion to San Diego, and the *Erie* was at the Sandwich Islands. The force to be employed on land consisted of 360 men, furnished from the *Congress*, provided with about 90 muskets and bayonets, some small cannon procured from the merchant-vessels, and the battalion of volunteers with the appendage of an army.

"Leaving the *Savannah* at Monterey, for its protection, I sailed about August first, in the *Congress*, for San Pedro. . . . On the way to San Pedro, we landed at Santa Barbara, of which we took possession, and, leaving a small force for its defense, proceeded to San Pedro where we arrived on the 6th of August. Here information was received of the arrival of the *Cyane* at San Diego, of the landing of the battalion (under Fremont) and supply of horses. . . .

"Having completed arrangements which time and circumstance had permitted, and dispatched a courier to Major Fremont, apprising him of my movements, we commenced our march towards the camp of the enemy on the 11th of August. In the course of the afternoon of that day information reached us that the enemy's force, instead of awaiting our approach, had dispersed: that they had buried their guns, and that the governor and general had retreated, as we supposed toward Sonora. We continued our march towards Ciudad de Los Angeles, and on the 13th, having been joined by Major Fremont with

about 120 volunteers under his command, we marched into the city, which we quietly occupied.

"After the dispersement of the army of the enemy, the flight of the general and governor-in-chief out of the territory, a number of the officers of the Mexican army were captured, and made prisoners of war. Among these were Jose Maria Flores, whose name hereafter will appear prominently, and Don Andres Pico, brother of Governor Pio Pico. These officers were released upon their parole of honor not to bear arms against the United States pending the war, unless exchanged, with what fidelity they performed this obligation will appear in the sequel. The people in general came in, tendered their submission to our authority, and promised allegiance to our government. Every indication of a hostile force had now disappeared from the country, tranquility was restored, and I forthwith determined to organize a temporary civil government to conduct public affairs and to administer justice as in time of peace. Various considerations prompted me to this course. It appeared that the existence of such a government, under the authority of the United States, would leave no pretence upon which it might be urged that the conquest of the country had not been accomplished. While merely the military power exercised power, enforced its authority by martial law, and executing its functions through the instrumentality of a regular military force, nothing could be regarded as settled, and opposition to its power would be considered lawful opposition to a foreign enemy. . . . Actuated by such considerations, I gave my immediate attention to the establishment, upon a permanent basis, of a civil government throughout the country, as much in conformity with the former usages of the country as could be done in the absence of any written code. A tariff of duties was fixed, and collectors appointed. Elections were directed to be held for the various civil magistrates; Major Fremont was appointed military commandant of the territory, and Captain Gillespie military commandant of the southern department. The battalion of volunteers was ordered to be augmented to three hundred; and, contemplating soon to leave the territory, I determined on my departure to appoint Major Fremont Governor of California. He was apprised of these intended arrangements, and instructed to meet me in San Francisco on the 25th of October for the purpose of consummating them. These acts and in-

tentions were officially communicated to the Department in my several dispatches.

"This explanation of my operations and acts will, I trust, prove satisfactory to the Executive, and be a sufficient reply to Commodore Shubrick's charge of premature action. Having achieved the conquest of the country, and finding my military strength ample to retain it, the establishment of a civil government naturally and necessarily resulted. . . .

"About the 2nd of September I left Ciudad de Los Angeles, embarked on board the Congress on the 3rd, and on the 5th sailed for Santa Barbara. Having taken on board the small detachment which had been landed at that place, we proceeded to Monterey, where everything was found tranquil. The people here appeared to be quite satisfied with the state of affairs. Information was here received leading to the apprehension that Sutter's settlement on the Sacramento was threatened with an attack by a body of a thousand Wah-lah-wah-lah Indians. . . ." (Fremont was sent to treat with them, which he did with understanding and without force.)

"About the 30th of September, a courier arrived from Captain Gillespie, despatched by that officer to convey to me the information that an insurrection had broken out at Ciudad de Los Angeles, and that he was besieged in the government-house at that place by a large force. I immediately ordered Capt. Mervine to proceed in the Savannah to San Pedro, for the purpose of affording aid to Captain Gillespie. Major Fremont was at Sacramento. . . . I sent a request to him forthwith to join me in San Francisco with his command, and to bring along as many saddles as he could procure. While awaiting the arrival of Major Fremont I despatched officers in various directions for the purpose of procuring volunteers to join the battalion and engaged the merchant-ship Sterling to take them down to Santa Barbara.

"About the 12th of October, Major Fremont arrived at San Francisco, and immediately embarked on board the Sterling, with about one hundred and sixty volunteers. He was directed to proceed to Santa Barbara, there to procure horses to march to Ciudad de Los Angeles, while I, with the Congress, was to sail to San Pedro, and by that route advance toward the same point. The Congress and Sterling sailed in company from San Francisco, but separated the same evening in a fog. Between San Francisco and Monterey we spoke a merchant-



vessel from the latter port, with dispatches from Lieutenant Maddox, apprising me that Monterey was threatened with an attack, and that he was in want of immediate assistance. We ran into the Bay of Monterey, landed two officers with fifty men and some ordnances. Having thus strengthened that post, I proceeded to San Pedro. On my arrival at that place, about the 23rd of October, I found the Savannah frigate. Captain Mervine informed me that Captain Gillespie, with the volunteers under his command, was on board his vessel, having left Ciudad de Los Angeles, under a capitulation entered into with General Flores, the leader of the insurrection—one of the Mexican officers who, having been made prisoner of War, had been released on his parole.

“Captain Mervine further informed me that, about two weeks before he had landed with his sailors and marines for the purpose of marching in conjunction with Captain Gillespie and his detachment of volunteers to Ciudad de Los Angeles. He had not carried any artillery with him; that about twelve miles from San Pedro, he encountered a party of the insurgents with one piece of artillery; a battle ensued; that several charges had been made upon the insurgents’ gun, but it was impossible to capture it, as, whenever he approached, they hitched their horses to it and retreated. Having sustained a loss of several men killed and wounded, he retired with his force and re-embarked.

“Proper arrangements having been made during the night, in the morning we landed a strong force with several pieces of artillery, once more hoisted the flag of the United States in San Pedro. The insurgents had taken the precaution to remove beyond our reach every horse and all the cattle which might have been available either for food or transportation. The roadstead at San Pedro was also a dangerous position for men-of-war, being exposed to the storms which at that season of the year rage with great violence upon the coast. This consideration decided me to proceed to San Diego. We did not, however, leave San Pedro until I had been compelled to relinquish all expectation of the cooperation of Major Fremont from whom I had not heard a word since we parted off San Francisco, nor until the officers and the men had become completely exhausted by their incessant duties on shore, in guarding the camp from attacks and pursuing small parties of the insurgents who approached us. Having embarked the men belonging to the squadron, and volunteers under Captain Gillespie, I sailed for San Diego in the Congress.

“On my arrival off San Diego, I received information from Lieu-

tenant Minor that the town was besieged by the insurgents, that his stock of provisions was small, and that he was in want of additional forces. . . .

"On the following day the *Malek Adhel*, a prize to the United States ship *Warren*, arrived from Monterey with dispatches from Lieutenant-Colonel Fremont. I thus received information from that officer that on his way to Santa Barbara he met the merchant-ship *Vandalia*, from San Pedro, by whom he was informed of the state of affairs at the South; that it would be impossible for him to procure horses at Santa Barbara, in consequence of which he had proceeded to Monterey, and would employ all diligence in preparing his force to march for Ciudad de Los Angeles.

"Lieutenant Minor was directed to send the ship *Stonington*, then lying in the harbor of San Diego, to Ensanado, for a supply of horses and beefs. Captain Mervine was dispatched in the *Savannah* to Monterey, to aid Lieutenant-Colonel Fremont. . . .

"Having accomplished the landing of the men (at San Diego) from the ship, the attack of the insurgents which was in progress was successfully repelled by the combined force under the command of Lieutenant Minor and Captain Gillespie. . . . The expedition southward for animals, under Captain Gibson, of the battalion, had succeeded in driving about ninety horses, and two hundred head of beef-cattle into the garrison. Another expedition, under command of Captain Hensley, of the battalion sent to the southward for animals, returned with five hundred head of cattle, and one hundred and forty horses and mules. About the 3rd of December, two deserters from the insurgents, whose families lived in San Diego, reported themselves to Lieutenant Minor. While engaged in examining one of these deserters, a messenger arrived with a letter from General Kearney, of the United States army, apprising me of his approach, and expressing a wish that I would open a communication with him, and inform him of the state of affairs in California.

"Captain Gillespie was immediately ordered to proceed to General Kearney's Camp. He left San Diego at about half-past seven o'clock that same evening, taking with him one of the deserters to act as guide. The force that accompanied Captain Gillespie consisted of a company of volunteers, composed of Acting Lieutenant Beale, Passed Midshipman Duncan, ten carbineers of the Congress, Captain Gibson, twenty-

five of the battalion. Mr. Stokes, who was the bearer of the letter from General Kearney, was also of the company. In the evening of December 6th, Mr. Stokes returned to San Diego, to inform me that General Kearney, on the morning of that day, had attempted to surprise the insurgents, under command of Captain Andres Pico, in their camp at San Pasqual, and that he had been worsted in the action that ensued.

"The following morning, Lieutenant Godey, of the California battalion, with two men came into San Diego with a letter from Captain Turner, of the dragoons, informing me that General Kearney had had a fight with a considerable body of the Mexicans; that he had had about eighteen killed, and fourteen or fifteen wounded; and suggested the propriety of dispatching without delay, a considerable force to his assistance. Preparations were immediately made to dispatch a detachment for this purpose. Before, however, the advance moved, an Indian came in from General Kearney. About ten o'clock at night, Acting Lieutenant Beale, of the Congress, arrived from General Kearney's camp, and confirmed the worst accounts we had received, and the importance of prompt assistance. The advanced body, increased to the number of 215 men, was placed under the command of Lieutenant Gray, my aid-de-camp, with orders to proceed directly to the camp of General Kearney. The order was successfully performed, and Lieutenant Gray having accomplished it, returned to San Diego, accompanied by the General. . . . The arrival of General Kearney was to me a source of gratification, although it was my decided opinion — which as yet I have seen no reason to change — that, under the circumstances that existed, I was entitled to retain the position in which I was placed as commander-in-chief; yet, in consideration of his high standing in the army, his long experience as a soldier, the importance of military science and skill in the movements that were to be made in the interior of the country, I immediately determined to yield all personal feelings of ambition, and to place in his hands the supreme authority. In accordance with this determination, I tendered to General Kearney, the position of commander-in-chief, and offered to accompany him as his aide.

"This position was on more than one occasion renewed, and with all sincerity and singleness of purpose. . . . The offers thus made were, however, on every occasion distinctly and positively declined by General Kearney, who on his side, offered to accompany me in the

capacity of my aide, and tendered to afford me the aid of his head and hand.

"A few days before I expected to take up the line of march, I addressed a note to the general, expressing a wish that he would accompany me. In his reply he repeated the language which he had before employed. After the troops had been paraded, and were nearly ready to commence the march, as I was about to mount my horse, General Kearney approached me and inquired who was to command the troops. I replied, Lieutenant Rowan was to have the command. On expressing a wish that he should himself command them, I replied, that he should have the command. The different officers were at once convened, and informed that General Kearney had volunteered to command the troops, and that I had given him the appointment, reserving my own position as commander-in-chief. This arrangement having been made, we proceeded on the march.

"On the morning of the day we marched into Ciudad de Los Angeles, General Kearney came to me with Mr. Southwick, who was acting as engineer, to ascertain from me by what road I intended to enter the city. He requested Mr. Southwick to mark on the sand the position of the city, and the different roads leading into it. I selected the plainest and broadest road, leading into the main street of the city; and when we marched into the city, I led the way with the advance-guard. My position as commander-in-chief was again distinctly recognized in a letter of January 13, addressed to me by General Kearney, as *Governor of California, commanding United States forces.*

"A few days after we had taken Ciudad de Los Angeles, Lieutenant-Colonel Fremont arrived with his part of the battalion. . . .

"The California battalion (Fremont's) was organized under my own personal direction and authority, under a special condition that it should act under my orders as long as I might remain in California and require its services. It was paid by my orders, as long as I had anything to pay with. The officers derived their appointments exclusively from me. It was never, in any form or manner, mustered into the service of the United States as a part of the army or connected with it. It was exclusively and essentially a navy organization. The battalion was entirely composed of volunteers, organized under my authority, but with my own free consent, according to the terms of a distinct and specific agreement to obey my orders and to serve while



I should require their services. These men were not of that kind of personnel which sometimes compose regular armies: they were principally free American citizens who had settled in California; they were men of respectability, of influence, and of property; they were no ordinary men, because, when told that I had offered them as pay ten dollars a month, they said that they would not accept that pay—that it would not pay their expenses—but that they would volunteer to serve under my command without compensation.

“That was the origin, character, and position of the battalion when engaged, in cooperation with the squadron under my command, in accomplishing the objects which I had in view. . . .

“The battalion was never placed under the command of General Kearney by me, and was not subjected to his order. . . .

*“I have the honor to be, faithfully,*

*“Your obedient servant,*

R. F. STOCKTON

*“To the Hon. John Y. Mason,*

*“Secretary of the Navy, Washington, D.C.”*

United States Frigate Congress

Harbor of San Diego, January 22, 1847.

Sir: I have the honor to inform you that the civil government of this territory is in successful operation, that Colonel Fremont is acting as governor, and Colonel Russel as secretary, and that I am on board of the Congress preparing for the coast of Mexico.

“Lieutenant Gray, who is charged with my dispatches, has been my aid-de-camp, and has done his duty with great good conduct and gallantry.

“He is the officer whom I sent to relieve General Kearney from his perilous condition after his defeat at San Pasqual and deserves the consideration of the department.

“He will be able to give you the particulars of that unfortunate and disastrous affair.

*Faithfully, your obedient servant,*

R. F. STOCKTON

*Commodore, etc.*

*To the Honorable George Bancroft,*

*Secretary of the Navy, Washington, D.C.”*

Headquarters. Ciudad de Los Angeles,  
January 15, 1847.

"Sir: Referring to my letter of the 11th, I have the honor to inform you of the arrival of Lieutenant-Colonel Fremont at this place with four hundred men; that some of the insurgents have made their escape to Sonora, and that the rest have surrendered to our arms.

"Immediately after the battles of the 8th and 9th they began to disperse; and I am sorry to say that their leader, José M. Flores, made his escape, and that the others have been pardoned by the capitulation agreed upon by Lieutenant-Colonel Fremont.

José M. Flores, the commander of the insurgents' forces, two or three days previous to the 8th sent commissioners, with a flag of truce, to my camp to make a "treaty of peace." I informed the commissioners that I could not recognize José M. Flores, who had broken his parole, as an honorable man, or as one having any rightful authority, or worthy to be treated with; that he was a rebel in arms, and if I caught him, I would have him shot.

"It seemed that, not being able to negotiate with me, and having lost the battles of the 8th and 9th, they met Colonel Fremont on the 13th inst., on his way here, who, not knowing what had occurred, entered into the capitulation with them which I now send to you; and although I refused to do it myself, still I have thought it best to approve of it. I am glad to say that, by the capitulation, we have recovered the gun taken by the insurgents at the sad defeat of General Kearney at San Pasqual.

"The territory of California is again tranquil, and the civil government, formed by me, is again in operation in the places where it was interrupted by the insurgents.

"Colonel Fremont has five hundred men in his battalion, which will be quite sufficient to preserve the peace of the territory; and I will immediately withdraw my sailors and marines, and sail as soon as possible for the coast of Mexico, where I hope they will give a good account of themselves.

*Faithfully, your obedient servant,*

R. F. STOCKTON  
*Commodore, etc.*

*To the Honorable George Bancroft,  
Secretary of the Navy, Washington, D.C."*

DEPARTMENT OF STATE  
WASHINGTON

February 8, 1924

My dear Mr. Fredericks:

Your letter of the 18th of January expressing on behalf of three historical organizations in your State the wish to obtain a photographic copy of the Articles of Capitulation generally known as the Treaty of Cahuenga, which was signed January 13, 1847, by Lieutenant Colonel John C. Fremont and General Andres Pico has had my attention.

I am exceedingly sorry that I was unable to give you the information which you desired to send to Mrs. A. S. Forbes, District Chairman, by February 2d. The only record I have been able to find is given in the Works of H. H. Bancroft, Volume XXII (History of California. Vol. V. 1846-1848) on page 405. The foot-note 26 quotes from these Articles of Capitulation and states:

"Official printed copies in Stockton's Mil. and Nav. Op., 22-3; War with Mex., 63-5, printed in Spanish and English in Monterey Californian, Feb. 13, 1847. Often reprinted in English, Original 7 articles of the 13th, with autograph signature, in Carrillo (D), Doc., MS., 113-16. This is in the handwriting of J. A. Carrillo, and the signatures to the additional articles are copies by him. In Olvera, Doc., MS., 76, I have a copy from the original, including all the articles. There are copies in various collections."

I am, therefore, not able to tell you where the original Capitulations may be found. On page 405 of this work, Bancroft states that the original is in his possession but it is not clear to what original he refers.

Very truly yours,

ALVEY A. ALEE

(NOTE: Mrs. Forbes searched the records at Bancroft Library, Berkeley, and found the original copy of the Articles of Capitulation, written in Spanish. The historic paper was photographed and reproduced in Mrs. Forbes' book, "California Missions and Landmarks," and is reproduced in this annual by special permission.)



From Mrs. Forbes' Collection of Fremont Photos

J. C. FREMONT. LT.-COL. U. S. ARMY  
MILITARY COMMANDANT, TERRITORY OF CALIFORNIA



# ARTICLES OF CAPITULATION

Artículos de Capitulacion hechas el día <sup>11<sup>3</sup></sup> trece de Enero de mil ochocientos cuarenta y siete por Don José Ant<sup>o</sup>. Carrillo, Comandante de Escuadron y Don Agustín Olvera Diputados, comisionados nombrados por Don Andrés Pico Comandante en Jefe de las fuerzas <sup>de California</sup> Mexicana y P. B. Reading Mayor del Batallion de California, y Luis MacLame Sr. Capitan de Artilleria, y W. H. Raphael Capitan de Ordenes, comisionados nombrados por el Teniente Coronel del Ejercito de los Estados Unidos de Norte America V. C. Fremont, militar Comandante del Territorio de California.

Art.º 1.º Los Comisionados por parte de los Californios se comprometen que al presentarse <sup>teniente</sup> fuerzan al Coronel Fremont entregarán la Armas que tengan del Bat.º de Artilleria y que se retirarán pacíficamente a sus casas, conformandose con las leyes y regulaciones de los Estados Unidos de Norte America y no volver a tomar Armas durante <sup>propósito</sup> la Guerra entre Mexico y los Estados Unidos y ayudar a hacer la paz y poner al pais en tranquilidad.

Art. 3.º Que los Comisionados por parte del  
Honorable General Fremont se comprometen a  
cumplir con el artículo primero y que se garan-  
tizan las vidas y propiedades, y las personas  
juramentadas.

Art. 3.º ~~La hostia que se haga la paz y de~~  
~~firmas por el G. G. de los Estados Unidos.~~

Art. 3.º Que hasta que se haga la paz entre  
el Gov.º de los Estados Unidos y Mexico, ningun  
Californio o Ciudadano Mexicano se obligara  
a <sup>prestar</sup> juramento de fealdad.

Artículo 4.º Cual quier Californio o Ciudadano  
Mexicano que quiera salir del pais, le sera  
permitido sin obstaculo ninguno.

Art. 5.º En virtud <sup>de</sup> los articulos que ante-  
ceden iguales derechos y privilegios gozaran  
los Californios, como los Ciudadanos de los  
Estados Unidos del N. A.

Art. 6.º Todos los oficiales, Ciudadanos u otros  
Estrangeros gozaran proteccion y garantias segun  
el articulo segundo.

Art. 7.º Los tratados y entendi de <sup>sean</sup> ~~entre~~ obtenidos  
para arreglar <sup>(entre)</sup> ~~entre~~ materias que para lo  
futuro y en parte de requisicion por ambas  
partes.

Grupo de la guerra

a trece de Enero de mil ochocientos cuarenta  
y siete

José Ant.<sup>o</sup> Casillo Agente Abogado  
Com. de Excepcion

Siguetas

W. W. Reading Major California  
Battalion

Louis de Lani Captain Artillery  
California Battalion

H. P. Pol

Prores Pres.

Wm H. Russell

and Officer of  
California State

approved

J. C. Remont

Lt. Col. W. H. V. V. V.

Milit. Commandante

Territory of California.

Artículo adicional - Todas las palabras dadas  
por todos los oficiales y ciudadanos de  
los Estados Unidos u otras personas  
y por los ciudadanos y naturalizados  
mexicanos quedan mutuamente can-  
celadas por la presente Capita

racoon y todas las condiciones de dichas  
palabras quedan sin fuerza ni efecto desde  
la fecha en adelante, y todos los presen-  
tes de ambas partes son entera libertad.  
Ciudad de los Angeles dia diez y seis de  
Enero de mil ochocientos sesarenta y siete —

José Ant.º Gamella  
Comand.º de Ecuarroz

Agustín Olvera.  
Diputado

Aprobado  
Andrés Pico  
Comand.º de Ecuarroz y en  
Jefe de las fuerzas nacio-  
nales en California.

P. B. Readings  
Major Californ  
Battalion

Louis Mc Lane Jr

Approved  
J. C. Fremont

Lt. Col. W. Loomis  
Military Commandant  
of California —

Comds Artillery  
California Battalion

Wm H. Russell

Wra officer of  
California Batt.



## TRANSLATION OF ARTICLES OF CAPITULATION

Articles of Capitulation made on the thirteenth day of January one thousand eight hundred and forty-seven, by Don Jose Anto Carrillo, Squadron Commander, and Don Agustin Olvera, Deputy, Commissioners appointed by Don Andrés Pico, Commander-in-Chief of the California forces, under the Mexican Government, and P. B. Reading, Major of the California Battalion and Louis Maclane, Jr., Captain of Artillery, and W. Russel, Ordnance Captain, Commissioners appointed by the Lieutenant-Colonel of the Army of the United States of North America, J. C. Fremont, Military Commandant of the Territory of California.

Art. 1st. The Commissioners acting on behalf of the Californians, agree to deliver the Government arms and artillery in their possession, upon surrendering their forces to Lieutenant-Colonel Fremont, and that they will pacifically withdraw to their homes, and submit to the laws and regulations of the United States of North America, and not again take arms during the present war between Mexico and the United States, and assist in bringing about peace and place the country in tranquility.

Art. 2nd. That the Commissioners acting for Lieutenant-Colonel Fremont, agree to comply with Article First and will answer for the lives and properties and the persons released under oath.

Art. 3rd. That until peace is made with Mexico and same is signed by the Government of the United States.

Art. 3rd. That until peace is made between the Government of the United States and Mexico, no Californian or Mexican citizen shall be compelled to lend (or take) the oath of fealty.

Art. 4th. Any Californian or Mexican citizen, who may wish to leave the country, will be allowed to do so, without obstacle of any kind.

Art. 5th. That by virtue of the preceding articles, equal rights and privileges shall be enjoyed by the Californians, as the citizens of the United States of North America.

Art. 6th. All of the officials and citizens or other foreigners shall

enjoy the protection and guarantees, accorded in Article Second.

Art. 7th. It is understood that these treaties shall not be a hindrance to adjusting certain matters, that for the future and in justice, might be required by both parties.

Camp of Cauenga, on the thirteenth day of January, of one thousand eight hundred and forty-seven.

Jose Anto Carrillo,	Agustin Olvera
Squadron Commander	Deputy.

P. B. Reading, Major California Battalion

Louis McLane, Jr., Artillery Captain, California Battalion.

William H. Russell, Ord. Officer, California Battalion.

Approved: Andres Pico.

Approved: J. C. Fremont, Lt.-Col., U. S. Army.

Military Commandant, Territory of California.

Supplementary Article.—All of the promises given by all of the officers and citizens of the United States or other persons and by the citizens and naturalized Mexicans are hereby mutually cancelled by the present capitulation and all of the conditions of said promises remain without force and effect, from and after this date, and all the prisoners of both parties remain in entire liberty.

City of Los Angeles, sixteenth day of January, of one thousand eight hundred forty-seven.

Jose Anto Carrillo.	Agustin Olvera,
Squadron Commander.	Deputy.

Approved: Andres Pico,	P. B. Reading, Major,
Squadron Commander and	California Battalion.

Commander-in-Chief of the National forces in California.

Approved:	Louis McLane, Jr., Com.,
	Artillery California Battalion.

J. C. Fremont,  
Lt.-Col. U. S. Army and  
Military Commandant of California.

Wm. H. Russell,  
Ord. Officer of California Battalion.

*Translated by Adolfo G. Rivera, of the Historical-Landmarks Committee of Ramona Parlor 109, Native Sons of the Golden West.*

## THE ADOBE HOUSE

I, Senora Adriana Johnson de Almon, have heard a great deal of talk about the adobe house where the Treaty of Cauenga was signed by Gen. Andres Pico and Lt.-Col. Fremont. Some of the talk is true and some is not. I remember the house well. It stood on the spot that the California History and Landmarks Club has just saved and got the City of Los Angeles to buy. The house known in those primitive days as La Casa de Cauenga faced to the south-west. Along the front was a porch and the chimney was in the rear. The house had tile roof.

In 1859 my aunt and her family proposed a picnic. We decided to go to Casa de Cauenga where Mrs. Emilia Gates lived with her husband and two children, Adelaida and Alexander Gates. The day was set. We left Los Angeles and all the guests arrived on time at La Casa de Cauenga. Those present on this occasion whom I remember were: Mr. Francis Mellus and his wife Mrs. Anita Johnson de Mellus the leader and family, Mr. and Mrs. Henry Mellus and family, Governor John G. Downey and wife, Mrs. Katie Wilson, Don Juan Bautista Trudle, Senora Adriana Johnson de Almon, Senora Carmel Guirado de Johnson, Senora Eulalia Guillen, Senora Francisca Botello, and a maid Sta. Maria de la Cruz Ybarra, Don Manuel Requena, Senora Tulita Guirado de Requena, Senora Nieves Guirado de Bell, Captain Alexander Bell, Mr. Cyrus Lyon and Mr. Sanford Lyon.

Signed: *Adriana J. Almon*

Witnesses,

*Elizabeth Alexander*

*Charles J. Prudhomme*

Date, March 20th 1921



*Campo de Cauenga Fremont-Pico Memorial*

STATE OF CALIFORNIA.

County of Los Angeles,

I, the undersigned, do hereby affirm that the locality known as Cahuenga, where the old adobe, tiled roofed house is, is the exact place and locality where General John C. Fremont and General Andres Pico signed the Treaty of Cahuenga, January 13th, 1847, and now described as "lots number fifteen, sixteen, seventeen, and eighteen, Universal City Tract, in the City of Los Angeles, State of California," and the source of my information is as follows: One Miguel Linares (who was married to Dona Maria Morena de Linares, a sister of the wife of General Andres Pico) was present at the signing of the Treaty and he has repeatedly related to me the history of the signing of the Treaty of Cahuenga, and that the above described place is the exact location where the treaty was signed. He has been known to me since 1870.

I, furthermore herein and hereby depose that I read the contract made in 1855, by and between Don Dionisio Saenz and Don Tomas Urquidez for the building of an adobe house that stood where the "Outpost" now owned by Gen. Harrison Gray Otis now stands. The house was built in 1855 on a sobrante on the northerly boundary of the Rancho la Brea and more explicitly described as a portion of Sec. 3, Township 1 S., Range 14 W. S. B. M.

As the treaty of Cahuenga was signed Jan. 13. 1847. and this house was built in 1855, the Treaty could not have been signed in this house.

Dated March 21st, 1917

Signed: *Eugene R. Plummer*

Subscribed and affirmed before  
me this 21st day of March, 1917.

*Anna B. Mowe*

Notary Public in and for the County  
of Los Angeles, State of California.



DON GERONIMO LOPEZ  
A PIONEER OF SAN FERNANDO

by  
CHAS. J. PRUDHOMME

*Reminiscences of old days during the Mexican War of 1846-47 as  
related by Don Geronimo Lopez, who at that date is still in  
fairly vigorous condition*

San Fernando, March 14, 1921

**D**ON GERONIMO LOPEZ was born September 30, 1828, at the Pueblo de Los Angeles, Los Angeles County, California. In his boyhood days his parents sent him to a private school at the Adobe House, know in those primitive days as La Casa de Cauenga. The teacher was Don Francisco Lopez, Jr., who had received his education from the Franciscan Padres at Santa Barbara Mission.

Alluding to data during the Mexican War, Don Geronimo Lopez relates that there were young and old men in the Mexican army.

He remembers General Jose Maria Flores who was in command of the Mexican army in Southern California, with headquarters at the Pueblo de Los Angeles. But he left prior to the American soldiers entering the Pueblo. Don Geronimo was in his eighteenth year and was acting as messenger for General Andres Pico.

He remembers General Kearney, who with his soldiers marching to the Pueblo met the Mexican soldiers in command of Captain Juan Bautista Moreno. Both sides met on the west side, on the mesa of San Gabriel River, at Paso de Cerruga, which was known as El Paso de Bartolo, and not so far from the adobe house that was built in 1844 by Don Vicente Lugo. The battle took place January 8, 1847.

Few American soldiers were killed. On the Mexican side Q. (?) Sepulveda and another known as El Guaymeno were killed. The Mexicans were defeated and retreated toward El Aliso Alto — the tall sycamore tree that was located on the Lugo grant. This lonely sycamore tree in the primitive days was a landmark for all travelers. It is about three miles from Los Angeles. There the Mexican soldiers made a stand. On the following day, January 9, 1847, General Kearney with his soldiers met them and they had a guerrilla skirmish. Captain Antonio Maria Lugo with his forces joined Captain Moreno, but they did not succeed, and they retreated. General Kearney with his soldiers

marched into the Pueblo. He took possession of the Mexican State building that was located then where the St. Charles Hotel now stands, and there made his headquarters.

On the morning of January 11, (1847), General Andres Pico sent for Geronimo Lopez. He came forward. General Pico said to him, "Here are these special letters. Go, and deliver them in person to Captain Ugenio Montenegro." Captain Montenegro with one hundred soldiers had his headquarters at San Fernando Mission.

Young Geronimo Lopez being a good horseman and knowing the country so well, he lost no time, and safely arrived at the Mission.

He then ascertained the presence of Captain Ugenio Montenegro. One of the soldiers looked him up and in a few minutes Captain Montenegro made his appearance. Young Geronimo Lopez delivered the letters and waited for orders. Where, then the Captain said, "This letter is for me and this other letter is for Lt.-Colonel John C. Frémont."

Captain Ugenio Montenegro then gave orders for fifteen soldiers. The mounted soldiers came forward. Young Geronimo Lopez was appointed to carry the "Flag of Truce." The soldiers then traveled north and over the mountain divide. Down on the slope near Newhall they came in sight of Lt.-Colonel Frémont's camp. The guards noticed them and they were met by a few American soldiers. Captain Montenegro explained his mission and the few Mexican soldiers were guided to the camp, where in person to Lt.-Colonel John C. Frémont the message was delivered. Lt.-Colonel Frémont answered it, and he delivered a letter to Captain Montenegro, and he in turn gave it to young Geronimo Lopez. They then traveled back to the Mission of San Fernando. Then young Lopez proceeded to the headquarters of General Andres Pico and delivered him the message.

The following day, January 12 (1847), Lt.-Colonel Frémont and his soldiers marched to San Fernando Mission where they made camp. Captain Montenegro had departed.

The next morning, January 13, 1847, Lt.-Colonel Frémont with his soldiers marched to the same place. Both sides met and extended his soldiers marched toward the Adobe House, known as Casa de Cauenga, (now known as Universal City). General Andrés Pico with his soldiers marched to the same place. Both met and extended the usual courtesies, in a diplomatic way.

The superior officers, on both sides, with their aides retired a little distance for consultation to arrange favorable terms for the capitulation. They then returned to the porch of the Adobe House, known as Casa de Cauenga, and there in the presence of the Mexican and American soldiers the Mexican treaty was signed by the aides and approved by General Andrés Pico and Lt.-Colonel John C. Frémont on January 13, 1847. "I was present," said Don Geronimo Lopez.

"While Lt.-Colonel Frémont and his soldiers were marching to the Pueblo I, Geronimo Lopez, was sent to San Gabriel Mission with a message for the people giving them the information that the Treaty had been signed." Then Don Geronimo Lopez returned to the Pueblo.

Several days after the arrival of Lt.-Colonel Frémont at the Pueblo de Los Angeles, the Publanos (inhabitants) gave a grand ball at the Casa (house) of Don Alexander Bell, that was in the primitive days located where is now the S.E. corner of Aliso and North Los Angeles streets. The ball was given in honor of Lt.-Colonel John C. Frémont, General Kearney, Commodore Stockton, and their aides.

"I was present and Lt.-Colonel Frémont knew me as being the one who had carried the 'Flag of Truce.' He came and shook hands with me," so said Don Geronimo Lopez. And all the aristocratic Señoras, Dons, and their families attended. The Señoras were dolled up in their best. It was one of the grandest affairs that ever took place in the Pueblo days of Los Angeles.

In conclusion, Don Geronimo Lopez adds that Lt.-Colonel John C. Frémont was known among the inhabitants as El Coronel Fla-mont, same being the sound in the Spanish language for Frémont.

*Affidavit.*

I, the undersigned, verify the above statements as being true and correct and related by me to Don Carlos J. Prudon (Prudhomme).

Signed, GERONIMO LOPEZ

Witness. J. C. VILLEGAS

MRS. JOHN WILSON



California History Nugget

Lester S. Ford

MISION SAN DIEGO DE ALCALA. RESTORED 1931



## RESTORATION OF MISSION SAN DIEGO DE ALCALA

by ALBERT V. MAYRHOFER

THE restoration of Mission San Diego de Alcalá represents twenty years of dreaming, planning and finally of a success which had its culminating point in the dedication of the restored structure on September 12 and 13, 1931.

It was in 1911 that the dream of the restored Mission first came to me. This idea was furthered by Rev. Joseph Mesny, oldest acting Catholic priest in San Diego County, and then living near the Mission. Our hopes were heightened when the late John D. Spreckles evinced great interest and assured us that if there were no obstacles he would restore the Mission. An obstacle presented itself. The late Bishop Thomas J. Conaty had no practical use for the Mission and was unwilling that it should be only a museum and gathering place for the curious.

Despite the lack of encouragement, men of all creeds and opinions gave generously of their time and money to preserve what they could of its crumbling walls and to keep its hallowed ruins still a shrine.

In 1919 George W. Marston, Philip Morse, and others started a definite move to raise money for the preservation of the ruins and to go as far as possible with the restoration. The result of this activity was meager, but one important object was achieved. These men succeeded in saving for posterity the facade of the Old Mission, and, when the later restoration was made possible, this early labor of saving the facade was found to have been the real beginning of the actual and complete restoration. Another thing accomplished by these men was their arousing an interest in the Old Mission which never died. The Marston committee spent more than \$7500.00, and to those who made these expenditures possible too much credit cannot be given, for it is possible that without this money the entire Mission would have become long ago a heap of grass-grown debris.

In 1920 the Native Sons and Daughters of the Golden West held a ball in the auditorium in Balboa Park, for the benefit of the Old Mission, and more than \$1000.00 was raised. This money was kept as a nucleus for the present restoration. In 1927 the matter of the restoration was taken up by myself, acting as Deputy Grand President

of the Native Sons of the Golden West, as I felt that the order should sponser the restoration of the first landmark of California. At this time the Rt. Rev. John J. Cantwell D.D., who is Bishop Conaty's successor in the diocese of Los Angeles and San Diego, officially appointed me as the head of the restoration movement and gave me \$5000.00 to start the restoration campaign. Encouraged by this authority, I then approached the Rev. Mother Nanian, mother superior of Nazareth House, and later on her successor, Mother Cyprian, the present mother superior, and through their efforts the mother house of the Order at Hammersmith, England, advanced \$25,000.00 as the Order's share in the restoration work. The Sisters of Nazareth conduct a home for children which has been built near the Old Mission.

Soon after this money was received, I appeared before the Officers and Delegates of the Native Sons Grand Parlor, held in San Francisco, 1929, and after a new presentation of what had become an old theme, I was gratified by their promise to give \$2500.00 toward the restoration fund.

Upon my return to San Diego I opened an appeal to the citizens to donate the money still needed to restore the Mission. The response to this appeal was most discouraging. Practically not a dollar was obtained through it. I then turned to my friend, James Wood Coffroth, with the idea of getting help from a native son and the son of a pioneer of the Mother Lode district. He gave me \$5000.00.

With this gift my spirits mounted. I now had almost \$40,000.00 toward the restoration, and I resolved to devote every waking moment to the task to which I had been assigned. I went to Miss Ellen Brown-ing Scripps, who donated \$3000.00 to the work. George W. Marston, who already had spent thousands of dollars in preserving the Old Mission, gave another \$1000.00. The San Diego Union and Tribune, through James MacMullen, contributed \$1000.00. San Diego Catholic Daughters and Knights of Columbus gave \$3000.00. The Native Sons and Daughters brought their collective donations to more than \$7000.00

Edward Hall and Col. Ed. Fletcher each contributed \$500. The San Diego Clearing House Association gave \$1000.00, and so did Lowerison and Wolstencroft. I. E. Loveless and Cave J. Coutts each gave \$600.00 and members of the San Diego Ad Club gave individual contributions.

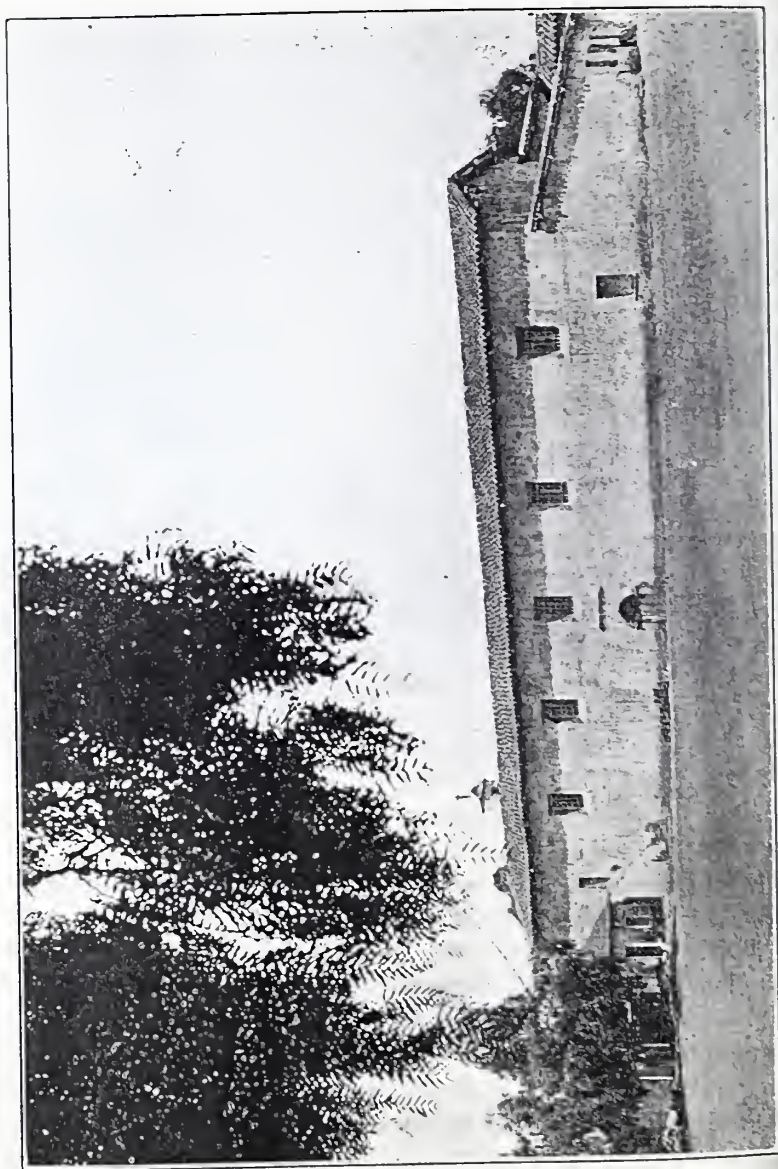


ORIGINAL DRAWING BY H. C. PRATT, MAY 1852

Let me state here that nothing is lost to the fund through failure of a bank in which some deposits of it were held. There remains \$7250.00 in that account, but Bishop Cantwell has advanced that amount of cash to the fund and taken assignment of the account.

All in all, a total of \$65,000.00 in cash and subscriptions was raised. When the work was put under way, it was found that increased excavations and other necessary additions to the work would add considerably to the original estimate of the cost. In fact, the restored Mission San Diego de Alcalá represents an expenditure of about \$30,000.00. The deficit has been protected by Bishop Cantwell, who from the beginning has been a tower of strength in bringing the restoration to a successful culmination.





Lester S. Ford

MISSION CHURCH AS SEEN FROM THE EAST



## RESTORING CALIFORNIA'S FIRST MISSION

By J. MARSHALL MILLER

(Editor's Note: The author of this article, a member of the Historical Society of Southern California, acted as architect's representative and supervisor of the construction during the entire process of restoration of Misión San Diego de Alcalá in 1930-31, under the general direction of I. E. Loveless, Architect. Mr. Miller had given particular attention for several years to the history and architecture of early California, and while a student at the University of Southern California made a complete study of Misión San Diego de Alcalá, including restoration drawings and a model of the mission church.)

ON September 13, 1931, one hundred and sixty-two years after the founding of the Misión San Diego de Alcalá, the first Franciscan establishment in Alta California, the restored church building of that mission was dedicated with appropriate ceremonies by church and citizen.

The religious ritual was performed under the leadership of His Grace, Most Reverend Pietro Fumisoni-Biondi, Apostolic Delegate from the Vatican, Rome. Following this ceremony a dedication was conducted by the Native Sons and Native Daughters of the Golden West, concluding with the raising of the four flags under which the State has been ruled. Thus did California reclaim one of her most noted and historic landmarks.

On July 16, 1769, under the guidance of Fr. Junipero Serra, Misión San Diego de Alcalá was founded near the shores of San Diego Bay. Two hundred and twenty-seven years had elapsed since Cabrillo's discovery of this land-locked harbor. The Spanish colonial frontier moved very slowly in the direction of California, and no definite attempt was launched in this direction until the encroachments of Russia in the north and the expeditions of England in the Pacific had forced Spanish officials to admit the need of colonies to assure possession.

In accordance with a plan formulated by José de Gálvez, Inspector General for New Spain, with the cooperation of Father Serra, who was then in charge of missionary work in Baja California, the Franciscan order was chosen to undertake colonization and civilization of Alta California through the establishment of a chain of missions along its coast.

The founding of the first mission was marked by a simple ceremony on the small hill to the south of the river, later known as

## HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA

Presidio Hill. This site the Indians called "Cosoy," and here the first chapel was built of poles and tules. The first location proved unsatisfactory for missionary endeavor because of the lack of water and resultant poor crops, and continued interference with the Indians by the presidio soldiers. In 1774, therefore, a new and permanent site was selected at a place known by the Indians as "Nipaguay," about six miles up the San Diego valley.

During the first year at the new site, there were erected a number of structures, including a church of poles and tules which served the new establishment until the Indian uprising of 1775 when the entire group of buildings was destroyed by fire. A new church was built of adobe in 1776. After four years of service this was outgrown and a larger church took its place in 1780. This structure, with walls of adobe and roof of tules and mud, served as a place of worship for twenty-eight years.

The erection of the last and largest church of the mission was commenced on September 29, 1808. After five years of labor it was completed and dedicated on November 12, 1813, the feast day of Saint Diego de Alcalá. Father José Bernardo Sánchez was in charge of the mission during this period, and to him might be attributed the design and supervision of the building.

Misión San Diego enjoyed its greatest prosperity in the years from 1820 to 1825. Following the decree of secularization of 1833, the mission soon ceased its religious functions. In 1847, during the American occupation of San Diego, the mission buildings were chosen by the United States Army as suitable barracks. During the occupation by the soldiers, the structure suffered many changes. Several partitions of adobe were erected, and a second floor was built to provide sleeping quarters for the soldiers. Space on the main floor was used as stables for the horses. The shingle roof replaced the weakened and delapidated tile roof. Additional doors and windows were cut through the thick adobe walls, all of which hastened the later ruin of the church structure.

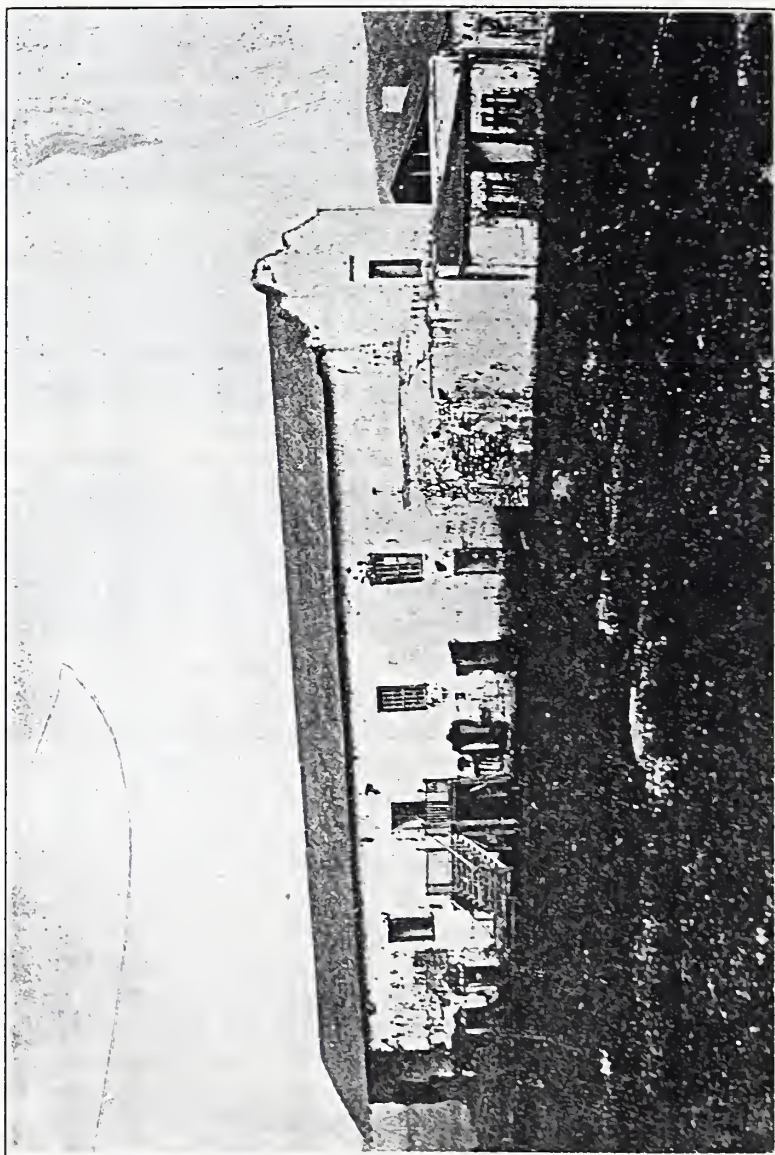
From the time of the evacuation by the soldiers in 1858, the process of ruination, both by man and by the elements, was rapid. By 1900 all that remained of the once splendid building was the front wall, the *campanario* base, and a few straggling sections of other walls.

Fr. Antonio Ubach, during his forty years of custody of the mission (1866-1907) cherished the hope of restoring the church, but his plans were never carried out. The San Diego Mission Restoration committee in 1920 uncovered many of the old foundations and rebuilt some portions of the walls. This partial restoration was largely inaccurate due to the lack of sufficient research, and eventually had to be removed to give place to more authentic work.

An organized movement for the restoration of the mission church along strictly historical lines was started in 1927, and funds were made available through combined efforts of interested groups and citizens throughout the state. After four years of constant endeavor, the restoration was finally started on July 16, 1930, the 161st anniversary of the founding.

Since the structure was almost entirely in ruin, and data was meager and widely scattered, the process of collecting information, although fascinating, was slow. Other missions of the chain, particularly those which have not been restored, were particularly fruitful sources of study, as they exhibited details of material and construction which are typical of California mission architecture, although the individual designs vary considerably.

The principal sources of material relative to early California and the missions are the files and libraries of organizations and societies which have been collecting data for many years. Among these are the California State Historical Association, the Historical Society of Southern California, the San Diego Historical Society, and the Society of California Pioneers. Other valuable sources in this work are the public and university libraries, as well as private collections of pioneer families. The material of highest value, in which we placed the greatest confidence from an architectural standpoint, was pictorial in nature, consisting of five or six sketches of the mission made before 1865, when most of the church building was still standing; and also several hundred photographs taken since that time at various stages of destruction and decay. Of special value were photographs taken by Watkins and Houseworth, and those taken by Turrill and Vischer. There are excellent collections of early photographs in the possession of several present-day photographers, among them C. C. Pierce, the Pacific Stereopticon Company, and H. P. Webb, all of Los Angeles; and Herbert R. Fitch of San Diego.



FROM A DAGUERROTYPE MADE ABOUT 1865

C. C. Pierce



The major source of information was, of course, the mission ruin itself. A complete and accurate survey was made of the grounds and remaining ruins before proceeding with any excavations. All existing fragments of walls, foundations, and details were carefully measured and photographed. Principal among the remnants of the original church structure was the front wall with its buttress-wings extending toward the valley, and the main doorway with window above, both of which had been partly boarded up for many years. To the west of the front wall stood a portion of the baptistry with tile-arched entrance intact and adjoining this, the remains of the cobblestone tower base. Two short flights of tile steps remained to mark openings to the north-west wall, one set leading from the nave of the church to the cemetery, the other from the sanctuary to the sacristy. In the east front corner, a second complete doorway was found opening from the church toward the living quarters of the main wing of the mission quadrangle. Several fragments of wall still stood above the foundation level, and these, as well as the cobblestone foundations themselves, which remained in their entirety, were carefully checked and measured. All our findings were carefully compared with previous surveys of the mission. The "Alemany Plat" of 1862, the survey by Dr. Owen C. Coy in 1920, and the delineations of Rexford Newcomb and Frances Rand Smith all served as valuable reference material.

While discussing the extent of the ruins it may be of interest to note briefly the plan of the entire mission establishment and the relation of the different units to each other and to the site. As was typical of most of the missions, the buildings were arranged in a large quadrangle about a courtyard or patio. At San Diego, the church formed the northwest side of the quadrangle, and faced almost directly southwest as did the main wing of the mission quarters which extended eastward from the front of the church. In this main wing were the reception rooms, the padres' quarters, and rooms for guests, visitors, and the mission guard. The southwest side of the quadrangle was given over to shops and storerooms, with corrals adjoining these on the southwest toward the river. The fourth and rear side of the quadrangle was divided into dwelling quarters for the neophytes, with separate units for the young men and young women and for the married couples.

The entire establishment occupied an elevated slope of ground

on the north side of the river, overlooking a large fertile stretch of valley where the padres planted their orchards and gardens.

The minor buildings around the quadrangle fell into disuse and ruin many years before the church. By 1880 only a small portion of the walls of the main front wing still remained intact, and at present only one room of this unit, that one nearest the church, still stands. With the collapsing of the walls of these buildings, adobe has covered all the floors, foundations, and lower sections of the walls, forming a new and higher ground level and burying any details or objects which are below this new level. In the few excavation tests made at different points of the enclosure, old tile floors and foundations were found to be in a remarkable state of preservation. It has often been suggested that these foundations and floors be excavated for display to visitors, but it is more logical that these valuable details and fragments remained undisturbed until the restoration of these buried units becomes possible. Once uncovered and laid at the mercy of the elements and of curio collectors, it would be only a short time before the ruination of these remaining portions would be complete.

Excavation of the area covered by the mission church was a process which proved exceedingly fascinating. During the removal of debris, many interesting discoveries were made of buried portions of the building hitherto unknown or only indefinitely approximated.

On the tiled terrace or porch which is directly in front of the church between the two buttress-wings which extend at a right angle toward the valley, were found the remnants of several sections of tile walls. These walls were not a part of the original church, but formed a three-arched arcade or vestibule which was added at a later time. To provide support for the rafters of the roof over this arcade, a row of large holes had been cut into the front wall of the church about 17 feet above the floor. During the military occupation in the 'fifties, this arcade was divided into several rooms and another new roof built, for which a second row of rafter holes was cut in the facade some two feet below the first row. These holes obscured or destroyed many decorative details of the facade, showing clearly that the arcade roofs were not integral parts of the original facade.

The main doorway fortunately remained almost intact, as did much of the detail on the lower part of the front wall. The single window in the upper section over the doorway yielded some important

discoveries. Upon removing the wooden window frame from the opening, a section of the original tile-arch of the window head was brought to light. By studying this fragment and projecting its curves, the shape of the entire original opening was determined. The window was found to be quite narrow and high, unlike all the others of the building. In its exterior sill appeared a small niche, which had been filled with adobe probably at the time the window was enlarged. Upon removal of the wooden beams over the inside of the window opening, another perfect tile arched head was found. The arched window opening viewed from the interior seems noticeably off center.

The base of the campanario was carefully examined for clues which might lead to a solution of the original shape of the bell tower. The top of the base had been filled and leveled off, probably about 1894, to make a platform for the big recast bell which was placed there at that time. Upon removing this fill the tile floor beneath was uncovered and the outline of the campanario footing clearly shown. It consisted of a wall 4 feet in thickness across the front, with a low tile parapet bordering the side and rear of the tower base. The shape of these unearthed foundations indicated that the campanario could have been of one possible form only, that of the heavy pierced-wall type, and not a square tower.

The campanario base, with tile floor and railing mentioned above, provided an elevated platform for the *campanero* or bell-ringer. Evidence of some sort of stairway leading to this platform was carefully sought. One of the earliest photographs of the west wall revealed a faint outline of the treads and risers of a stairway where they abutted the wall. Upon excavating next to this portion of the wall, the entire cobblestone foundation of a stairway was discovered, with the first tile step complete, thus disclosing the exact location and dimensions of this feature.

Another interesting feature brought to light was the stairway and entrance to the choir balcony. The doorway into this balcony was originally from an exterior stairway. The doorway was closed up with adobe bricks about the time of the soldiers' occupancy. Upon removing these bricks the entrance was revealed in all its original charm. Three steep steps led through the thick adobe wall; the entrance walls retained their mellowed plaster; and overhead were the original wooden beams across the top of the doorway. There was no trace of the lower

portion of this stairway, but by working downward from the upper steps in the wall, the remainder of the stairway was recreated.

Differing somewhat from the usual practice, all final plans and detailed drawings were drawn at the site. This was quite imperative in order to permit constant reference to the ruins themselves, and to make a complete and accurate record of newly unearthed portions of the structure before they could suffer any disturbance. The number of irregularities of design, construction and workmanship made it desirable to do all drafting on the mission grounds.

Perhaps the most fascinating work was the actual construction, especially the handling of the different materials, their selection, processes of making and varied methods of use in different portions of the project.

For the structural units where the loads and stresses were the greatest, and where a lasting material was desirable to assure permanence and durability, reinforced concrete was used. The design and appearance of the building was in no way affected by the use of this modern material, and the result is a building which will resist disintegration and minimize upkeep costs.

The most interesting material used in mission construction is adobe. The adobe bricks, averaging in size about 3 x 10 x 20 inches, the dimensions varying in different sections of the country, are made from the adobe clay which abounds in this part of the state, and which has qualities very similar to those of ordinary clay. The process of making adobe bricks is very simple. The clay is very hard and of a grayish-brown color when dry. It is first soaked well with water to make it plastic. A pile of clay is then shoveled to the place of mixing, usually a hollow in the ground, and after the desired plasticity has been obtained by mixing with water, a quantity of straw is added. The mixing is carried on by hand, with a hoe-shaped instrument, aided by the bare feet of the mixer. When thoroughly mixed, the mud is transported to a level piece of ground where it is formed into brick-shaped blocks by the use of wood moulds into which the mud is packed, kneaded, and smoothed off with the hands. The bricks are then dried in the sun, this requiring usually from one to three weeks, depending on weather conditions. The straw prevents checking and cracking during the drying process. When the bricks are dry they become hard and are then ready for use. The laying of such bricks is similar to the



laying of present-day common bricks, except that the adobe bricks are laid in a mortar of adobe clay.

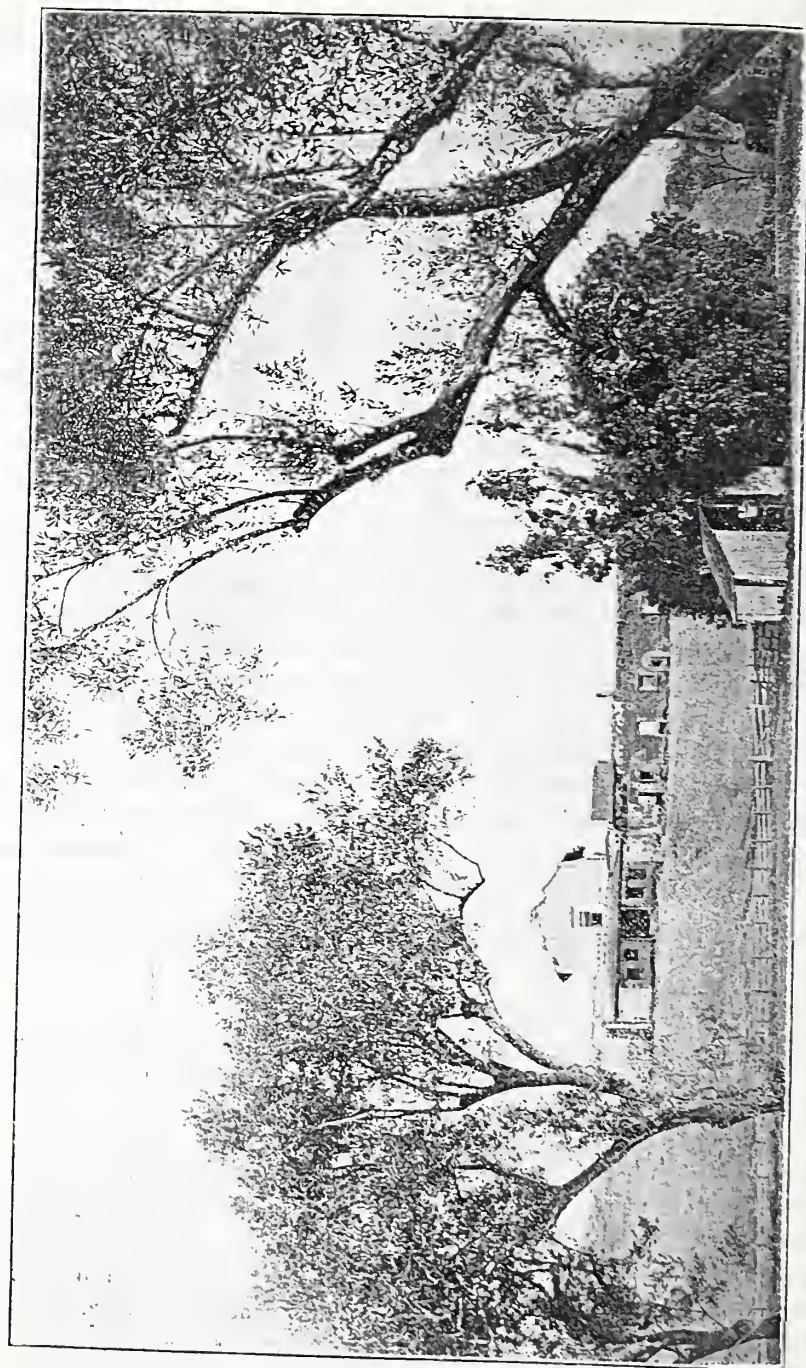
Tiles for roofs, floors, and walls are made in a similar manner, except for the addition of a small quantity of sand to the initial mixture. When dry these are kiln-burned, which makes them especially hard, durable, and resistant to water. Upon burning, the color of the adobe changes to a dull brownish-red. The irregularities so noticeable in all mission tile work result primarily from the fact that the moulding and shaping is done by hand, and further from the crude methods of laying the already varying tiles. These irregularities, however, enhance rather than detract from the charm of the mission structures.

Wood and timberwork are quite essential in the mission type of building. Wood is principally used for ceiling beams and boarding, roof trusses and rafters, window grilles, shutters, and doors. At the Misión San Diego the heavy wooden ceiling beams and balcony beams, the sizes of which vary from 12 x 12 inches to 12 x 14 inches in cross section by 26 feet in length, are hand-hewn, as are the timbers which form the lintels over doors and windows. In these buildings two kinds of woods were customarily used. For the bulk of the interior woodwork, such as beams, lintels, ceiling, etc., a local wood was used. In those places where exposure to the elements demanded great durability, for instance, in doors, shutters and window grilles, redwood was usually used. There were a number of timbers salvaged from the debris of the original church at San Diego, and these were carefully incorporated in the restored structure, their preservation assured by transferring any load which they previously carried to additional and hidden structural members.

The hinges, locks, bolts, and all other exposed hardware in the restored church follow exactly the design and workmanship of the originals, even to the hand-hammered nails which are especially noticeable in the door and shutter construction.

In laying, placing, and surfacing all the materials used in the restoration, even to the plaster and whitewash, an effort was made to avoid regularity or mechanical exactness, as such qualities would certainly be foreign to this type of building. It was found that the simplest way to reproduce a surface or texture was to follow as closely as possible the method by which the original surface was obtained.

In the restoration of the mission church there have once more



California History Nugget

MISSION SAN DIEGO DE ALCALA

come into being several outstanding features of design which have been completely or partially obscured in the ruins for many decades. As a visitor approaches the mission today, the facade or *jachada* of the church, with its interesting curved pedimented gable, will be the first section to command his attention. The front wall, together with its massive buttress-wings and tiled terrace, are parts of the original structure and have been carefully preserved and reinforced. It may be of interest here to note the dimension of the front. The church proper is 35 feet wide and 35 feet high to the ridge, with an additional 4 feet of gable above the ridge. The spread of the buttresses and campanario is 70 feet. The original tile paving and steps of the entrance terrace have been carefully relaid on a permanent base. Of particular interest and charm is the narrow arched window above the doorway, flanked by six ornamental pilasters, simple in design and of pleasing irregularity. The purpose of the small niche found in the window ledge is not exactly known, but it is presumed to have been used for a piece of statuary. Due to the great amount of repair and patchwork necessary on the front wall, a new coat of plaster was required, but the effect of age was carefully recreated.

The great arch of the main doorway and its massive redwood doors are impressive and dignified. The handcarved doors are exact replicas in every detail of the originals, even to the hand-wrought hinges and hand-hammered nails. This duplication was made possible through the enlargement of an old photograph of the doorway and the door, which proved an excellent guide to the details of design and construction.

As these large doors are swung open and one passes into the interior, the doorway beams in the massive wall will be noticed overhead. These are the original timbers, placed there when the wall was built, and they have never been moved. The front wall averages nearly 7 feet in thickness. The proportions of the church are scarcely comprehended until one enters the interior. There the great length and height are impressive. The church is 150 feet long and 35 feet wide, exterior dimension, the ceiling being 29 feet above the floor. The interior is lighted by ten windows, all in the upper half of the walls, the small one in front over the choir balcony, four large windows in the northwest wall, and five in the southwest wall. Most of the windows are covered with wooden grilles, the purpose of which is to keep the bats



and owls from entering when the shutters are open. An antique glass especially selected for the windows of the restored church gives a soft warm light that adds greatly to the aged appearance of the interior.

The choir balcony across the front end of the long room, immediately above the main entrance, is supported by five large hand-hewn beams, with floor planks of sturdy proportions. The baptistry, situated in the west corner of the church, is entered through an archway under the balcony, this arch being one of the remnants of the old church which has been preserved intact.

The sanctuary at the opposite end is two steps above the floor level of the church, and set off by a hand-surfaced altar railing. Beneath the sanctuary floor, marked by a tile cross patterned in the floor, lie the remains of five Franciscan padres of the mission. Since no information has been found to indicate the design and character of the original altar, no attempt has been made to make one. A temporary altar now stands in the sanctuary, negotiations being already under way to secure from Mexico an old altar which will equal or exceed the age of the original mission structure.

There are two main side doorways, one leading through each side wall near the center of the church. The doors are of typical mission design, hand-constructed of redwood with hand-wrought hinges and nails. The beams over both of these doorways are timbers remaining from the old church.

Two large outside stairways of the church also attract considerable notice. The choir stairway on the southeast side, with its solid tile wall-rail and unusually steep and irregular tile steps is the only entrance to the choir balcony. The campanario stairway on the opposite side of the building has a gentler slope; its uneven tile threads and risers of different heights have been skillfully set and surfaced so that they already seem to show long years of wear by trudging feet.

The campanario is the most outstanding feature of the restored church. This tower was in ruin for more than three-quarters of a century, the date of its final ruination being about 1860. We have no photograph of the church earlier than 1865, so that the design of the restored campanario depended largely upon the study of the design and details portrayed in the several sketches previously mentioned, all of which were drawn before the tower had fallen into final ruin. Although in design it is faintly reminiscent of towers or belfries of



other missions, it remains uniquely characteristic of San Diego. Rising nearly fifty feet above the ground, its graceful outline is topped with a large wooden cross. There are five bell-arches in the tower, and at present three of these are occupied by bells.

The mission bells have an interesting history of their own. The large bell in the lower east arch bears the inscription:

### MATER DOLOROSA

originally cast in New Spain 1796; recast  
in San Diego, Cal., 1894. Standard Iron Works

This bell was recast by order of Father Ubach from the remains of several smaller bells which had become broken or cracked beyond possible use. From 1894 to 1930 "Mater Dolorosa" stood on a crude mounting atop the tower base, where it was reached by a ladder and rung by the custodian on special occasions. It is the heaviest of the three bells, weighing about 1100 pounds. Its shell is very thick and the tone not so sweet as the other bells.

In the west lower arch is another large bell about the same dimensions, i.e., 36 inches in diameter and 30 inches in height exclusive of mounting. This is an original bell of the mission, and is 130 years old. It bears the following inscription:

### Sn. JUAN NEPOMUCENO AVE MARIA PURISIMA 1802

This bell is much thinner than the other large one, weighing 805 pounds. It has remarkable resonance and beauty of tone. After its removal from the ruined campanario, this bell hung for many years in the rear of the old adobe church at Old Town. Later it was installed in the tower of the new church in Old Town where it has been in use until the restoration of the mission church, when it was returned to its home setting.

In the west arch of the middle section of the campanario is the third and smallest bell. It originally hung in the old mission church, and is one of the oldest bells in California. The inscription upon its face is as follows:

### SANTA MARIA MADALENA AND DE 1738 X

Its diameter is 21 1-2 inches, with overall height of 23 1-2 inches. The weight is 163 3-4 pounds. For many years past this bell has seen an



Nugget

J. Marshall Miller

active service in the tower of St. Joseph's Church in the City of San Diego, and previous to that time it hung in various locations in Old Town.

According to mission records, the two last-mentioned bells were cast at San Blas, in the State of Jalisco, Mexico. The larger of them bears a "crown" top. Any mission bell with a crown top is known as a royal bell, indicating that it was supplied by the Spanish King, either being cast at the royal foundry or elsewhere at the king's expense.

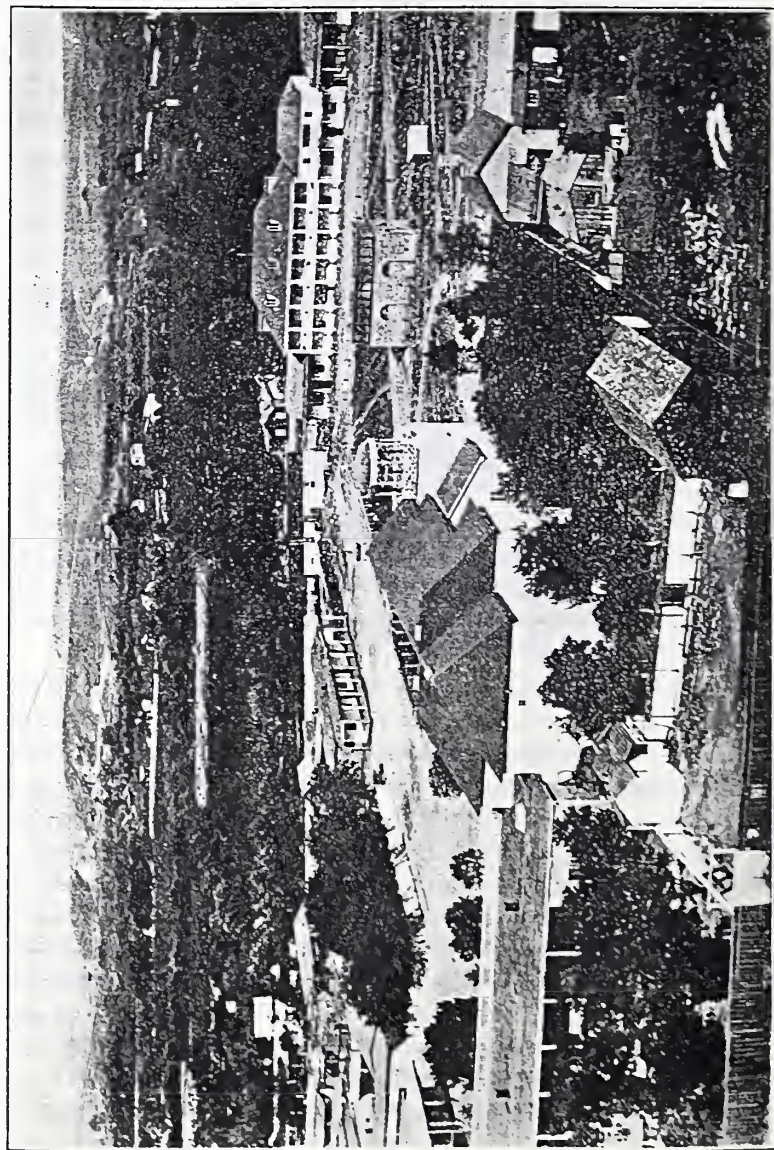
A fourth bell belonging to the mission is still in use at the Old Town Church, and will be returned to the mission when a suitable substitute is obtained. This bell is of medium size but bears no date or inscription.

The bells in the restored campanario are hung from wooden beams with strips of rawhide, following exactly their original method

of hanging, with the exception of several small rawhide-wrapped cables added to carry the weight of the bells but which are in no way apparent and add a great degree of safety and permanency. The effect of the "old" campanario with its aged bells completed by the rawhide hanging and rawhide bell ropes is distinctly pleasing and harmonious.

There is probably no full agreement, even among students of the subject, as to the extent to which a restored structure of this kind should be aged or "antiqued." The motive of all restoration work should be to restore and preserve the structure in such a way as to recreate through it a scene and atmospheric effect which will carry the observer back in spirit to the days of the past. The details should coincide with all knowable facts about the condition of the structure at the period being reproduced. A square, smooth, white, unpatched, unworn mission structure could scarcely evoke a picture of the actual background of Franciscan endeavors as we know it. When restored sections are added to preserved portions, it is quite important that the appearance of the old be carefully repeated in the new—the entire work being in the same spirit and in harmony with its natural setting. Thus the new campanario at San Diego looks as old as the facade next it, and visitors cannot detect any inharmonious modern touches in any part of the church.

At the completion of the project, California recovers in a tangible form one of its first and most historic landmarks, a picturesque example of her earliest architecture, one of the shrines of El Camino Real, the backbone of the most colorful and romantic period in her history. It is to be hoped that the work at San Diego may serve in some degree to stimulate and encourage proper preservation and restoration of the important landmarks in other parts of the state. Interest in these activities is increasing steadily, and before many years the complete mission chain may again come into being—not necessarily as religious establishments, but as historic monuments to their padre-builders and to the endeavors, the hardships, and the trials encountered and surmounted in the implanting of civilization on our Pacific shores.



LOS ANGELES WHEN IT WAS A CITY OF VINES



## LOS ANGELES WHEN IT WAS "THE CITY OF VINES"

By MRS. A. S. C. FORBES

*(This article is dedicated to the memory of Arthur Ellis,  
at whose request it was written)*

OF the many different eras of this spectacular City of the Angels, there is none more interesting and spectacular than the period when grape culture was the leading industry and the City of Los Angeles was known as "The City of Vines."

This period extended from about the year 1835 to 1875. The vineyards and orchards extended from the heart of the City to the southern boundary, and far beyond. When the vines and trees were in full bloom or were laden with ripening fruit the little western town was a scene of great beauty. The route from the harbor at San Pedro approached Los Angeles through these vineyards and orchards on a narrow lane known for many years as "Vineyard Lane." It was about ten feet wide, and along a portion of the way, was bordered with waving willow trees. Here and there were low adobe houses with red tile roofs that added greater charm to the vista.

Secretary William H. Seward said in his memorable speech, made in 1869 during a visit to Los Angeles, that he had visited a great many countries to view the remarkable beauties of the different lands, and among them he had gone to Burgundy to see the most celebrated vineyards in the world but the vineyards of Los Angeles far surpassed them all.

Most writers in the past have been content with painting the Pueblo de Los Angeles as a wee, sunburnt village without shade trees and vines. That is generally true of all business centers, but it seems strange never to have given thought to these acres upon acres of vines and vineyards, orchards and shade trees that surrounded the Pueblo, nor to have remembered the beautiful description of this valley of the Angels given by Fray Juan Crespi, the chronicler of the Spaniards when they made their first overland journey of exploration through this wilderness of the west. He said of this Valley that it was an extensive plain where a good village of Indians lived in a delightful place among trees along the river. After crossing the river, which he named Porciuncula, the expedition entered a large vineyard of wild grapes and saw an infinity of rose bushes in full bloom. He describes the soil

as black and loamy and capable of producing every kind of grain and fruit which may be planted and records that they went west continually over good lands covered with grass. It gives a happy and very pleasing impression of the Valley that was to become "The City of Vines."

It is difficult to learn with any degree of accuracy when the first real vineyard was planted in Los Angeles. We do know that in 1829 or 1830, Jean Luis Vignes, a native of Bordeaux, France, came to Los Angeles to make his home, and that he secured 104 acres of land facing the present Aliso Street and extending to the river, and that he planted a vineyard. He named his place "El Aliso" from the stately old alder tree that graced the lot and shaded his wine cellars. This tree has been called a sycamore, but as the Spanish word for alder is aliso, and the Spanish word for sycamore is sicomoro, it would seem that the tree was an alder. Also, they are a different kind of tree. The alder is of the genus *Alnus* and the sycamore is of the genus *Platanus*, Plane tree. This grand old sentinel "El Aliso" was chopped down to make room for the Philadelphia brewhouse. As it lay denuded of leafage, a pathetic old trunk, huge and gnarled. Mr. Charles Gibbs Adams, then a boy interested in all trees and now a noted landscape architect, counted the rings of the trunk and found the age of the tree to be more than four hundred years. Alders are not credited with great age while sycamores grow old and are sturdy.

Another very early vineyard, and quite important in extent, was one owned by Juan Domingo. It was located at the present site of First and Alameda streets. Domingo, whose true name was Johannes Gronigen, was a native of Holland. He was the ship carpenter on the American brig *Danube* that was wrecked in the harbor at San Pedro, Christmas day, 1828. The ship was a total loss and only a few of the crew was saved. They were brought to Los Angeles as prisoners but the mayor decided to permit them to remain and become citizens of the Pueblo.

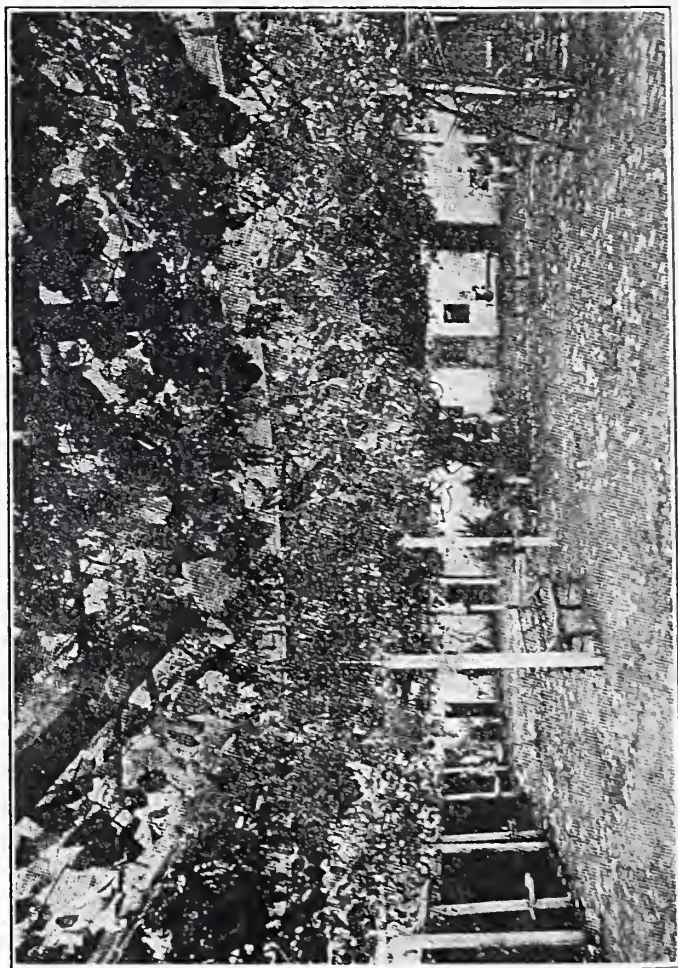
Gronigen, who was slightly lame, became known to the Spanish residents of Los Angeles as Juan Cojo (Lame John), a name he retained until after he accepted the Catholic religion, and received baptism, at which time he assumed the name of Juan Domingo (John Sunday). On February 12, 1839, Juan married Señorita Reymunda Feliz. Later he became active in public affairs, and acquired consider-

able property. It is stated by some writers that he purchased the site of the Indian village of Yanga or Yangna and drove the Indians to a new location. But Fray Juan Crespi writes in his diary that the first Spanish expedition under command of Gov. Gasper de Portola, on their way to Monterey, camped August 2, 1769, at a place where there was a good village of Indians living in a delightful place among trees along the river, and that after crossing the river, which was named Porciuncula, they proceeded on their journey. This account very definitely places the village of Yanga on the east bank of the Los Angeles River. As the earliest ford of the river was at Aliso Street near the Vignes vineyard, on the road to Mission San Gabriel Arcangel, and the old maps and surveys show a group of Indian huts at this point, on the east bank of the river, it is fair to assume that this was the original location of Yanga, the village of the Ya Indians.

Juan Domingo built a comfortable home and cultivated an extensive vineyard.

As grapes were one of the staple articles of food, each home, in early days of California, had arbors, or bunch-vines of grapes. The vineyardists obtained their young vines from the "Mother Vineyard" at Mission San Gabriel Arcangel. The thrifty padres set out vineyards and planted orchards of lemons, oranges, prunes, olives, and walnuts. They had sent a caravan, under Cornenio Agina, in 1786, to Sinaloa, Mexico, for necessary shade trees, vegetable seeds, plants, and vines for their gardens. The same year these supplies were augmented by a generous gift made to the Missions by M. John Francis Galaup de la Pérouse, who says in his diary, that he enriched the gardens of the Governor of California and the Missions with different grains and seeds brought by his expedition from Paris, France. He mentions especially, the potato, of which he says, "Our gardener gave the missionaries some potatoes of Chili in perfect preservation, which in my opinion was not the least valuable of our presents, and which will certainly thrive in the light but fertile soil of the environs of Monterey." M. Pérouse brought with him eight bushels of grape seeds, and also vines of the Golden Chasselas, the Muscadine and the hardy Raisin de Corinthe.

It is of interest to note what this great traveler and writer had to say about California in general. He says, "The crops of maise, barley, wheat, and peas can only be compared with those in Chili, and that



THE GRAPEVINE AT SAN GABRIEL.



Europe has no conception of so abundant fertility as is found in this wonderful land."

From time to time different superior varieties of grapes were introduced from foreign countries and California became noted for the excellence of its wines and brandies. We probably received some of these fine varieties of grapes from de la Pérouse. However, proper culture of the grape had, and has, much to do with the flavor of the fruit and also the quantity of production. For example, take that great grape-vine of San Gabriel. It was but a wild grape vine brought from the canyon near the home of B. D. Wilson. The full history of this vine is given here in a copy of an affidavit, the original of which is owned by Mrs. Susan Thompson Parrish, who lives near El Monte, Los Angeles County, and who was one of the three persons present at the planting. It is:

State of California,

County of Los Angeles,

Personally appeared before me, one David Franklin Hall, who personally deposes and says as follows

In 1854 Dr. George I. Rice and I bought of Hipolito Cervantes the house and lot now known as the Grapevine property. The house was a small affair, of three rooms, and a bat roof, and there was no grapevine on the lot.

L. J. Rose's purchase of land, which he improved and called Sunny Slope, included the house of Courtney, (a son-in-law of Michael White, one of the oldest pioneers), on which he (Courtney) had transplanted a wild grape vine he procured from a canyon near the home of B. D. Wilson (Lake Vineyard).

Its location obstructed the plans of Mr. Rose, and he gladly gave it to me, and assisted me in digging it up. It had been pruned to a height of two and a half (2 1-2) or three (3) feet, and the trunk had thickened to a diameter of three or four inches. We left one short branch on it. I took it in my buggy to my own house, and placed it where it now flourishes, in the spring of 1861.

It grew luxuriantly from the start, and we used its shelter as a summer kitchen until I sold the premises to Mr. Bailey in 1881 or 1882, of which date I am not positive, but I had been there continuously for twenty-seven years.

David Frankiln Hall

Subscribed and sworn to before me, this 10th day  
of January, 1903.

D. R. Weller

Notary Public in and for Los Angeles County,  
California.

Today this vine is a landmark because of its great size and prolific production of grapes, and it should be known and heralded as the *wild grape vine of California*.

There are over two hundred species of the *Vitus* of which the best known and most widely cultivated is the *Vitus Vinifera*, the true wild grape vine of many countries. There are but ten species indigenous to the soil of the United States and of these ten there are but four of real commercial value. They are the *Vitus Rotunifolia*, *Vitus Cordifolia*, *Vitus Labrusca*, and *Vitus Aestivalis*.

It takes from three to four years for most varieties of grapes to come into full commercial bearing, therefore, it was about 1838 or 1840 that the vines of Don Luis Vignes at "El Aliso" came into bearing. His vines were trained over arbors, one being nearly a half mile in length. It extended from within a short distance of his house to the river, and the thousand or more vines that trailed over this arbor formed a shelter of beauty that became the scene of many gay parties and sometimes of stirring political rallies. To protect his fruit Don Luis built a high adobe wall about much of his acreage and planted hedges along the riverside. A narrow lane about ten feet wide led from near the Plaza down by "El Aliso," and across the river past the Indian Village located on the east bank. This village was a group of rustic huts where the natives lived who trod the grapes that made the wines and brandies for Vignes and others.

In 1839 Pierre Sainsevain, a nephew of Vignes, came to Los Angeles to assist his uncle. Ten years later another nephew, Luis Sainsevain, a brother of Pierre, arrived and within a few years, in fact on April 14th, 1855, the Sainsevains purchased, for the sum of \$42,000, the vineyards, cellars, orchards, and other property belonging to their uncle, Luis Vignes, and began to make champagne and other fancy wines for the San Francisco market.

It was in the shelter of this beautiful garden of grapes and surrounding orange groves that Captain Banning made his memorable patriotic speech on July 4th 1861. He flung defiance at the traitors to the United States Government whom he knew to be within the sound of his voice.

A portion of the Vignes acreage was sold to Dona Teresa Varela, and the part along the river and Aliso road went to Ballesteros.

William Wolfskill, who came to Los Angeles in 1831, secured a

tract of land south of the Vignes-Sainsevain place and planted a vineyard. His land extended to and beyond the present site of the Southern Pacific Railroad depot at Fifth Street and Central Avenue. In 1850 Mr. Wolfskill had a garden of 50,000 vines, 32,000 in full bearing, and it is stated that his vineyard would yield 1,000 barrels of wine per annum. His son-in-law, Henry Dwright Barrows, a founder and past president of the Historical Society of Southern California, and instructor of the Wolfskill children, engaged in grape culture. He cultivated part of the Wolfskill vineyard and also a portion of land owned by Prudence Beaudry. Mr. Wolfskill built an attractive home at the present Fourth and Alameda Streets where he established a private school in order that his six children might receive proper education.

In 1849 Dr. Leonce Huber, a native of Switzerland and former surgeon in the army of Napoleon, came to Los Angeles with his two daughters and son. They came overland across the plains by ox-team, typically and truly 49ers. For a time they lived on the Wolfskill ranch but soon located themselves on a ten acre tract at the present Macy Street district. He called his place "Clayton Vineyard" and was one of the first to engage extensively in wine making. He secured his young vines from Jose Serrano, one of the earliest vineyardists. The grand daughter of Dr. Heber, who had changed his name to Hoover, married Dr. Granville MacGowan. Hoover Street was named in honor of this family of Hubers.

There were two different men by the name of Huber who planted vineyards in this enticing little "City of Vines." The second came here from Kentucky in 1855, accompanied by his son William. He came for the benefit of his health and soon found that the climate and general conditions justified him in sending for his family which consisted of wife and four other children, two girls and two boys, Edward and Joseph. They found him settled on the Foster vineyard, or rather that portion that ran from about Second Street to Sixth and from Alameda Street to the river. They came in the hey-day of the unique western town that knew not the glory of its own inheritance, nor did it recognize the commercial opportunity of its productive grape industry. It lay wrapt in its mantle of vine clad beauty and was content to spend the day in day-dreaming and the night in dancing. But the coming of these young people threw a certain glamour of newness and thrill about the social circle of the wee City of Vines and things began to





change in accordance with certain American ideas of conventionality and amenity. In time Miss Emiline Huber became the wife of O. W. Childs and Miss Caroline married Dr. Frederick Preston Howard. For many years these families were social leaders in Los Angeles.

Each year added more American names to the roster of vineyard-ists, and many large land holdings of the Mexicans and Spaniards were subdivided and new vineyards planted. East of Main Street to the river was an unbroken acreage of vineyards and orchards extending to the southern boundary of the City and far beyond. It would be impossible to mention all of the eighty-five or ninety vineyardists that constituted the colony engaged in viticulture, but many of the well known names and the general location of their vineyards are here given.

Beginning at the bluff where the river rounds the point near the location of the old water-wheel, the vineyards along the river were owned by Louis Wilhart, Porter, Foster, D. Sepulveda, Mrs. White, Sainsevains, Messer, Huber, Keller, Martinez, and Carrion. Other vineyards to the west were owned by the Avilas, the Apablases, Sanchez, Ballesteros, Ramirez, and Juan Domingo. These vineyards lay north of First Street and faced the road leading to San Pedro, often called Vine or Vineyard Lane. Further south lay the beautiful lands of William Wolfskill, Barrows, Weyse, Coronel, Temple, Sabichi, Moran, Vejar, Lugo, and Foster, and Jose de Rubio. Jose de Rubio had two vineyards, one on each side of the river. He is mentioned in history as having a family of twenty-five children, so he probably needed the two vineyards.

The commercial value of the grape industry is shown in financial records as having been of considerable importance. In 1857 General Banning shipped twenty-one thousand crates of grapes to San Francisco via San Pedro. The average weight of a crate was recorded as forty-five pounds and the market price in San Francisco was twenty cents per pound. The same year two hundred and fifty thousand gallons of wine was exported, which was about the average per annum at that time. At the height of the industry it has been estimated that there were more than four million, five hundred thousand grape vines in and about the vicinity of the "City of Vines."

We recall that the Missions made vast quantities of wines and brandies and that these commodities were a distinct medium of ex-

change in the handling of trade in the early days. To assist in the building of the Church of Our Lady of the Angels at the Plaza of Los Angeles many of the Missions contributed brandy and wine as well as cattle. Eleven barrels of brandy and a barrel of white wine was gratefully received and converted into cash to pay for the labor of building the church.

There are many other names familiar to us that were connected with the grape industry, for instance, Newmark, E. J. Baldwin, Hafer, Dalton, Clement, Morris, J. J. Warner and others all owning vineyards at one time or another south of the town and extending both east and west of Main Street. There are many Spanish names also familiar that are found on the records as owning vineyards in this district. A very large property was that of Eulogio de Celis who owned the land from Washington Street, Pico and Main. One of the Machado tracts set out to vines was on west Washington where now the Polytechnic High School stands. Again, on Main Street and San Pedro between Fourth and Fifth Streets, Dr. J. S. Ogier owned a vineyard that he had purchased from Dona Cataline Moreno. Surrounding this tract were those of Don Agustin Machado, Don Julian Valdez, Dolores Urquides and the Morenos.

Stephen C. Foster and Don Antonio Maria Lugo, a father-in-law of Foster, had a flourishing vineyard of twelve and a half acres south of the City limits near Compton. Don Lugo had also a spacious town house at the corner of east Second Street and San Pedro, where of course he had vines. Don Lugo is credited with having given easement to the land in front of the church that there might be the customary plaza. The Vicente residence which was built some years after the completion of the Plaza Church is still standing at No. 516-22 North Los Angeles Street. It is more than a century old, is in good condition and is occupied now by Chinese merchants, but alas, no grape vines are there.

The Foster and Lugo vineyard south of town was surrounded by other vineyards owned by Jose de Lopez, Antonio Ygnacio Avila, Victoria Sanchez de Aguilar and the Cota heirs. Mark Brundage had a twenty-nine acre vineyard in this vicinity, bordering on Vineyard Lane.

## GARDENS OF THE SPANISH DAYS OF CALIFORNIA

by CHARLES GIBBS ADAMS

*Talk before the Historical Society of Southern California*

YOU ask me to tell of the gardens of the days of Spanish rule in California. The study of the subject is not simple, because there is so little authoritative record; but it is delightful, especially to us natives, or paisanos.

There is little literature, I mean, as to details of plan and arrangement,—except of the very important living features, like outdoor ovens, wine presses, ramadas, or arbors, and so forth, and general location of the gardens as patios or outdoor rooms,—for such they generally were.

On the other hand there is a gratifying amount of knowledge to be ferreted out as to the plant material used, and as to how it found its way into the country and the gardens; for many a diary and other writing left by those plant-loving Spaniards of early days tells fragments of the story.

The first record of the rich flora those valorous old padres found awaiting them in California was the diary of brave wonderful old Padre Juan Crespi of Padre Junipera Serra's staff, as it tells of the epic Mission-founding journeys from San Diego northwest, in the seventeen-seventies. While Padre Juan was no finished botanist, he did have a love of plants and an almost instinctive knowledge of them; and such little mistakes as he made were but natural.

He told of the noble Oaks that grew here, and among which so many of the Spanish hacienda casas were to be located; and accounted glowingly of the Coast Sequoias, which he named, in Spanish, just as we do today, Palos Colorados, Redwoods. He told of the good cresses they found in the streams, of the fragrant plants under their sandals as they walked,—the Hierbas Odorosas, — of the fruitful Prickly Pears, or Nopales; of the Wild Roses which reminded him of variety of its relative, the Strawberry Tree of the gardens of Southern Spain; of Sages and Rosemarys; of the fiery Poppies, whose great sheets, some people say, gave the name of California—"Hot furnace;" and even of the Madroño, which he thought to be a small-fruited Europe.

What he took to be Rosemary was the beautiful *Trichostema*,

now called by the silly name of Woolly Blue-Curls, which does indeed look like Rosemary till it sends forth its exquisite flowers. For that matter, many people now quite as wrongly call it Purple Sage. To this day it is best known by the name he gave it,—Romero,—which is Spanish for Rosemary.

With all the interest the Franciscan Padres took in the native flora, it is too bad that not one plant was ever named for one of them as far as I can find. The nearest to that honor was the naming of the Yellow Daisy, Venegasia, after the early Jesuit Missionary, Padre Venegas.

The return to the man-made gardens, and my plaint so little is known of their design:

Probably there was little *to* know; probably there was not much pattern in them, and, we know, haphazard planting. Having studied their predecessors, the gardens of both Spain and Mexico, I can venture a guess as to heir plan. Probably the focal point was a fountain,—usually in reality a little reservoir made beautiful. We know that such at least was the case with many of the Mission gardens. Patios were generally quadrisected with a cross of straight paths, meeting at the fountain.

For privacy and for protection the casa garden was always enclosed, usually with a high adobe wall surmounted with red roof tile, on as many sides as the house did not embrace it. That was a direct inheritance from Mother Andalusia. In such houses as the old San Diego county one from which the Casa Adobe at Southwest Museum was copied, the patio was house-bound on all four sides; in such as that beautiful old one of Santa Margarita Rancho, and the old de la Guerra house at Santa Barbara, on three sides, and on the rectangular houses of Monterey and San Juan Bautista, on but one side.

Sometimes the walls were of living Cactus hedge, absolutely impenetrable. Within my own memory as a four-year old child, the great Cactus thickets which fenced the San Gabriel Mission lands still grew. Every year the Indians came in a long horse-drawn procession all the way from San Jacinto to gather and dry the fruit, which they knocked off with long poles and rolled in sand to remove the little spines.

In a corner of every casa garden was the important barrel, where the rain water was caught from the roof,—once it was well washed,—in order that the ladies might keep their skin soft by washing in it.



In every patio hung water-cooling ollas of baked clay.

So continually did the ladies do their fancy work in the ramadas or arbors already mentioned,—generally sheltered with grape vines,—that embroidery acquired the common name of enramada, meaning “in the arbor.” At the same time, the servants were probably doing their baking in the great domed oven at the other end of the garden, in the heat from fired stones.

To return to the Mission San Gabriel: lately most wonderful utilitarian features have been unearthed in the walled garden there, where they have long and mysteriously lain under ground. Stone ovens in which bread was baked for two thousand converts at a time (incredible as it seems) are there; and beautifully built stone tannery benches where the leather was soaked and pounded to softness.

Speaking of San Gabriel Mission: My own start in business as a Landscape Architect was there. Another little barefoot boy and I had somehow made the perilous and forbidden climb to the century-old roof of the Mission San Gabriel Arcangel, a height that seemed as dizzy to us then as the Woolworth Tower was to seem some twenty-five years later.

Growing up there in the dust of a crumbled beam we found a thirsty little tobacco plant and a hungry sapling of a fig. Birds must have dropped seeds there; and the fig must have been a descendant of one of those brought to San Gabriel Arcangel from Sinaloa, Mexico, in 1786, and thence, later, spread to all Missions of Alta California. Until that year there had been no fruits for the padres and their Indians but the native grapes and blackberries and prickly pears. A courier, a Mexican named Cornenio Agina, sent out by the Missionaries on that perilous and tedious journey over pathless mountains and deserts brought back seeds and plants of dates, wine palms, figs, mulberries, plums, apples, pears, grapes (both wine and raisin), olives, pomegranates, oranges, sweet lemons and limes, and pecans whose parents had already journeyed from Spain to Mexico, and whose children were to thrive and give comfort for a century and more in the new land.

Here, now, were the two little orphans on the roof, needing succor; so down we climbed to the priest's walled garden, and down and up again, undetected, with water in a wine bottle and soil in our pockets, till the patients were properly nourished. We must have done

Some of these fruits that the brave Agina brought are still in commercial production in American California today,—notably the the job well, for a year or two later the little sapling bore a fig. Mission (wine) Grape, and the Mission (oil) Olive. Moreover, several of the original trees and vines still live, after a century and a half.

Within my own very early memory, one of the original Date Palms still towered just south of the San Gabriel Mission. It was a magnificent specimen, and must have been eighty feet tall. Then a great windstorm from the desert snapped it off, and it never sprouted again.

A smaller, though also stately one, said to be a child of the original, grew at the same time beside El Molino, the old stone mill of the San Gabriel Mission, but it has disappeared. It was the only one I ever knew to bear real dates in this cool region. They were small, but we small boys used to love to bring them down with stones. Bees must have carried pollen clear from the one at the Mission, for dates will not bear without cross-pollination.

Two of the ancient Date Palms still flourish at Ventura, a block south of the Mission.

Some venerable old Pears, said to be of the original lot, are still bearing fruit at Mission San Jose, in the now private estate across the road.

Direct descendants of the first trees are all over California. The kingly Mission Figs on the Indian Reservation at Palm Springs were cuttings from them, and such became the principal shade of many a hacienda gardens of the old Spanish archo days — they and silvery Olives, and the Peppers, of which latter more anon. Some of the Olives still guard Mission San Diego.

Speaking of Mission gardens: I have read or heard, at least a hundred times, that the delightful little old walled garden of Santa Barbara was made in Padre Serra's time when the buildings were erected; but such was not the case. I saw a photograph of the site made during the Civil War, and nothing was there but a few graves and the Sycamores outside. I do not say that there had not once been a garden there (*quien sabe?*) but, if so, it was gone by the early eighteen-sixties.

There is another fallacy. Repeatedly I have heard that the Padres introduced the Sycamore to California; but the Padres came only a

hundred and sixty-one years ago; and when the old Aliso that had marked the site of Los Angeles was cut down, I, as a small boy counted its rings; it was four hundred years of age.

We do know of other things Padre Junipero's band brought by seed; and others that they probably did. Olive pits and grape seeds they carried, as much for sacramental oil and wine of the future as for food. The two grand old Dates at Old Town are from their seed.

Seeds of two other plants of tremendous value to California from that day to this, they must also have brought. One is the Castor Bean, for (common weed though it is, here, today) it was native not to this Coast but to North Africa, whence it had traveled to Spain hundreds of years ago.

Also they must have brought that wild forage plant *Alfilaria* so generally and so wrongly believed to be native here, and now so priceless all over several Western states; for that is likewise a native of Spain and the Ballaeric Islands only.

A tremendous help to the gardens and the larders of Spanish California, a veritable revolution, in fact, came early from the French. They sent one J.F.G. de la Perouse with a ship that arrived in the new colony of Monterey in 1786, to investigate the new land and to exchange seeds and cuttings with the Spaniards and Indians. Through the long months at sea they grew their seeds and cuttings and trees in boxes in a section of the hold, arranged as a hot house. Of the greatest value were the cuttings they brought of grapes of the finest varieties of that day, also the very Muscat around which such a great California industry is built this very day, and the Corinth Grapes for the little seedless raisins called "Currants."

Perouse, fortunately, kept very accurate records of the material he brought, and the quantities.

They brought little growing trees of Plums, Nectarines, Peaches, of two kinds, Figs, white and black. Whiteheart Cherries, Soft-shelled Walnuts and Almonds, Black Mulberries, Apples, red and white, Pears, English and French, Quinces of Portugal, Olives of the Holy Land, and Chestnuts of Spain.

Also there were plants of Gooseberries, Currants and Maltese Raspberries.

fruits by the bushel; for instance, of Apples and Pears there were

Besides all these they brought for safety, seeds of all the same

actually six bushel of each.

Roots and bulbs they brought, as Onions, red and white, half a gallon of Carlic, three gallons of Radishes, two bushels of mixed Turnips, Potatoes, Yams, Sweet Potatoes, Carrots, Parsnips, Salsify, Beets, red and white.

One is surprised at the list of seeds of vegetables in that cargo, many of them being stock that we, a century and a half later, think of as new. There were (along with some that one does not recognize), Egg Plant, Okra, Chard, Artichokes, Peppers, Romaine Lettuce, Small Salad Lettuce, Cabbage Lettuce (probably what we call Head Lettuce), Cabbage both red and white, Chicory, Skirret, Purslane, Celery, Parsley, Cresses and six bushels each of peas, Kidney and mixed Beans. Also the gourds that gave the Spaniards and later the Mexicans, their loved dippers and cups. There were even great quantities of tobacco seed.

Probably to such a pastoral land as this the prime contribution was the ample supply of grains and fodders: Wheat, Barley, Oats, Rye, Rice and Buckweat, and Vetch both black and white.

When the wheat, thus introduced, so soon became the prime crop at the Missions and on the ranchos, the beautiful custom of "Blessing the Wheat" became an annual rite at harvest time in every section. The last four sheaves were bound with loving care, into a cross, to be carried to the church at the head of the procession of the harvesters, who generally sang as they marched.

The priests emerged from the church door to meet them, chanting the *Te Deum*; and blessed the crop.

The Spaniards of that day were not above bargaining with the saints a bit; and then offered to pledge to the church an extra share of the next year's crop if the saints would prosper it.

Of course a fiesta followed the ceremony, as a fiesta must on any excuse.

To return to La Perouse and his cargo:

Even things of pure ornament were included; bushes of Lilacs, and the "Hundred Leaf Rose," bulbs of the Tuberose that became perfume of every old garden, and seeds of Lupine.

After generously providing the Monterey with all these treasures, the ship sailed for Santa Barbara Mission, then but a year old, supplied it equally well, and finally reached San Buena Ventura Mission,



then four years old, where grew, in time, the choicest gardens of all California.

The story of the bringing of the graceful Pepper Trees that came to mean so much to the comfort and the beauty of old California, (and still do to this day), is well worth knowing. No one knows the year of arrival, but it was shortly after 1798, when the Mission was built at San Luis Rey.

A sea captain whose run was from Old Spain to New Spain, a journey of many months around the Horn, was a bosom friend of the Padre in charge of the beautiful new Mission at San Luis Rey. One day the captain told the priests of the exquisite trees, dripping with rose-colored berries, he had seen in Peru, when landing at Lima en route. The Padre begged his friend to bring him some of the seed on his next return to California.

When the captain did deliver the berries a year later, it meant a whole day's journey from the port of San Diego to the Valley of San Luis; now we do it in little over an hour.

The seeds prospered in the new soil, and in time the young trees bore berries of their own, which travelers afoot took to all the other missions and to the Presidios. Thus the first Peppers at San Luis Rey became the parents of all in California. (I put "parents" in the plural, because one so often hears of the "parent tree" at San Luis; and the Pepper is of that unusual type in which there are separate male and female trees, the latter bearing the fruit. Date Palms are of the same habit, and Papaias, and Hollies.)

It has always puzzled me that the Peppers have not naturalized themselves in California; for in Mexico they have; I have seen thousands of acres of them growing on the hills of the Southern land as though they had belonged there always.

One hears, sometimes, a variation, but an incorrect one, of the story of the coming of the Pepper Trees to San Luis. That is, that a handful of the little corns arrived in a box of spices shipped from South America to the Mission San Luis Rey, and the Fathers, not recognizing them, planted them to learn what they were before tasting them.

Besides the trees mentioned, the old Spanish gardens all knew certain favorite flowers. Queen among them was the pink Rose of Castile, of course. Jars of growing Musk were always present, for the

Spaniard and the Mexican adore perfumes. Tuberoses, too, whether or not they brought a few bulbs before Prouse came.

The *Datura*, which Americans call "Angel's Trumpet," and the Spaniards "Lady of the Night" because of its evening perfume, had always a high place in the affections of the latter.

Many flavoring herbs were cherished, especially Lavender, Rosemary, Thyme and Tarragon, and the Anise and Sage the pilgrims found already growing wild here.

Century Plants, native to nearby Mexico, were often used, for ornament and for impenetrable barriers.

It is believed that Zinnias were used, and why not, since the seeds are so light, and the march of the Padres from Mexico was through miles of wild ones. At any rate, Nasturtiums were so brought.

The early Spaniards also adopted a number of California Wildings into their gardens. From Palm Springs Agina brought them seeds of the California Fan Palm, which is found nowhere else on earth than a thirty mile strip of the Colorado Desert. From Monterey peninsula spread seedlings of the famous Cypressess. Bay Trees were brought from mountains. In all the wilds I know but one handsomer specimen than the one the Fathers planted on the Purcell place, Pasadena.

They brought in the wild Clematis to drape their walls. That is the pretty vine of the Cañons and Arroyos, called Virgin's Bower when in white flower, and Grey Beard when in whiskery seed.

Knowing all we do of these things, I feel that the so-called "restorations" we have made of some Mission gardens are nothing short of pitiful. Aside from the historic "Memory gardens" at San Fernando, the general replanting of the Mission grounds was done, alas, with, more than anything else, plants that were introduced here from Australia within the last forty years!

San Juan Capistrano garden has been rewalled with such a fantastic wall as those padres never dreamed of and planted with New England garden flowers.

The Cathedral Oak at South Pasadena has been encircled with a nice clipped hedge of Privet.

Were our brains and our souls asleep, to allow such sacrileges?

Aside from the things their gardens gave them, the early Spaniards made use of many of the native plants. But that is another story,

(which I have already told in print) and the hour is getting late, so I shall pause to name but a few of them.

They ate the bulbs of the beautiful Mariposa Tulips and the Brodiaeas, and the seeds of the sustaining Chia or Button Sage. Their principal meal and mush were of ground acorns, with the bitterness soaked out. They cleansed themselves with the ground seed of Ceanothus or Mountain Lilac, and with the bulbs of Amole or Soap root, the only soap they had. They removed unwashable stains with the juice of wild gourds. They perfumed their clothing with the blossoms and flavored their sweets and cheese with the seeds of Sweet Clover.

They quenched their thirst with Lemonade Berries or Rhus Integri-*grifolia*, with which one could do without water for two days. They glossed their hair with Greasewood flowers or with the juice of California Poppies, which latter, too, they used to induce sleep. At dances they drugged themselves for endurance, with the juice of Jimson Weed, or Lady of the Night; and used the same to gain courage for fights. This power they learned from the Indians, who used it to carry their girls through the two-day Dance of the Marriagable Maidens. If a girl could not endure that trail, she was adjudged too weak for the duties of housekeeping and childbirth.

They dyed their cloth red with the juice of the roots of the little white Forget-me-nots ("nivetos," they called them, "little snows"), brown with wild Walnuts (*Nogales*), yellow with the roots of Mahonia or Oregon Grape. They tanned their hides with the juice of Red Dock.

The native plant medicines were legion, for there were no drug stores in those days.

Cascara Sagrada, the bark of the *Rhamnus* or Pigeon Berry, was their favorite corrective medicine; the Yerba Santa, and the Canchilagua their cure-alls for throats, lungs, and tummies. The *Grindelia* was their Poison Oak cure. Yerba de Glope or Yerba Mansa was the pet healer of wounds, and a potent rheumatism remedy. Fits, and the effects of the Loco Weed, they doctored with Yerba del Pasmo (meaning Spasm) which we call Wild Parsnips. Mint, which they called Yerba del Poso (meaning well) was a favorite tonic for tummies.

They were a superstitious lot, those old Spaniards. They believed that a tea of Elderberry blossom would counteract spells cast upon them; that if a maiden chewed the leaves of Yarrow it would keep her lover true.

# In Memoriam

WALTER R. BACON

GEORGE F. BOVARD

CHARLES CASSAT DAVIS

ARTHUR M. ELLIS

MRS. EDWIN GREBLE

LAURANCE L. HILL





Arthur M.  
Ellis

1875 - 1932

A BIOGRAPHICAL  
SKETCH



ON September 13th, 1875, at Linn Creek, Missouri, a son was born to Wm. David Ellis and his wife Malinda MacDonald. They named the boy Arthur MacDonald.

In 1852 Asa Ellis, the father of William David, had moved to California taking his family with him. and in California was to become a man of importance, as he had been in Missouri, having held county offices of sheriff and assessor. and in 1849 had been appointed Regent of the University of Missouri. serving as such until his departure for the west.

In California Asa Ellis followed his business of lumberman at Camptonville, Marysville, and in Santa Cruz County, where he acquired several square miles of timber land along the San Lorenzo River. The climate however disagreed with him and in August, 1861, he moved to Los Angeles County, where he established himself as a rancher at Savannah, a place he named, in the El Monte district. In 1863 he was elected a county supervisor. In 1867 he was elected to the state legislature and again in 1877 and 1878.

Asa Ellis was always a rock ribbed Democrat, while his son William Divid became as staunch a Republican, which caused a rift between the two, and William David returned to Missouri and married. The result of the union was the boy Arthur MacDonald, whom we have mentioned.

In 1877, when Arthur was two years old, his parents brought him to California and they made their home with Arthur's grandfather Asa, who idolized the boy, and who in turn became Arthur's hero.

Arthur began his schooling in the El Monte district, living at Savannah until the early 80's, when his grandfather moved to Fresno. Arthur's parents then bought a small ranch at Pomona and were planning to move to that place, when on August 2nd, 1885 his father died suddenly.

After recovering from the shock, Arthur and his mother moved their home to Pomona and lived on the ranch while Arthur attended the public school; graduating from Pomona High School in 1895, there being but two boys and three girls in the class.

From Pomona High School, Arthur entered the University of California at Berkeley, the first boy from Pomona to enter the State University.

In the University he conducted himself in such manner that he is remembered by all who came in contact with him as an outstanding character, and made a record in scholarship that won him membership in Phi Beta Kappa. He majored in American History, which made its impression upon him to such a degree that it influenced his whole life.

He graduated in 1899 and was given the chair of history in Alameda High School, but found teaching not to his liking and so studied law in Seattle and Oakland and was admitted to the bar June 13th, 1903, in San Francisco, coming to Los Angeles shortly thereafter to establish his practice.

In Los Angeles he was associated with the late Federal Judge Trippet, and became outstanding in his profession, being considered the highest authority in the state on the law of street bond and assessment work. It has been said by many attorneys of real standing, that when they had a case opposing Arthur Ellis, they invariably attempted to settle out of court. For while the trial judge might decide in their

favor, Arthur Ellis always won his appeal, and it was his most outstanding characteristic never to feel that he was beaten.

For years he was a member of many committees of both the Los Angeles and the American Bar Association, and served as trustee of the Los Angeles Association.

While Arthur Ellis could not stand the confining atmosphere of the school room, his interest in history never lagged, and he became an authority on California and local history. None knew the history of Los Angeles better than he.

For ten years he had been a director of the Historical Society of Southern California, the oldest historical society west of the Mississippi River, and was its president during the years 1927 and 1928. He was also a member of the California Historical Society of San Francisco, the New Mexico Historical Society, and the Missouri Historical Society.

He was known throughout the state as a lecturer on California History, and had accumulated a wonderful collection of historic photographs and lantern slides of Southern California and the Southwest.

Arthur Ellis was an ardent Mason and had been active in Masonic work for twenty-five years, having been made a Mason in University Lodge F. & A. M. No. 394 at Los Angeles in 1908, and was the Master of that lodge in 1912. He had never missed a meeting of the Grand Lodge of the State since that date, and was a member of its Historical Committee, and had lectured in many lodges throughout the state on California Masonic History. He had been a trustee of his own lodge for more than twenty years.

In 1929 he wrote a book entitled, "Historical Review of Los Angeles Lodge No. 42", which far exceeds its title, being really a history of the old Pueblo of Los Angeles and its prominent men from 1353 to 1873, and is an excellent contribution to local history.

But probably aside from his profession he was best known to the world at large as a bibliophile. He was a true lover of good books and fine printing, going to such length as to establish a private press upon the grounds of his home, importing presses and type from abroad.

He set in type and published from his press in 1926 as a contribution to the Ethnology of Southern California, "The Indians of Los Angeles County," being the collected letters of Hugo Reid, an early

pioneer, published originally in 1852 in *The Los Angeles Star* and never having been brought together since that time in their entirety. Thus making available for the student of history and ethnology first hand information regarding the California Indians, their mode of life, and their treatment by the Mission Padres.

Arthur Ellis was one of the founders of the Zamorano Club of Los Angeles, and its president from its organization until the time of his death. He was a member of the Grolier Club of New York, the Book club of California, the Roxburghe Club of San Francisco, and the First Edition Club of London.

Intensely interested in Western ethnology, he was a trustee and member of the Executive Committee of the Southwest Museum and chairman of its Library Committee in charge of the famous Munk Library of *Arizoniana*.

On August 6th, 1913, he was married in San Luis Obispo to Miss Bessie Bailey, and to them were born two children, Mildred Walton, and Herbert Bailey. Their family life was most happy, and in his family, Arthur Ellis was at his best, giving first thought always to his children and their welfare, taking them each year on some long trip of interesting educational value, thoroughly covering their native state of California, and then the United States, giving a season to each section. Another year they took several months to an Alaska trip seeing to it that they went well above the Arctic Circle, and the last year of his life the entire summer was spent in Europe, he laying particular stress upon the points of historic interest.

It was from this beloved family circle that he departed happily on Sunday evening, April 17th, 1932, for San Francisco—but was to see them no more, for he died suddenly on the train within an hour from that parting.

No man who has lived who through the love and respect borne him by others, so quietly impelled those about him to accomplish his wishes as did he. He was a real leader.

Arthur Ellis was never known to raise his voice in anger or command, and in his death his multitude of friends mourned the passing of a great soul.

At his funeral the feelings of his associates were most beautifully expressed by his close friend, William W. Clary, and that tribute we here append.

Signed. *J. Gregg Layne*



ARTHUR MAC DONALD ELLIS

*By William W. Clary of the Los Angeles Bar*

IT has fallen to me to give outward expression to the feeling of love and gratitude we all share for a dear friend, a feeling which at this time seems to call strongly for utterance. What a wonderful thing it is to see so large a company of people drawn together by a common bond of affection for one man—and come to pay a simple but heartfelt tribute to his memory.

Arthur Ellis touched the life of this community in many ways. His life was in the best sense a life of public service. But his outlook was so broad and his activities so varied that I doubt if there is one among us who is able to estimate his true worth. And, even if I had the ability, I should not attempt here, in the few moments that we have together, to picture him in his full proportions. I prefer rather to speak of him as a friend and to touch upon one or two of the interests in which I had the privilege of being associated with him.

He was known throughout the state as a lawyer, keen, able, and alert, standing at the head of his profession. But more than this, he was known and honored by his associates for his wonderfully high conception of his calling. For years he devoted himself unsparingly to the betterment of the legal profession, giving of himself without stint. Already his labors have born much fruit and his influence will be felt far into the future.

But it was through the great world of books that he touched most intimately the lives of a large number of people. His ideal of the place of books in life and in society was truly remarkable. He saw in the printed page the medium through which the great spiritual and cultural forces of the world might be scattered among mankind, as the wind might scatter ashes and sparks from an unextinguished hearth. He believed that books should carry a great message in a beautiful form. And he put his beliefs into practice in many delightful ways.

He was himself a true craftsman and a creator of beautiful things. He felt strongly the value of good workmanship and he was directly responsible for raising the standards of the arts and crafts in this community—particularly in the arts of printing and bookmaking. And for his work in this field he was known near and far, and even in other lands. It seemed to me a splendid tribute that the Printing House Craftsmen of this city, in recognition of the inspiration he had been to them, had made him a life member of their organization.

He had a great sense of the value of history and the importance of preserving the records of the life and times that have gone by. I do not think we can comprehend the full value of his services in this field. The great significance and importance in Los Angeles and Southern California of his work in preserving historical records will be revealed only with the passing and unfolding of the years.

In all these ways, as in many others, he was a true leader of men—he rallied people around him and inspired them with new interest and new enthusiasm. But he did not lead with a clatter of drums or blare of trumpets—he led people gently with quiet subtlety, and with an unfailing sparkle of good humor. As has been said of a great teacher: “He awakened sleeping spirits—he lighted many candles.” Indeed, he would, himself, have been a great teacher had he chosen that career. Men whose minds were in danger of becoming dulled in the commonplaceness of business life were, by his pervasive influence, lifted out of themselves and carried into new realms in which they encountered the beauties of literature and the wonders of history and all the fine things of the mind and the spirit as distinguished from the material world.

As we think of this life which had accomplished so much—more, indeed, than most men can ever accomplish—we are struck with these great truths: That the value of creative work is priceless; that the bringing of beauty and joy and freshness into the lives of other people is the greatest of all human achievements; and that life is, indeed, worth living and the world is, indeed, a fit place in which to live—if only because of the beauty and sweetness of such characters as his. And we will not let our grief prevail us, nor begrudge the few short years during which he will be lost to us—but rather give thanks and rejoice that in the great providence of God such a man has lived and that it has been given to us to share the friendship and come under the influence of so noble, so gentle, and so generous a spirit.

Not with sadness, but with gratitude, let us say to our beloved friend—Farewell.



## Laurance L Hill

1887-1932

### A BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCH



THE death of Laurance L. Hill on May 13, 1932 brought to an untimely close a loved and useful life, whose last years had been devoted with unusual effectiveness to the cause of promoting interest in California history.

Becoming a member of the Historical Society of Southern California in 1926. Mr. Hill had served as a Director since 1928, and as Secretary-Treasurer since 1929. As Chairman of Publications, he had been largely responsible for the production of the 1928, 1929, and 1930 annual publications of the Society, and had inaugurated a policy of increasing their attractiveness by use of numerous illustrations taken from the large collection of historical photographs he had brought together.

Born in Dension, Texas, November 9, 1887, Laurance Landreth Hill was brought to California when three years of age, and his devotion to his adopted state was reflected in writing and lecturing which probably did more in Southern California to popularize and extend interest in its historical background than has the work of any other individual of his generation. His "La Reina — Los Angeles in Three

Centuries", a history of the city of Los Angeles published by the Security-First National Bank, had been in demand to the extent of more than 150,000 copies and had established him as a recognized historian. During ten years as publicity director of the Security-First National Bank he had written brief histories of a dozen Southern California communities which were published by that institution. All were illustrated with valuable historical photographs which he had collected for the bank. These publications included histories of Hollywood, Pasadena, South Pasadena, Highland Park, Burbank, Glendale, Long Beach, San Fernando Valley, "Los Angeles Before the Railroads", "La Reina", Santa Barbara, and a history of the growth of higher education in Southern California titled "Six Collegiate Decades."

With inclusion of Mr. Hill's name in "Who's Who" in 1930 came national recognition of his unusual work. From boyhood journalism was his lodestar. At Los Angeles High School where he was graduated in June, 1907, he had acted as editor of the annual. In his senior year also he was student body president, and in that office had the keen pleasure of introducing William Jennings Bryan, then at the height of his fame, as speaker at an assembly. As a boy and throughout his life he was a staunch Democrat.

After high school Laurance Hill attended Stanford University, becoming one of the most loyal products of its "golden age", and cherishing the memory of his sojourn there as a period of unclouded happiness. There he was successively editor of the "Quad" and of the "Daily Palo Alto", two honors not usually accorded to one person.

In 1920 he participated in the first "Make Hoover President" movement, inaugurated by the local Stanford Club, as publicity director of the Hoover Campaign Committee of Southern California.

On his graduation from Stanford in 1912, he was made secretary to Dr. David Starr Jordan, then Chancellor of the University. He accompanied Dr. Jordan on a tour of research through the South which the latter was conducting as administrator of the Ginn Peace Foundation, the subject of study being the effects of the Civil War upon the South.

At the close of this tour, Mr. Hill remained in Chicago as assistant publicity director of the Progress National Committee in the "Bull Moose" presidential campaign of 1912. Coming West again, he



became California manager of Allyn & Bacon, Boston publishers of school text books. But writing books rather than selling them was his true vocation. After seven years of success as a bookman, he deliberately terminated this work. Subsequently tried by disappointment, toil, and at times apparent defeat, his steadfastness to this decision never wavered. He became the first City Editor of the *Hollywood Citizen*; then entered the Hollywood Branch of Security Trust & Savings Bank, in 1922. For the opening of the Bank's Hollywood & Cahuenga Building, he wrote "The Valley of the Cahuengas", his history of Hollywood. Its immense popularity resulted in the publication of the long series which followed.

In connection with this work, as the historical collection grew under his direction, Mr. Hill developed a series of historical lectures which he was called on to give before hundreds of audiences.

With the perspective and generosity that he possessed, it was natural that he became identified with many causes. Primarily these efforts were in the interest of California history — of awakening the Californians to the value of their historical heritage. He believed implicitly in its importance as one of the state's greatest and most valuable assests. Whatever cause he undertook to support, he saw everything through to the finish, at whatever cost to himself. His part willingly accepted and with inpeccable conscientiousness fulfilled, was often enough some laborious and self-effacing task. In the Wilsonian campaign of 1916 he was publicity director of the Southern California headquarters. At the time of his death, he was publicity chairman of the local branch of the League of Nations Association.

Few, even of his closer friends, were aware that when the Hollywood Bowl was but a dream, Mr. Hill was one to vision its potentiality and perform staunch work toward bringing it to realization when the fashion was to ridicule the idea.

Mr. Hill's historical work is declared to have been of signal importance in upbuilding the public interest which resulted in observance of Los Angeles' 150th anniversary with the great ten-day celebration of La Fiesta de Los Angeles, September 4, 1931. Called upon to act on the organization committee, then as a Director and Publicity Chairman of La Fiesta Association, he served personally as one of the strongest pillars of human inspiration and ability and dogged, laborious devotion, upon which rested the outstanding success which

was achieved. At the time of his death he was Chairman of La Fiesta Association's Committee to return recommendations for observance of Los Angeles 151st birthday; Chairman of the Committee on Traditions, California Welcome Committee of the Olympic Games; a member of the State Chamber of Commerce publicity committee; and of the Los Angeles Chamber of Commerce's Keep California Californian Committee.

Thus had come to fruition the efforts of a clean and courageous life. Laurance L. Hill entered upon his career a radiant personality, filled with ideals of which he remained a quiet but consistent exponent to the end. He used to write sometimes about "eternal verities". Few were more fit to discourse upon them. Knowing him was to know a sympathetic, smiling and gentle person, remarkable for his serenity, whose Spartan qualities, whose wells of inner strength and withal exceeding sensitiveness, were not apparent to the casual view. Laurance Hill was loved by all and gave to his friends and associates profound loyalty. Loyalty was his ruling passion, and no one of his many associations received his devotion in greater measure than did the Historical Society of Southern California. He championed its objectives because he believed in their intrinsic value to the community. But his talents as their protagonist sprang from a deep-rooted love. In the delirium of his last moments, his final words were of California and the glory of its past.

Signed, *Marion Parks*

# CONSTITUTION AND BY-LAWS OF THE HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA

## CONSTITUTION OF THE HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA (Revised June 3, 1924)

Article I. The name of this Society shall be the Historical Society of Southern California.

Article II. The objects of this Society shall be the collection and preservation of all material which can have any bearing upon the history of the Pacific Coast in general, and of Southern California in particular; also the discussion of historical subjects, the reading of such papers as shall be determined by the Society, and the carrying on of the functions of research and publication.

Article III. There shall be a Board of Directors consisting of seven members.

Article IV. The Board of Directors shall be elected annually by ballot; they shall hold office until their successors are elected, and vacancies shall be filled by appointment by the Board of Directors.

Article V. It shall be the duty of the Board of Directors to supervise and promote the general activities of the Society.

Article VI. This constitution may be amended by a three-fourths vote of the members present at the stated meeting, and after notice of the proposed change shall have been given in writing at a stated meeting of the Society at least four weeks previously.

BY-LAWS OF THE HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF  
SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA

ARTICLE I  
*Membership*

Section 1. The membership of this Society shall be divided into four classes, namely: Life, sustaining, active, honorary.

Sec. 2. Every application to this society for life, sustaining, or active membership, or proposal for honorary membership, shall be in writing, and may be presented at any meeting of the Society. The proposed member shall be recommended by at least three members of the Society, who shall vouch his character and fitness for such membership. Every such proposal shall lie over for at least four weeks before action thereon.

Sec. 3. The admission fee for life membership shall be fifty dollars; for sustaining membership, ten dollars; for active membership, two dollars. Applications for life or sustaining or active membership must be accompanied by the respective fees.

Sec. 4. All applicants for life, sustaining, or active membership shall be voted upon by ballot and a majority of the members present shall elect.

Sec. 5. Life, sustaining, and active members only shall vote and hold office in the Society. A life member is always in good standing and entitled to vote. No sustaining or active member whose dues are in arrears for one year shall be permitted to vote.

Sec. 6. Honorary members shall not be required to pay fees or dues.

Sec. 7. All members shall qualify by subscribing to the Constitution and By-Laws.

Sec. 8. Any member of this Society may be suspended or expelled by the affirmative vote of two-thirds of all the members present at a regular meeting of the Society and voting; but no such vote shall be taken unless notice of a motion to suspend or expel shall have been given and the charges against the party accused shall have been promulgated at a regular meeting of the Society held at least four weeks previous thereto; the accused having been notified by a written notice served personally or left at his last known place of residence.



## ARTICLE II

*Officers*

Section 1. The officers of this Society shall be a President, a First Vice-President, a Second Vice-President, a Treasurer, a Secretary, and a Curator, who shall be elected by the Board of Directors from their own body, and who shall serve for one year from and after the date of their election.

Sec. 2. All officers shall hold their respective offices until their successors are elected and have qualified.

Sec. 3. It shall be the duty of the President to preside at all meetings of the Society or Board of Directors, to appoint all committees, unless otherwise directed by the vote of the Society or the Board of Directors, and to perform the usual duties of a presiding officer. Immediately upon his installation, the President shall deliver his inaugural address, in which he shall outline his policy for the ensuing year, and make such suggestions as he shall deem for the best interests of the Society.

Sec. 4. In the absence of the President, or in case of his inability to act, the Vice-Presidents shall take his place in the order of their election, and shall perform his duties.

Sec. 5. It shall be the duty of the Secretary to keep records of all meetings of the Society and of the Board of Directors, conduct the correspondence, and safely keep all the active archives of the Society; he shall keep an alphabetical list of all members of the Society, with their respective post-office addresses; he shall notify all members in writing of all meetings of the Society; he shall notify in like manner all applicants for membership of their election, and shall perform such other duties as pertain to his office.

Sec. 6. It shall be the duty of the Treasurer to collect and safely keep all money belonging to the Society and to pay out the same only on the order of the Society. He shall collect all membership dues and shall keep a separate account with each active and sustaining member of the Society, and notify in writing all in arrears.

Sec. 7. It shall be the duty of the Curator to have custody of all property belonging to the Society, given into his charge, which he shall properly classify, label and catalogue. All such collections shall be open to the inspection or examination of the members under such

rules as the Board of Directors may prescribe.

Sec. 8. It shall be the duty of all officers of this Society at the close of their respective terms of office to transfer to their respective successors all books, papers, moneys, and other property of the Society in their possession.

Sec. 9. It shall be the duty of the Board of Directors to supervise and manage all the business of the Society, to audit its accounts, to protect its interests, to have charge of all the property of the Society, and to make such general rules and regulations for the government of the Board and its employees as may from time to time be necessary.

#### ARTICLE III

##### *Committees*

Section 1. There shall be four standing committees appointed annually by the President on the first Tuesday in January; each committee shall consist of not less than three members who shall serve until their successors are appointed: said committees shall be known and designated as follows:

First, Publication; second, Program; third, Membership; fourth, Land-marks. New committees may be created by the Board of Directors from time to time, as may be required. All committees shall act under supervision of the Board of Directors.

#### ARTICLE IV

##### *Meetings*

Section 1. The regular meetings of the Society shall be held at the place in the City of Los Angeles, California, to be designated by the Board of Directors, on the first Tuesday evening of each calendar month, unless otherwise provided by vote of the Society.

Sec. 2. Special meetings of the Society may be called by the President or upon the written request of five members petitioning him to call such meeting; the business to be transacted at a special meeting shall be stated in the notice, and no other business shall be transacted at such meeting.

Sec. 3. A quorum for the transaction of business at any regular or special meeting of the Board of Directors shall consist of four members thereof; of the Society ten members entitled to vote at elections as specified in Article 1, Section 5, of these By-Laws.

Sec. 4. The Board of Directors shall hold meetings at the call of

the President, or upon the written request of threc members of the Board.

ARTICLE V

*Finances*

Section 1. The dues shall be three dollars, payable annually.

Sec. 2. No debt shall be incurred by or for the Society or by any officer on account therefor, except by vote of the Society.

ARTICLE VI

*Elections*

Section 1. The annual election of Directors shall be held on the first Tuesday of December in each and every year. One week prior to the annual election of the Board of Directors the Secretary shall notify in writing all members of the Society of the time and place of such election.

Sec. 2. All elections shall be by ballot. A majority vote shall elect. Voting by proxy shall not be allowed.

Sec. 3. Before the next regular meeting of the Society, the Directors shall organize and elect from their number the prescribed officers of the Society.

ARTICLE VII

*Seal*

The Seal of the Society shall be in the possession of the Secretary and by him it shall be impressed upon all official documents issued by him.

ARTICLE VIII

*Amendments*

Amendments to these By-Laws may be made at any regular meeting of the Society by a vote of two-thirds of the members then present and voting; provided, that one month's notice of the intention to make such amendment, together with the proposed amendment, has first been given in writing

## ROSTER — 1932

Adams, Charles Gibbs	R. 1016 Architects Bldg, 5th & Figueroa. City
Adams, T. R.	2563 Hill Drive, City
Amidor, Mrs. Elsie	1521 Council St. City
Baker, Alfred J.	256 S. Union Ave. City
Baker, Frederick	1021 C. C. Chapman Bldg. City
Ball, Thomas	735 Title Ins. Bldg. 433 S. Spring St. City
Bandini, Elliott	336 Strand, Hermosa, California
Beattie, G. W.	R.D. No 1 Highland, California
Beattie, Mrs. G. W.	R.D. No 1 Highland, California
Behrendt, Sam	319 West 9th St. City
Behymer, L. E.	706 Auditorium Bldg. 5th & Olive Sts. City
Belt, Miss Ruth S.	2200 Live Oak Drive, City
Bent, Arthur S.	418 S. Pecan St. City
Bentley, Mrs. Harry L.	344 N. Park Ave. Pomona
Bettinger, M. C.	3506 S. Flower St. City
Bissell, Arthur A.	1601 West Vermont Ave. City
Bissell, Leet W.	912 Rowan Bldg. 458 S. Spring St. City
Brooke, Loyde W.	884 Arroyo Drive, Pasadena
Brown, Miss Charlotte M.	4210 Denker Ave. City
Brown, Harrington	3985 S. Vermont Ave. City
Brubaker, Nicholas J.	2140 West 31st St. City
Bryan Dr. W. A.	Los Angeles Museum of Science & Art, Exposition Park, City
Burch, Mrs. Kenyon	715 S. Oxford Ave. City
Bynum, Lindley	580 North Lake Ave. Pasadena
Carr, Miss Catherine	833 South Flower St. City
Carr, Harry	"The Times", 100 N. Broadway, City
Carrick, Miss Bessie H.	1338 N. Berendo, City
Caldwell, Mrs. M. N.	1645 S. Van Ness Ave. City
Carew, Harold D.	449 Mariposa Ave. Sierra Madre
Chaffey, A. M.	1203 California Bank Bldg. 629 S. Spring St. City.
Cleland, Robert Glass	1720 Fletcher Drive, South Pasadena
Cline, Walter B.	Box 110, Station C., Los Angeles
Cochran, Martha	518 Acequia Madre, Santa Fe, New Mexico
Cochran, George I.	Pacific Mutual Life Bldg. 601 West 6th St. City
Colestock, Harry L.	Box 218 Highland Park Station, Los Angeles
Conner, Palmer E.	Title Insurance Bldg. 433 S. Spring St. City
Cooley, Miss Laura C.	110 N. Ardmore St. City
Cowan, Robert E.	2333 West 22nd St. City
Cowles, Dr. Josiah E.	1101 West Adams St. City
Coy, Owen C.	3551 University Ave. City
Curletti, Miss Rosario	1514 Garden St. Santa Barbara
Dawson, Ernest	527 S. Grand Ave. City
Danson, George W.	1024 Lorena Ave. City
Dorsey, Susan M.	1506 Arapahoe St. City
Dozier, Melville	825 West 11th St. City
Dryer, George W.	133 S. Las Palmas, City



East, E. E. ....	121 West Lexington Drive, Glendale
Egbert, Mrs. M. R. ....	27 Temple St. City
Evans, I. Blair .....	431 S. Berkeley St. Pasadena
Evans, Mrs. George W. ....	3540 Brooklyn Ave. City
Farwell, Mrs. Flora .....	444 S. Lorraine Blvd. City
Farwell, Lyman .....	444 S. Lorraine Blvd. City
Forbes, Mrs. A. S. C. ....	335 West 31st St. City
Foy, Miss Mary E. ....	1489 West Washington Blvd., City
Gaffey, John T. ....	138 West 13th St. San Pedro
Gaines, Mrs. Lucy M. ....	786 Madison Ave. Pasadena
Gilliland, Dr. C. V. ....	1022 West 35th St. City
Goodwin, Mrs. Clarissa G. ....	4511 Pasadena Ave. City
Greenwood, G. G. ....	6385 Hollywood Blvd. Hollywood
Griffin, Clementina de Forest. ....	1660 Prospect Ave. Hermosa Beach, Cal.
Guinn, Miss Mable E. ....	5539 Monte Vista, City
Hammond, George P. ....	3550 University Ave. City
Hanna, Phil Towsend .....	1900 Myra Ave. City
Harbach, E. L. ....	650 South Spring St. City
Hardenberg, Rose .....	1145 Berendo St. City
Hardy, Osgood .....	1763 Campus Road, City
Harness, Mrs. E. ....	1217 S. Magnolia St. City
Harnish, John .....	955 Roosevelt Bldg. 127 W. 7th St. City.
Haskell, Mrs. Eva J. ....	1910 Mendocino Lane, Altadena
Haskins, S. M. ....	634 S. Spring St. City
Hass, Charles E. ....	R. 263 Court House, City
Hastings, Dr. Hill .....	1136 West 6th St. City
Hewitt, Leslie R. ....	458 S. Spring St. City
Hodge, F. W. ....	Southwest Museum, Highland Park, City
Houston, Flora Bell .....	2121 West 11th St. City
Howse, Katherine L. ....	2131 Estrella Ave. City
Hunsaker, Wm. J. ....	1031 Rowan Bldg. 458 S. Spring St. City
Hunt, Rockwell D. ....	5143 Brynhurst Ave. City
Karlozian, Miss Annie .....	384 N. Hobart Blvd. City
Keaveny, Thomas F. ....	1053 Cary St. Wilmington
King, Elmer R. ....	John C. Fremont High School, 7676 S. San Pedro St. City
Knight, Dr. Alfred .....	Beachmont Ave., Cedar Knolls, Bronx- ville, New York
Knoles, Dr. Tully C. ....	College of the Pacific, Stockton
Knox, Mrs. Mertice M. C. Buck .....	Box 17 Kelvin, Pinal Co. Arizona
Laguna, Miss Frederica de .....	700 N. Faring Road. Holmby Hills
Layne, Gregg J. ....	714 Central Bldg. City
Levering, Martin M. ....	309 S. Serrano Ave., City
Lewis, E. L. ....	1060 S. Broadway, City
Lichtenberger, Herman .....	654 Arroyo Drive, South Pasadena
Lindlay, Miss Ida B. ....	Kipling Hotel, 4067 West 3rd St. City
Lockey, Dr. J. B. ....	405 Hilgarde Ave., Westwood, or 9141 Third St., Beverly Hills
Lyman, W. W. ....	6812 Arbol Drive, Hollywood

Mee, Mrs. E. L. ....	224 West Milford, Glendale
Miller, Marshall J. ....	1023 West 35 th St. City
Miner, Dan B. ....	630 Petroleum Sec. Bldg., City
Monnette, Orra E. ....	Bank of America, 7th & Spring Sts. City
Moore, Helen L. ....	5069 Romaine Ave. City
Montgomery, Dr. C. H. ....	806 Pacific Mutual Bldg. City
Mott, John G. ....	1215 Citiz. National Bank Bldg., City
Murray, Mrs. Mary Belle ....	2401 West 6th St. City
McDill, George W. ....	1804 S. Western Ave. City
McFie, Maynard ....	1222 West 29th St. City
McGroarty, John Steven ....	Tujunga, California
McNaughton, James A. ....	Administration Bldg. Union Stock Yards. City
McPherson, Wm. ....	R. D. No. 3, Orange, Cal.
McBride Publishing Co., H. C. Lombard, V.P. ....	261 S. Los Angeles St. City
McQuire, H. J. ....	1330 S. Bonnie Brae, City
Netz, Joseph B. ....	2311 10th St. City
Newmark, Marco R. ....	977 Arapahoe St. City
Nilsson, George W. ....	1113 West 6th St. City
Palmer, Edwin O. ....	1745 Camino Palmero, City
Panta, T. A. ....	4117 Budlong Ave. City
Parish, Dr. John C. ....	1568 Ensley Ave., 405 Hilgarde Ave., Westwood, Cal.
Parcher, Frank M. ....	Southwest Museum, Highland Park, City
Parks, Miss Marion ....	389 N. Los Robles Ave. Pasadena
Peffer, Miss Susanna ....	501 Burlington Ave. City
Perry, Everett R. ....	720 S. Kingsley Drive, City
Phelps, J. W. ....	401 S. Virgil Ave. City
Phillips, Lee Allen ....	4 Berkeley Square, City
Phillips, Mrs. Lee Allen ....	4 Berkeley Square, City
Phillis, Joseph ....	Bridgeport Inn, Mariposa, Cal.
Pierce, C. C. ....	1572 West Pico Blvd. City
Pierce, W. H. ....	720 West Washington Blvd., City
Pleasants, Mrs. J. E. ....	R. D. No. 3, Orange, Cal.
Pollard, W. L. ....	510 West 6th St. City
Prudhomme, Charles J. ....	741 Central Ave. City
Puck, Charles ....	433 East Adams St. City
Rathbun, Morris M. ....	1326 S. Rimpau Blvd. City
Raymond, Mrs. J. D. ....	140 South 10th St. City
Rhodes, Allin L. ....	626 S. Spring St. City
Rhoades, Elizabeth ....	1725 Kingsley Drive, City
Ridgeway, Thomas C. ....	215 West 7th St. City
Rivera, Adolf G. ....	306½ Hall of Justice, City
Robinson, George A. ....	1140 West 45th St. City
Robinson, W. W. ....	2310 S. Palm Grove Ave., City
Rolfe, Frank ....	1840 Leighton Ave. City
Rutter, Thomas Renand ....	116 26th St. City
Sanborn, Miss Clara A. ....	R. D. No. 1, Box 143, Covina, Cal.
Sartori, Joseph ....	724 West 28th St. City
Sartori, Mrs. Joseph ....	724 West 28th St. City

Saxton, Harriette .....	224 West 43rd Place, City
Schoneman, Mrs. Florence D.....	1521 5th Street, City
Seaman, Charles, E. ....	2151 Harvard Blvd. City
Shannon, Michael E. ....	1017 Cit. Nat. Bank Bldg. City
Sheldon, Wm. A. ....	761 Chamber of Commerce Bldg. City
Smith, Sanrah Bixby .....	4800 Los Feliz Blvd. City
Smith, L. J. ....	335 West 31st St. City
Snyder, Dr. Wm. H. ....	L. A. Junior College, 855 N. Vermont Ave. City
Stanton, H. W. ....	543 Bradbury Bldg. 304 S. Broadway, City
Sterrett, Robt. J. ....	4612 Welch Place, City
Stephenson, T. E. ....	Santa Ana, Cal.
Stimson Marshall .....	802 Wright & Callendar Bldg. 405 S. Hill St. City
Spaulding, W. A. ....	134 N. Gate St. City
Taylor, E. C. ....	503 H. W. Hellman Bldg. City
Temple, Thomas W. ....	606 Ramona St. San Gabriel, Cal.
Thacher, M. Eva .....	4817 Eighth St. City
Tower, Miss Grace .....	926 Georgia St. City
Treanor, John .....	247 Muirfield Road, City
Treager, W. I. ....	2641 Halldale Ave., City
Vance, Miss Jessica .....	700 N. Faring Road, Holmby Hills, Cal.
Vandergrift, Rolland A. ....	4607 West 11th St. City
Walsh, Miss Marie T. ....	2064 Watsonia Terrace, Hollywood
Wagner, Mrs. Winona T. ....	534 S. Virgil Ave. City
Wagner, H. R. ....	1136 Winston Ave. San Marino, Cal.
Waite, Carlton F. ....	2960½ Bellvue Ave. City
Waters, Willard O. ....	565 Bonita Ave. San Marino, Cal.
Weid, Otto .....	19 Breeze Ave. Venice, Cal.
Westergard, Dr. W. ....	1000 Manning Ave. City
Weyse, Henry G. ....	504 Goose Bldg. City
Wheat, Carl I. ....	1500 Balfour Ave. City
Wheat, Mrs. Katherine P. ....	514 N. Ave. 66, City
Wheeler, Allen H. ....	317 Hill St. City
Whitney, Miss Margaret W.....	1563 N. Raymond Ave. City
Whitsell, Leon O. ....	c/o Railroad Commission, State Bldg. San Francisco
Widney, Edwin W. ....	506 N. Camden Road, Beverly Hills
Wilber, Mrs. M. E. ....	25 Los Altos Drive, Pasadena
Williams, W. J. ....	127½ S. Berendo St. City
Williamson, Miss Estella .....	2343 Ocean View, City
Williamson, Miss Lillian A. ....	2343 Ocean View, City
Williamson, Mrs. R. B. ....	501 S. Hoover, City
Wills, Miss Madeline F. ....	1075 Rose Ave. San Marino, Cal.
Wood, John Perry .....	458 S. Spring St. City
Worden, Dr. Perry .....	952 Cornell Road, Pasadena
Yale, Charles .....	627 S. Grand Ave. City
Young, Mrs. Bernice E. ....	320½ Witmer St. City
Zahn, Mrs. Frances .....	2115 Estrella St., City
Zeitlin, Jake .....	705½ West 6th St. City

Berendo Junior High School	1145 Berendo St. City
John C. Fremont High School	
Pioneer Club, c/o Elmer	
R. King	7676 San Pedro St. City
Franklin High School	820 N. Ave 54, City
Long Beach Public Library	Long Beach, Cal.
Los Angeles Public Library	5th & Flower Sts. City
Los Angeles County Library	204 N. Broadway, City
Manual Arts High School	42nd & Vermont, City
Narbonne, N. A. High School	Walnut and Pomelo, Lomita, Cal.
H. E. Huntington Library	
and Art Gallery	San Marino, Cal.
Pasadena Public Library	East Walnut St., Pasadena
Pasadena Historical Society	
c/o A. L. Hamilton,	
Sec'y-Treas.	826 N. Raymond Ave. Pasadena
Phineas Banning High School	Wilmington, Cal.
Pomona Public Library	Pomona, Calif.
Pomona College Library	Claremont, Cal.
Riverside Public Library	Riverside, Cal.
Santa Monica Public Library	Santa Monica, Cal.
University of California	
Library	621 South Hope St. City
University of Southern	
California Library	3551 University Ave. City
Whittier Public Library	Whittier, Cal.







as it appeared  
in  
1871  
reprinted  
from the  
original

Rancho San Jose Buena Vista  
Rancho San Vicente y Santa Monica  
Rancho La Ballona  
Rancho Sausal Redondo  
Rancho Los Palos Verdes  
Rancho San Pedro  
Rancho Los Herreros  
Rancho Los Alamitos  
Rancho Los Angeles  
Rancho San Gabriel

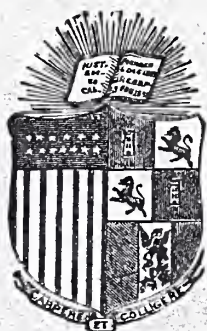
showing original  
Spanish  
Ranchos  
abutting  
on the



Organized November 1, 1883  
PART IV

Incorporated February 13, 1891  
VOL. XV

## ANNUAL PUBLICATION



# HISTORICAL SOCIETY

of

## SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA

# 1933

LOS ANGELES, CALIFORNIA

THE UNIVERSITY OF CHICAGO



THE UNIVERSITY OF CHICAGO

CHICAGO, ILLINOIS

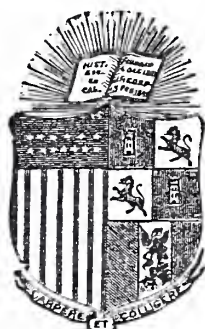
1892



Organized November 1, 1883  
PART IV

Incorporated February 13, 1891  
VOL. XV

## ANNUAL PUBLICATION



# HISTORICAL SOCIETY

OF

## SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA

LOS ANGELES, CALIFORNIA

THE UNIVERSITY OF CHICAGO

LIBRARY OF THE UNIVERSITY OF CHICAGO  
500 EAST HALL  
CHICAGO, ILL. 60607

THE UNIVERSITY OF CHICAGO



THE UNIVERSITY OF CHICAGO

LIBRARY

OFFICERS OF THE HISTORICAL SOCIETY  
OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA

1933

HENRY R. WAGNER . . . . .	<i>President</i>
MRS. A. S. C. FORBES . . . . .	<i>First Vice-President</i>
CHARLES G. ADAMS . . . . .	<i>Second Vice-President</i>
MARION PARKS . . . . .	<i>Secretary</i>
FRANK ROLFE . . . . .	<i>Treasurer</i>
OWEN C. COY . . . . .	<i>Curator</i>

BOARD OF DIRECTORS

Henry R. Wagner	Marion Parks
Mrs. A. S. C. Forbes	Frank Rolfe
Charles G. Adams	Dr. Owen C. Coy
J. Gregg Layne	

COMMITTEES FOR THE YEAR

FINANCE

*Chairman:* Mr. J. Gregg Layne  
Mr. H. R. Wagner  
Mr. Frank Rolfe

PROGRAM

*Chairman:* Miss Lillian M.  
Williamson  
Mr. H. R. Wagner  
Miss Marion Parks

PUBLICATIONS

*Chairman:* Mrs. A. S. C.  
Forbes, (resigned)  
Mr. W. W. Robinson  
Mr. Phil Townsend Hanna  
Mr. Charles G. Adams

LOCAL SOCIETY RELATIONS

*Chairman:* Mr. Charles G.  
Adams  
Miss Jenny Dion Raymond  
Mr. William McPherson  
Mr. George Beattie

LANDMARKS

*Chairman:* Mrs. M. E. Wilbur  
Mrs. A. S. C. Forbes  
Mrs. Florence Dodson  
Schoneman

MEMBERSHIP

*Chairman:* Mr. Frank Rolfe  
Mr. Joseph Netz  
Miss Florabelle Huston





## TABLE OF CONTENTS

THE VALLEY OF DRY BONES . . . . .	1
By Robert Glass Cleland, Ph.D.	
SAN GABRIEL MISSION IN 1857 ( <i>A letter from an Hungarian Visitor</i> ) . . . . .	9
With an Introduction by Harry Harris	
THE NAMES OF THE CHANNEL ISLANDS . . . . .	16
By Henry R. Wagner	
WERE THE COLORADO RIVER MISSIONS IN CALIFORNIA? . . . . .	25
By Seward C. Simons	
THREE EARLY CALIFORNIA LETTERS	
With Introductions and Notes by Thomas Workman	
Temple II	
I. THE STORMY CATALAN, DON PEDRO FAGES, AS SEEN THROUGH THE EYES OF MARIANO CARRILLO . . . . .	28
II. A LETTER FROM FRAY CRESPI TO FRAY PALOU . . . . .	51
III. A LETTER FROM SERGEANT ORTEGA LISTING THE SOLDADOS DE CUERA . . . . .	55
THE REMINISCENCES OF MELVILLE DOZIER . . . . .	65
THE GOLDEN JUBILEE OF THE HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA . . . . .	112
By Marion Parks	
CALENDAR, 1933 . . . . .	118

## ILLUSTRATIONS

	Opposite Page
MAP OF THE WORLD, 1559, SHOWING CHANNEL ISLANDS	1
MAIN STREET LOOKING NORTH FROM FOURTH, 1883 . . . . .	112
MAP OF THE COLORADO RIVER MISSIONS . . . . .	24

THE  
1911

1911

1911

1911

1911

1911

I

II

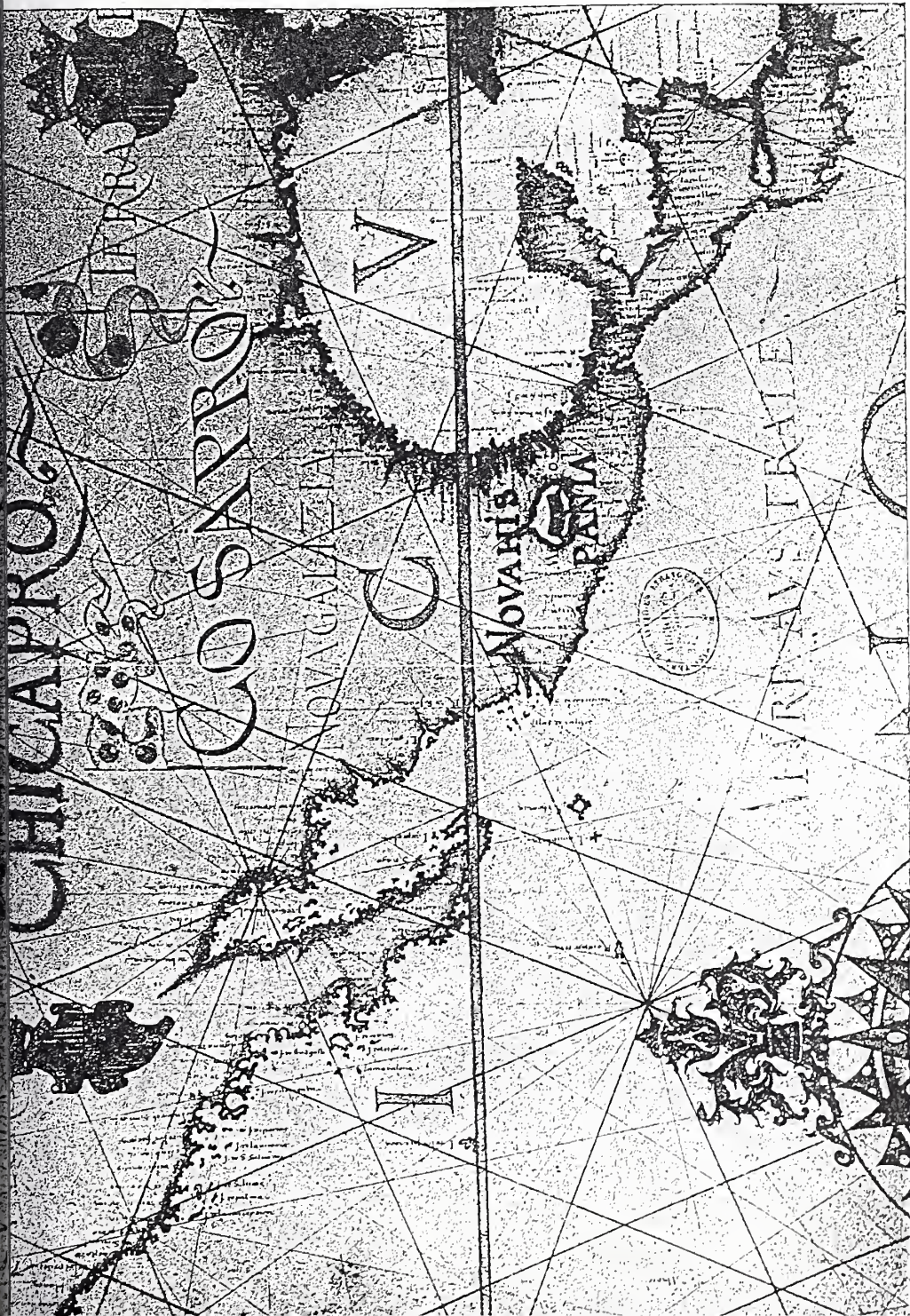
III

IV

V

VI

VII  
VIII  
IX



A Portion of André Homem's Map of the World of 1559, showing the Channel Islands as Cabrillo saw them  
(Courtesy of Henry R. Warner)





## THE VALLEY OF DRY BONES

*By Robert Glass Cleland, Ph.D.*

*An address delivered at the Fiftieth Anniversary Dinner of  
the Historical Society of Southern California,  
November 21, 1933*

FOUR centuries and a half before the birth of Christ a book was introduced to the world with this modest statement: "These are the researches of Heroditus of Helicarnassus, which he publishes in the hope of thereby preserving from decay the remembrance of what men have done . . . ." And even now, after the lapse of two long milleniums and a half, we still acknowledge our debt to Heroditus of Helicarnassus. How much of knowledge we would have lost, how vastly poorer in understanding and intellectual satisfaction the world would have been if this otherwise unknown Greek had not gathered together and written down the records of his time!

Tonight we are met to celebrate the fiftieth anniversary of the founding of a Society organized to do in its day what Heroditus sought to do in his — to preserve from decay the remembrance of what men have done. Others have spoken of the founding of the society, of its activities, its accomplishments, the ever widening horizons of usefulness before it. I am consequently forbidden to trespass in these fields. I have elected, therefore, to speak on the subject "The Valley of Dry Bones. The significance of this title may be discovered later on. Let me say, however, that I do not contemplate an excursion into the realm of paleontology, and that I fervently hope too many of you will not say at the close that the title was extraordinarily appropriate—that the speaker kept his hearers wandering in the valley of dry bones all night.

At the outset, in speaking before an historical society, I suppose one should naturally seek to answer the question, "What is history?" A few years ago this would have been for me an exceedingly difficult task; but recently I found a complete and wholly satisfactory answer. A young man in the

## HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA

mountains of Kentucky supplied it. He was taking the examination for a teacher's certificate in that state, and the going was hard. At last he came to the question, "What is history?" For a time he sat perplexed. Then the spirit of inspiration came upon him for a brief moment, and he wrote, "Well, hit's this a-way. History is full of amazements and wonders; history tells us this and that and all about it in several ways and kinds." It is enough to say that since I came into possession of this definition I have sought no other. One knows when he stands in the presence of perfection.

History, as the Mountain White youth understood, is a subject full of amazements and wonders; but strangely enough, many people do not find it so. They are like the young woman of the post-war period, who was seated next to Professor Sloane of Columbia University at a fashionable dinner. Between the two there was little in common, and conversation became hopelessly and permanently stalled. Finally the young lady in exasperation turned to her companion and said, "Mr. Sloane, what is your business, anyway?" "Why, my dear young lady," replied Mr. Sloane in some surprise, "I am a teacher of history." And then, with a faint ray of hope, "Are you interested in history?" To the girl this was the last straw. Sadly she shook her head. "Oh no, no, Mr. Sloane. I am not interested in history. I am not the least bit interested in history. I just believe in letting bygones be bygones!"

Beneath the flippant humor of this reply there is cause for serious thought. Too many people, thanks perhaps to their introduction to the subject in high school and college, have built up a constitutional prejudice against history. They do not desire further acquaintance with it. They have come to look upon it as dry, dead, repellent — a land sterile and monotonous, where there are no unexplored, cloud-wrapped mountains or far-flung vistas of pleasant, inviting fields.

Inherently, of course, history is as fascinating, as vital, and as varied as human life itself; and one can only marvel at the infinite capacity some of us possess in our teaching and writing to make it such a pallid, corpse-like thing. It would help very greatly, I believe, to counteract this tendency, if we

## THE VALLEY OF DRY BONES

should remember a few very simple things. In the first place, history is not a succession of isolated events. There never yet has been an isolated event in history; there never will be. History is a continuous process—an endless, never-ceasing flow. Causes in history are therefore fully as significant as events. "Why" and "how" are coordinate with "when" and "what". To understand becomes fully as important as to remember. To discover the cause of things is no less essential than to record the things themselves.

Again, history deals with human nature, an intricate, mysterious, curiously illusive substance. In its elemental qualities it remains the same from generation to passing generation. In its superficial aspects it is as fluid and changeable as the wind-whipped surface of the sea. Or, to use a better figure -- one of Kipling's most perfect pictures—Kim and the Llama have come to "a world within a world . . . where the high hills were fashioned of the rubble and refuse from off the knees of the mountains . . . Above them, still enormously above them, earth towered away toward the snow-line. . . . Above that, in scarps and blocks upheaved, the rocks strove to fight their heads above the white smother. Above these again, changeless since the world's beginning, but changing to every mood of sun and cloud, lay out the eternal snow."

These moods of sun and cloud—how profoundly the destiny of a nation is often affected by them! A thrust of a dagger in the dark -- an unexpected change of fashion in men's hats--an Italian's daring conception of the universe -- "little bombards of iron, which with fire and a noise like God's thunder threw little balls of iron to frighten the horses" -- a bit of metal picked from the bottom of a Sierra mill race -- the voice of a prophet crying in the wilderness -- how often have such slight influences changed the course of history, even as cloud and sunshine change the surface of the snow.

We are agreed that the search of the historian is the search for truth. But truth needs the quickening power of the imagination to give it vitality and life. I am not speaking now, of course, of imagination in college examinations, although

## HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA

even here something might be said in favor of the idea. Certainly in this field imagination lends variety and leads to unexpected heights. After the lapse of more than twenty years I still think with gratitude of a Princeton senior's definition of the word "saga", in which the voyage of the Norsemen to the coast of New England is recounted. He gave to the word a new significance. He defined it as "the practitioners of witchcraft in Boston, Massachusetts." I think with even greater gratitude of a certain girl in Occidental College who, asked

to explain the contributions of Augustus to Latin literature, embraced unbelievable reaches of time and space in the wide sweep of her imaginative powers. "Augustus contributed much to Latin literature," she wrote. "He gathered around him the intellectual lights of the ages, among whom were Homer and Voltaire."

Despite such misapplication of a great gift, however, I could still wish that there were more use of the imagination both in our reading and in our writing of history. Fortunately we are not so restricted in this respect as we once were. Some time ago a friend of mine, in her eightieth year, showed me a textbook in American history which she had used as a girl. On the margins of the leaves she had written figures and figures and more figures. "What are these?" I asked curiously.

"Oh," she replied with the flicker of a smile, "you ought to know the significance of those figures. Aren't you a professor of history and a learned Ph.D. in that field?"

"Leaving out the learned, I plead guilty to the rest of the charge," I acknowledged, "but this book is a history, not a text in mathematics. What do all the figures mean?"

"My dear boy," she said, "they represent the list of the killed and wounded and captured in the battles of the various wars fought by the United States and the Colonies prior to 1850."

"Well," I said, still mystified, "what did you write them in the book for; what did you do with them?"

"Why," she said in surprise, "we memorized them. Don't



## THE VALLEY OF DRY BONES

your students in history memorize such figures now?"

"No, my dear lady," I replied, when I had to some degree recovered, "my students do not memorize such figures now. And, thank God, neither does their instructor!"

By this, of course, I would not minimize in the least the importance of facts in historical study, any more than I would minimize the importance of the skeletal structure of the human body. I am merely suggesting that the skeleton alone is not sufficient. A human being is something more than a given number of bones, even though these are articulated with marvelous skill. And by the same token history is something more than figures and dates and the dry bones of facts.

A perfect figure to illustrate what I mean is given in an old Book. A man finds himself in the midst of a valley filled with the bones of dead men. And, behold," says the narrative, "there were very many bones in the open valley; and lo, they were very dry. And he said unto me, Son of Man, can these bones live? And I answered, O Lord God, thou knowest." Thereafter as the narrative proceeds, the breath of life is breathed into these dry bones. There is a shaking, and the bones come together, bone to his bone. Sinews and flesh come upon them, and the skin covers them above. "Then he said unto me, Prophecy unto the wind, prophecy, Son of Man, and say to the wind. Thus sayeth the Lord God; Come from the four winds, O breath, and breathe upon these slain, that they may live. So I prophesied as he commanded me, and the breath came into them, and they lived, and stood up upon their feet, an exceeding great army."

As I have said, the figure, to me, is very apt. Facts, events, dates — dry bones all, until the spirit of imagination and understanding is breathed into them and they become living realities.

When we consider California history of whatever period or relating to whatever place, how highly responsive we find it to this quickening power of imagination.

Wingfield-Stratton in his "Introduction to the History of British Civilization," writes: "A knowledge of history is able to make the whole landscape alive; to render the exploration

## HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA

of the humblest village an adventure of thrilling possibilities; to give a voice to the downs, and to enrich the waste with memories." How often in our own experience, as we have driven along the highways of California, or journeyed with pack train through its mountains, have we had occasion to testify to the truth of this statement. A knowledge of history can make the whole landscape alive."

We are traveling now by automobile on the road to the Owens Valley. Passing through Red Rock Canyon, we have reached a spot some twenty miles beyond. The road is hard, wide, and little traveled. We can easily make fifty or sixty miles an hour if we so desire. But instead we slow down, pull over to one side, and stop. There is little to see here; nothing in the view to give us inspiration or arouse even momentary interest. On the right only endless miles of desert; on the left a curving road with a sign marked "Walker Pass," and a wall of forbidding hills. But let us tarry for a moment and see if our knowledge of history can make even this desolate landscape live.

Presently on the left a distant cloud of dust appears - a shoulder of the hills shuts it momentarily from sight - it draws nearer - and time rolls back a hundred years. We are watching now a caravan composed of men on horseback, pack animals, and slowly moving cattle. The members of the company are strangely clad, and curiously unlike the men we know in daily life. They wear buckskin instead of cloth, and mocassins instead of shoes. Their faces are heavily bearded and tanned by sun, wind, and frost to the color of old mahogany. Their eyes are never still, for every bush, hollow, and rock may be the lurking place of enemies. Across the pommel of his saddle each man carries a long, muzzle-loading rifle; and in the belt around his waist a scalping knife and tomahawk. Over his left shoulder and under his right arm hang powder horn and bullet pouch.

An amazing tale these men could tell of the crossing of deserts, and Indian ambuscades - of the grim passage of the frowning Sierra when the winter snows threatened daily to

## THE VALLEY OF DRY BONES

blot them out - of a hidden valley in these mountains with precipitous sides down which great rivers plunged to lose themselves in spray a mile below — a valley we now call Yosemite, which no eye of white men but theirs had ever looked upon. They could tell of piercing cold, of weariness which brought men to the verge of death; of vain efforts to ease the belly-pinch of hunger with the lean, black flesh of worn-out horses; of lazy, idle days and boisterous nights at Monterey.

So, as we wait by the side of this desert road, the uncouth company of Joseph Walker, trapper, guide, explorer of an empire, comes within our vision, rounds the point of the mountain, and passes out of sight.

The illusion on our left is over; but as we turn our eyes to the right, without leaving the place where we sit, we see strange figures moving across the desert sands. Here is no compact company of hardy, well-mounted trappers, but a straggling handful of gaunt, half-famished spectres. In the pathetic procession are women as well as men, and even little children. In the rear, unnoticed by his companions, a man staggers and halts, and falls face downward on the sand. Swung in cowhide bags on either side of a lean, gaunt ox, two small boys are begging pathetically for water. A woman, patient, uncomplaining, supremely heroic, walks beside them. She has no water with which to satisfy their thirst; but somehow out of the inexhaustable resources of her mother's heart, she finds comfort and courage to quiet the suffering of her tired sons.

So the Manly party and the Briers pass within sight of the spot where we sit, and struggle on toward the succour and hospitality of the owner of the Del Valle Rancho - a son of whose household we honor tonight as one of the founders of this society.

Yes, a knowledge of history can make the whole landscape of California alive; but if properly understood, it will do something even more than this. It will enable us to fit events, which some people count significant only because of their local

## HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA

setting, into the great and varied tapestry of universal history. A Russian fort a few miles north of San Francisco Bay - a vessel bearing the name of Golden Hind - the march of a man called Portolá - a bloodless battle between an American smuggler and the Spanish fort on San Diego Bay - how the figures of these things must be woven into the larger pattern of national or international history, to find their rightful setting.

Or let us consider the Missions of California. How shall we view them? As interesting examples of architectural adaptation? As monuments to the members of an adventurous, heroic Order? As outposts of Christianity and civilization upon a barbarous frontier? They are all these, surely, and something more. Break off a piece from one of their century-old adobe walls. Crumble it to dust between your thoughtless fingers. Then place this dust in the open palm of your hand and hold it out so that the wind from the sea will blow it away forever. Only the dust of a crumbling adobe brick from a crumbling Mission wall, you say with an idle shrug. Yes, but a trifle more. The dust you held so carelessly in your open hand was the dust of an empire, if you had only understood — the glory of an ancient, heroic, race. And the wind which blew it so utterly away? Ah, that was the wind which men call time.

So we come back to our friend from the British Isles. "A knowledge of history can make the whole landscape alive. . . It can give a voice to the downs, and enrich the waste with memories." And the quickening spirit of imagination can make even dry bones things of significance and of life.



## SAN GABRIEL MISSION IN 1857

*A Letter from an Hungarian Visitor*

*With an introduction by Harry Harris*

LOUIS JOHN XANTUS de VASEY, commonly known as John Xantus, was born in Csokonya, Hungary, October 25, 1825, and died in Budapest December 13, 1895. Coming as a young man to America with other political refugees during the administration of President Fillmore, he was given a grant of land in Iowa which he did not accept. Being a good musician and a fair draughtsman he was able for a time to make a living by teaching. His education at the Polytechnical School in Vienna had grounded him in the natural sciences, and his interest in botany and zoology led eventually to his employment as a field collector with certain private scientific explorations. Ultimately he found it necessary to enlist in the United States Army where he was assigned to duty as hospital steward. It was in this capacity that he proved of invaluable aid to the Smithsonian Institute as a collector of specimens in all branches of natural history, and that he was given opportunity for later advancement.

Early in 1857 he was stationed at Fort Riley, Kansas, but was recalled for service in California, reaching San Francisco by way of the isthmus on April 30 of that year. During a short leave, he made at once a hurried excursion into the north country, some of the details of this trip being recounted in the letter of which we give here a translation. On the assembly of the military detail of which he was a member the party left Los Angeles for Fort Tejon where Xantus remained for nearly two years. He was detached from this service and stationed at Cape San Lucas on tidal observation work until the summer of 1861. His later transfer to responsible duties in the Surgeon General's office in Washington, together with his subsequent brief tenure of office as United States Consul at Manzanillo, Mexico, terminated his American experiences, after which he returned permanently to his native Hungary.

The collection from which the present letter has been taken was printed in Budapest in 1859 under the title — XANTUS JANUS | Levelei | EJSZAKAMERIKABOL. | — | Tizenket

## HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA

eredeti rajzok után kesult koes egynehany fametszettel. | Kozli | Prepost Istvan | — | Pesten (1959), | Laufer es Stolp Kiado Konyvkereskedese Tulajdona. | — | Letters of Xantus from North America. With twelve lithographs made after original drawings and with a few wood cuts. Edited by Stephen Prepost. Budapest (1859). Property of Laufer and Stolp, Publishers and Booksellers.

The publication of these letters in this form was not in accordance with the wishes of their author, as he states in the preface to his "UTAZAS KALIFORNIA DELI RESZEIBEN" (Travel in the Southern Parts of California), published in Budapest in 1860 — "The greater parts of the letters were not meant for the general public. I did accede to the publication under certain conditions, but these conditions were not properly complied with." However, we may not share Xantus' regret, as there is much of interest to be found in the collection. Besides the one we print he wrote three others from California, dated respectively May 1 and May 5 from San Francisco, and July 5 from Los Angeles. With the exception of the first few paragraphs of the one dated July 5, these are not concerned with Southern California.

Included in the plates referred to in the title is a lithograph of Los Angeles and one of San Gabriel Mission, at least one of these is evidently taken from a similar view published in a United States government report.

The letter has been kindly translated by Mr. Belo Novak of Montebello.

SAN GABRIEL MISSION IN 1857

July 1, 1857

Los Angeles, Southern California

Dear Mother:

I hope you received my last letter written May 1, just two months ago from San Francisco and learned from it that I have arrived safely in California. I wanted to write you many times since, but God knows it was impossible. On May 5, I obtained six weeks vacation from the department for the journey. I immediately started and went to Oregon, where I took a boat on the admirably beautiful and wild, but majestic Columbia River, all the way to the Falls. From there on mule back in company with beaver hunters I went to Humboldt Bay through the Hood Mountains. Here I met another hunting expedition with which I went straight to the Sacramento River on horseback. From there they went to the Rocky Mountains, and as my way diverged from theirs, we parted here and the same day I arrived at the town of Marysville, which is the farthest northeastern mining town of California.

From here I journeyed to Sacramento City, the Capital of the state, and thence to Stockton and finally to the eastern gold mines, where I looked over the whole establishment. I inspected the washing very rigidly and after I made drawings and maps, and filled my notebook with scribbles, I traveled via Redbluff from Stockton back to San Francisco where I arrived at night on the 21st of last month.

You have no idea, Mother, how tired I was after this journey. I might say that for two days I have done nothing else but smoke and eat ice cream on the balcony of my hotel, (because it is surely hot down here); lots of times I took pen and paper to write to you but it was entirely impossible. My knees were shaking, my hands in cramps and my ears were filled with the cry of the bear, the roaring of the ocelot and the shooting of the guns. Well, two days of "dolce farniente" restored my own self again; at present I feel just as if I had walked from Gyor to Szabodhegy.

On the 24th of last month I again took the steamer on

## HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA

orders from my department, and sailed down along the Pacific Coast. The same day we anchored at San Luis Obispo, but stayed only a short time. On the 25th we turned back at Santa Barbara, and on the 26th arrived at Monterey, formerly the capital of California. Here we stayed the whole day.

On the 27th we arrived in San Pedro, and I went ashore (the boat went on to San Diego) after lots of trouble and bother, due to the bad harbor. On top of this because of adverse winds the boat was prevented from going close to shore, so a small fishing boat came out for us, on which we started for land. Half way over it ran on a sand bank, and there was no alternative but for all of us to jump into the water up to the thigh. With our feet sunk in the sand ankle deep we pulled the vessel for half a mile, when, finally reaching deep water, we managed to get to land. By this time it was late at night, and after a bath, the neglect of a little toilette being impossible, I had to stay at San Pedro. This city is much like that inn where once on our way to Tolna, due to the flood, we were forced to stay for the night. Do you remember it, Mother? But here, instead of roast duck, I had fried rats for supper and instead of a feather bed, I was given a dirty grass blanket to sleep under (more properly said, on it) and for these comforts I had to pay \$3 in the morning.

On the morning of the 28th I hired three mules and in the afternoon started east, and the same night I reached Los Angeles which was a rendezvous for the whole group. However, when I arrived there July 1, the whole company was scattered over the country on a hunting trip and even after a long tiring search I was unable to find them.

Finally yesterday noon riding horseback to San Gabriel Mission, I found most of our expeditionary force there drinking wine and playing cards with the good-natured monks in the cloister's refectory. After mutual handshakes, I left my friends to themselves, as I neither drank nor played, and in the company of a young monk, I looked over the cloister, the garden and the mission buildings. The cloister and the par-



## SAN GABRIEL MISSION IN 1857

ish house are built of massive carved stones and are very elegant. In the outhouses about 140 Indian families live, all of whom speak, read, and write Spanish. Besides this they are engaged in such trades as blacksmith, carpenter, saddler, carver, shoemaker, etc. in neatly equipped shops, supplying their own needs and those of the mission. The married couples have separate little houses built of dried clay with shingle roofs and consisting of a living room, a bedroom and a kitchen. The single ones all live in a big house, two in a bedroom, having a common dining room. The girls are occupied with sewing, weaving, and washing, and live in an entirely separate house, under the supervision of four nuns, (who, between you and me, are very attractive matrons, very kind, and who do not rush as in Veras, but take their visitors all over arm in arm).

The garden, which contains about 500 acres, is fenced all around by adobe walls six feet high and two thick, alongside of which a ditch six feet deep and six feet wide runs all around and outside of this, such a dreadful and thick cactus fence, so full of thorns that even a porcupine would stick himself if he attempted to break through it. The garden itself will arouse wonder and admiration in those to whom the useful, the beautiful and the comfortable are of interest. It is square, cut through by two main roads. In the center is an enormous pool (200 feet in diameter) built of carved stones. The water is let in and out of this from a nearby stream by way of stone-lined and well-kept ditches, which run in every direction through the garden. This pool, besides being used for breeding and raising thousands of rare fish, is also used for irrigating the garden.

The roads are planted with giant orange trees, which all the year round are filled with so much fine fruit that their limbs bend down under them, and form such beautiful rows that the sun can hardly send its rays through them to the road. One quarter is left strictly to cultivation of the grape which produces such heavy harvests, that yearly the mission sells 500 barrels of wine, not figuring the amount con-

## HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA

sumed there. Another quarter contains vegetables, corn, rye, and potatoes, the third sugar cane, and the fourth banana plants, almond, pomegranate and fig trees. Along the inside of the fence stand lemon trees which are trimmed to the same height as the adobe wall. This garden is under the supervision of a separate department and the men work in it in shifts, but only from 4 to 8 a. m. and 4 to 8 p. m.

Besides all this the mission owns 2000 horses and mules and 5000 head of cattle, pastured on ten square miles of the mission property, under the care of cowboys and horsemen. The pasture being good both summer and winter, the sheep and shepherds are always in the mountains, except the working heads. All of this enormous wealth is owned by the mission. The Indians (or as the monks call them "converted lambs") share in the work and benefit alike. Out of the surplus which is sold yearly, part is spent on repairs, part on clothing, groceries, etc., and whatever is left is paid into the missionary's treasury, which is controlled by the Bishop of Monterey.

Returning with my guide, Brother Bernardo, to the refectory, we found my friends still playing cards, but I squeezed into a corner (as the tables were already set). Shortly the bells pealed forth and we all sat down to the tables, our gratitude toward our hospitable hosts being expressed by our display of a famished appetite for the royal dinner set before us. The wine was very good, but strong, so strong that some of my friends could not stand up at all, so we had to spend the night at the mission and only this morning have we arrived at the Pueblo City.

Los Angeles contains about 500 inhabitants. It has a pleasant view, being situated on a beautiful plateau on both sides of the Los Angeles River. Except on the west side, (which is flat, full of salt lagoons all the way to the Pacific Ocean) it is surrounded by high mountains with the snow-capped Sierra Nevada gleaming in the background. The town also cultivates lots of grapes and tropical fruits, and has extensive leather exports and imports. The District Court of Southern

## SAN GABRIEL MISSION IN 1857

California is located here.

Our whole group being assembled (185 persons) it was divided into four groups; fifty leave tomorrow to survey the Mesilla Valley and Gadden Section (these were bought from the Republic of Mexico for 200 millions by the States two years ago); fifty also leave tomorrow for San Diego from where they will locate the border between Lower and Southern California. The third group composed of seventy-one persons will stay here, and divided into smaller groups will begin to divide the vicinity from the ocean inward into townships and sections to comply with the American regulations. Next week, on the 14th, we shall start for Fort Tejon, the headquarters of our group where a map production bureau will be established. This section will be divided again into three sections. I am head of one of them (sketch department) with five draftsmen at my disposal.

Fort Tejon is 165 miles from here. The road is very treacherous because as the snow caps have to be crossed it is impossible to use wagons. Our baggage and effects will have to be divided into small packs so we can transfer them to mules and donkeys. The government has arranged for us to get mail delivered regularly every fifteen days, so the correspondence will not be interrupted. The postmaster here just told me that he sent more than fifty letters to Tejon for me and among them numerous ones from Europe. So I am now hoping to find your later letters there, dear Mother, for which moment (needless to say) I am waiting with great anxiety.

I do not know whether I shall have time to describe to you my excursion from San Francisco, which was really very rich in adventures. I would have loved to tell you more fully even now, but truly, I do not know where to begin, my head is so full of the recent occurrences and confessing truthfully, that if I once began, I would not be able to finish as I would have to write numerous pages, for which at present I have not the time. I believe, however, that I shall have more time soon and then I will let you know about my adventures and experiences.

## THE NAMES OF THE CHANNEL ISLANDS

*By Henry R. Wagner*

THE Channel Islands, by which I mean those now known as San Miguel, Santa Rosa, Santa Cruz, and Anacapa, are an almost unknown land. A few books were written about them many years ago, and occasionally a yachtsman visits one or the other of them and comes back to tell something about their beauty. To most of us, however, they simply appear to be a vague outline on the horizon as we travel between Ventura and Gaviota Pass on the coast highway. Except in winter they are seldom visible, looking at most more like the clouds than islands. Only after a heavy storm that washes the mist out of the atmosphere can they plainly be seen. They did not always bear their present names. Few places in California in fact have had so many different names and for long periods none will be found for some of them on the maps of the day.

The first Europeans to see them were Juan Rodriguez Cabrillo and his men. On Friday, October 13, 1542, he departed from the Pueblo de las Canoas near Pt. Mugu and during the day passed along what he stated were two large islands for a distance of six or seven leagues. At this time of the year the islands are not very visible from the coast. The ships, however, were at sea and no doubt considerably closer, whether close enough to see the eastern and lower Anacapa Islands is a question. The high one was undoubtedly seen. At any point along the stretch of coast between Pt. Mugu and Ventura the passage between the higher Anacapa and Santa Cruz is not visible. The higher one simply appears to be the eastern end of a long island. However, unless Cabrillo sailed at night, which is doubtful, or the islands were covered with mist, which is more likely, he may have seen the opening the next day. He makes no remark about these, however, but on the 15th, while sailing some thirty miles along the coast the account of his voyage tells us that they passed along a large island which was named "San Lucas." From the length ascribed to it, fifteen leagues, it would seem that he meant Santa Rosa and Santa



## THE NAMES OF THE CHANNEL ISLANDS

Cruz together. On the 17th they were still passing along the Santa Barbara coast and on the following day reached Pt. Conception. No mention is made of the islands during this interval, and it is I think plain that they were not visible. When they passed Pt. Conception they were assailed by the north-west wind and stood off to sea. Two islands were discovered, one about eight leagues in length and the other about four. In the latter there was a good port. This was Cuyler Harbor in San Miguel Island and consequently the other island must have been Santa Rosa. These it is stated were also named "San Lucas". The use of the name "San Lucas" for different islands is confusing and the description of them is not sufficiently clear to enable us to differentiate between them. The small island to the west with the good port was named "Possession" according to the account, the natural inference being that Cabrillo took formal possession of it. On the return to this island from the voyage on the 23rd of November the vessels took refuge in Cuyler Harbor. The island was inhabited and there were two towns on it. The Indians called it Ciquimuymu but after the death of Cabrillo it is stated that the island was renamed "Juan Rodriguez" after him. The Indian name for what was obviously Santa Rosa was Nicalque and for Santa Cruz, Limu. Both of these islands were also inhabited. During the first part of February the two vessels were sailing around these islands and between them and the mainland, and we now get from the account more reliable information about them. Limu or Limun was named "San Sebastian" January 20 after that saint whose day it was. It is now stated that the Isla de San Lucas was the middle island. By this time the voyagers had seen all the islands and perhaps sailed between them and the final result was, as far as naming them was concerned, that Possession or Juan Rodriguez was the name of the western one, San Lucas of the middle one, and San Sebastian of the eastern one. The Anacapas evidently had no name, or at least none is mentioned in the narrative.

It is now advisable to inspect the maps which show the results of the Cabrillo expedition. Most of these have no names

## HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA

for any of the islands for the simple reason that Francisco Lopez de Gomara who mentioned the various places on the coast discovered by the expedition failed to give those of any of the islands or even, in fact, mention them. The map makers had nothing else to go by other than this account, and consequently we have no map which displays the names finally settled on during the expedition. We have, however, one map from some entirely independent source which not only shows the islands but gives names to them, that is, the manuscript map of Andre Homen of 1559. The islands are improperly located but if we take those closest to the coast we find two long islands with a very small one in between. The two large islands are named "Concepcion" and "San Lucas" and the middle one has no name unless we consider that the one shown a little to the south of it is intended to represent the middle island. This is named "Palma." Examining these names we see that San Lucas is employed in the first conception, that is, for the eastern island and the other two have names not mentioned in the narratives. The day of the conception of the Virgin Mary is celebrated by the Catholic church December 8, and the vessels of the expedition were anchored at San Miguel Island that day. It is not impossible therefore that Cabrillo or the chaplain may have given that name to the island that day. The Isla de Palma is more nearly in the position of San Nicolas but it may be the name I can not imagine unless the island had some resemblance to Palma in the Canaries. After the Herrera account of the expedition it seems probable that the middle island, Santa Rosa, was after all intended for the middle island, Santa Rosa. Why the expedition was published in 1615 several map makers made use of his account to a limited extent, but none of them, so far as I have ever seen, took his names for the islands.

In 1565 the *San Pedro* on her return voyage from the Philippines sighted an island in this neighborhood with a large rock to the northwest of it. As both San Miguel and San Nicolas have rocks in such a position it is impossible to say which one was seen. Andrés de Urdanet in his own account of the expedition calls the island "San Salvador," Cabrillo's name for Santa Catalina Island, but he was obviously mistaken. In 1595

## THE NAMES OF THE CHANNEL ISLANDS

Sebastian Rodriguez Cermeno sailed around these islands but without mentioning any name for any of them, so it seems likely that he did not have a map showing a name for them.

The next navigator to see the islands was Sebastian Vizcaino. On December 1 he sailed from Santa Catalina and passed through the Santa Barbara Channel. While at anchor at the isthmus of Santa Catalina he had sent out his small vessel, the *Tres Reyes*, which apparently reached the island now known as Santa Cruz. The commander found some Indians on it, eight of whom came out to the ship having beards. This is obviously the origin of the name "Isla de Gente Barbudo" which we find on the Palacios map for the island. The three small Anacapas were shown to the east of it. The middle island is named "San Ambrosio" on this map and the westernmost "San Anicleto". The origin of the San Ambrosio is plain. The day of this saint is December 7, and on that day the expedition was somewhere near the island. The day of San Anicleto, however, is July 13, and why his name should be given to it is a mystery. According to the *Derrotero* made by Palacios instead of San Anicleto the island was named "San Gregorio," while what is now known as Richardson Rock was named San Agustin. The giving of different names to the same place was not uncommon on this expedition, the religious members of the party using one set of names and the naval officers another. In this case, however, we are at a loss because Palacios has one name for the island on his map and another in his *Derrotero*. Francisco Bolanos, the pilot of the expedition, also prepared a *Derrotero* in which, however, he failed to mention any name for the Island. Due to this fact the *Derrotero* which seems to have been in use for a century and a half or more was the cause of names for the islands being omitted from the Spanish maps. On the maps of Robert Dudley and John Daniell we find San Ambrosio and Barbudos, with no names for the westernmost island, although on Daniell's map there is an island named San Agustin located farther north.

Among the various Spanish maps of the next century and a half which I have inspected, the islands appear without

## HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA

names. In 1743 (?) Commodore John Anson captured the *Covadonga* off the Philippine Islands and found on her a chart of the north Pacific. In the account of his expedition published in 1748 this map was reproduced but with some changes in all probability. One of these changes seems to have been the application of the name San Bernardo to the island now known as San Miguel. It can hardly be possible that a Spanish map employed this name and we are therefore forced to believe that it must be an error but for what is the question. This map was copied by later Spanish map makers and the name San Bernardo became pretty well fixed for the westernmost island. The others had no names. This state of affairs lasted until 1769. In that year some time in late February or early March the *San Antonio* under the command of Juan Perez on her voyage to San Diego anchored in the channel under the mistaken impression that San Diego was in 34° of latitude. A landing was made on one of the islands and the friar on board who had gone ashore left a staff on the island with a cross on it. The Indians brought it back and the friars named the island "Santa Cruz" in commemoration of the incident. The first map on which the name appears is that of Jorge Storace of 1769. Storace was the mate of the *San Carlos* and was therefore not present when the island was named. On his map he shows it as a large island and the one farthest west. From this I judge that he mistook the story related to him by those on board the *San Antonio*.

That the island was in reality the one now known as Santa Rosa, is plain from the narrative of Miguel Costanso. When the land expedition to Monterey reached the western part of the channel August 24, 1769, what he calls the last three islands were discovered, San Bernardo to the west, Santa Cruz in the middle, and Santa Barbara to the east. The San Bernardo he obtained from a copy of Anson's map in the *Noticia de la California* which they had with them, the Santa Cruz from the incident just related, and the Santa Barbara though a mistaken notion that the easternmost island was the Santa Barbara of Viscaino. On the return expedition in Jan-



## THE NAMES OF THE CHANNEL ISLANDS

uary of the following year from a point just east of Pt. Conception Costanso took the bearings of the islands which, by reason of the clearness of the atmosphere usual at that season of the year, must have been all very plainly visible. He again located the islands in the same order as before and added a new one, Falsa Vela, no doubt the high Anacapa Island. On January 11 the expedition reached what is now the town of San Buenaventura. From here he states that the westernmost islands could not be seen; only that of Santa Barbara was visible. From the directions given it is plain that this was Santa Cruz. He now adds what he calls the "Tres Mesitas", that is, the flat Anacapa Islands. These islands, which are not often seen from a distance and which in reality are only two in number, although they appear to be three when seen from Ventura, had been named "Santo Tomás" by Perez in 1769, perhaps on that saint's day, March 7, and his name was occasionally used for them later, that of Las Mesitas never appearing on any map to my knowledge, although it is a very appropriate name for them. Before the next map was made by Costanso he changed his mind and renamed the islands in the order San Bernardo, San Miguel, Santa Cruz, and thus they appeared on his map of 1770 and on all later Spanish maps into the nineteenth century that I have seen except one. Where did the name San Miguel come from? There are two possible sources. The second land expedition left San Diego April 17 and must have been traveling along the channel May 8, the day of the apparition of San Miguel, and consequently may have given the name at that time. The only other plausible source is that Costanso, when he made his map, named it after himself due to the fact that when he discussed the question with the navigators in San Diego on his first or second return from Monterey they told him that he was mistaken about Santa Barbara and that the easternmost island was the one in reality that Perez had named Santa Cruz. This obviously left the middle island without any name and he may have felt compelled to supply the deficiency.

## HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA

When Vancouver was in Monterey in the latter part of 1792 he obtained a manuscript map from Juan Francisco de la Bodega who told him not to rely too much on it, as, although it was the best chart known, he did not know the authority for it. Vancouver also had a printed map which I have not yet been able to identify. On one he said the islands were named in the order I have just given and in the other as under their present names, San Miguel-Santa Rosa-Santa Cruz. For some reason unknown to us he adopted the latter on his chart and it has been frequently asserted that he named the islands. I have in my possession a manuscript map of California which must have been made about 1794 or possibly at the end of 1793. All the missions founded up to February 1793 are shown on it and none of those founded afterwards. On this we see the alignment of the Channel Islands as San Miguel-Santa Rosa-Santa Cruz. It might perhaps be thought to be a copy of Vancouver's chart except for the fact that it contains none of the names given by Vancouver south of Monterey. I do not know who drew the map, but as Bodega's map of 1792 contains the San Bernardo - San Miguel - Santa Cruz alignment; if it was made by anyone in an official position it must have been from later information. The only Spanish expedition known to me on that coast in 1793 was that of Francisco Eliza and Juan Martinez y Zayas, who had instructions to explore the coast between San Francisco and the Strait of Fuca. Martinez' map covers exactly that territory and displays some new names on this part of the coast which were probably given by him. This expedition and the map of it appear to have been unknown to the compilers of the account of the voyage of the *Sutil* and *Mexicana* which took place in 1792, the year previous. The fact that the map published in the atlas to the account of that voyage was only brought up to 1792 may, however, account for the failure to mention the Eliza expedition in the text. If such be the case it furnishes a possible explanation of the fact that Vancouver may have secured at the end of 1793 a Spanish map which showed exploration after 1792. The only serious objection to this theory is that he did not adopt any of the new

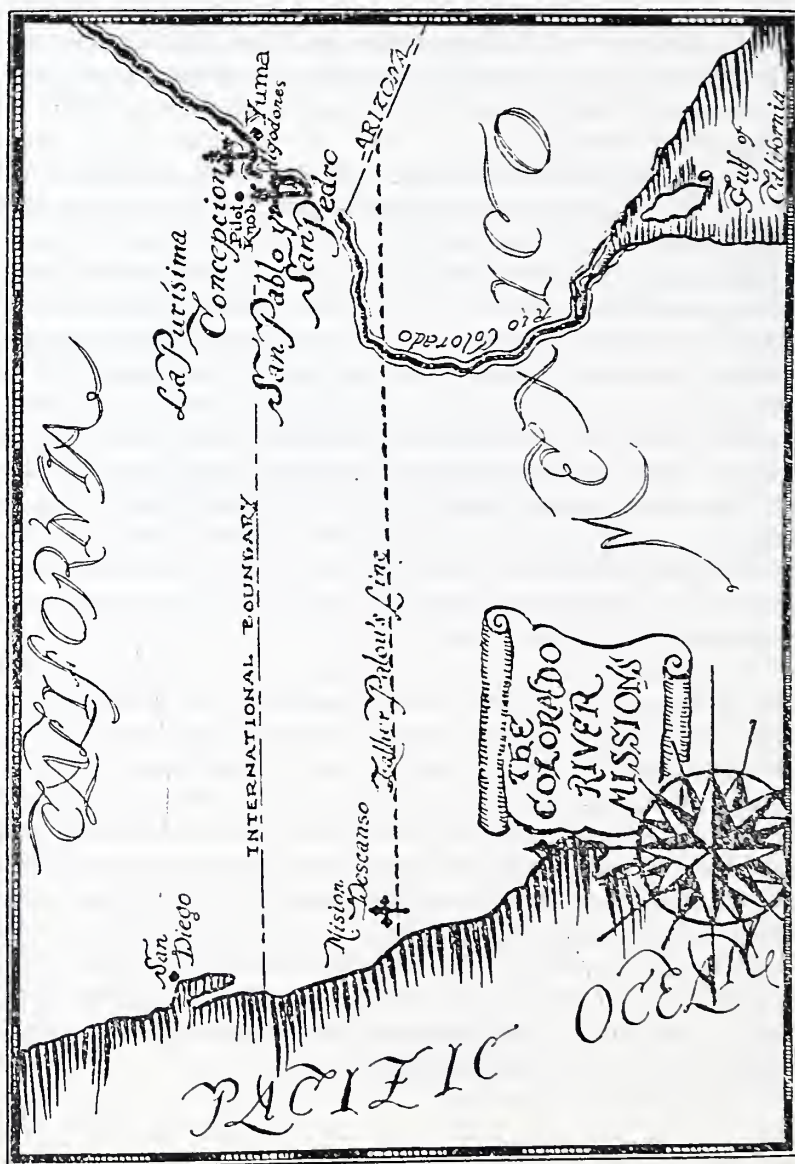
## THE NAMES OF THE CHANNEL ISLANDS

names north of San Francisco. As the situation stands today he employed names for these islands of which the origin of one is unknown. Of course the name "San Miguel" was simply shifted from the middle island to the western island but a new name "Santa Rosa" was given to the former. What was the origin of this?

In 1774 the *Santiago* on her way to the north, according to the *Relacion* of Juan Perez, reached the Santa Barbara Channel March 6 and then turned south for San Diego. He named the islands from west to east Santa Rosa (San Miguel), Santa Margarita (Santa Rosa), Santa Cruz, and Santo Tomás, for Anacapa Island. His Santa Cruz and Santo Tomás had, we know, been named before, but neither Santa Rosa nor Santa Margarita have any day at that time of the year. It seems probable therefore that they had also been named before. There are two saints named Rosa in the calendar, Santa Rosa de Lima and Santa Rosa de Viterbo, whose days are respectively August 30 and September 4. I know of no expedition near these islands on these dates. Santa Margarita never seems to have been used but we still have Santa Rosa as the name for the middle island.

The present alignment of names, San Miguel-Santa Rosa-Santa Cruz, is due to its use by Vancouver. His maps formed the basis for the early Admiralty charts and as British Admiralty charts were in common use by navigators of all nations, the name became perpetuated. The other alignment of San Bernardo-San Miguel- and Santa Cruz continued to be used on French maps for some time. Anacapa is an Indian name. George Davidson in his *Directory* for 1862 states that the old Indians called it or pronounced it En-nee-ah-pagh with the accent on the last syllable. On Vancouver's charts is it spelled Enecapah, obviously an error as in the text he repeatedly refers to it as Enneepah. He undoubtedly obtained the name while at San Buenaventura Mission.

HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA





## WERE THE COLORADO RIVER MISSIONS IN CALIFORNIA?

*By Seward C. Simons*

**E**VERY history of California tells the tragic story of the founding of the two "Colorado River Missions" in 1780 and their destruction by the Yuma Indians less than a year later, with the greatest slaughter of soldiers and missionaries in California history. Should these establishments, short lived as they were, be properly included in the list of the missions of California? This question at once requires the determination as to whether the sites were within the boundaries of our present state.

An extraordinary divergence occurs on this point among the many "standard" authorities. To cite a few: Bancroft (1) (followed by many others) places both missions in Mexico; Chapman (2) and Father Zephyrin (3) show both in California, while others, among them Hunt and Sanchez, give one in California and one in Mexico. By none of the writers on the subject does the exact location, with reference to the national boundary, seem to have been definitely considered, a situation which is the more remarkable since the basic facts are not difficult to obtain. They help, indeed, to understand the existing confusion.

It will be remembered that the Franciscan Order took over the California missions from the Jesuits in 1768, but five years later relinquished the Baja California area to the Dominicans. Father Palou, as the senior Franciscan, in leaving the peninsula in 1773 erected a great cross on August 19, at a point 32 degrees, 15 min. north, to mark the north-south boundary between the territory of two Orders. From this the line was to run due east and west. A few years later, the Dominicans established (1778) the Mission Descanso at this northern limit of their authority.

When, in 1780, it was finally decided by Governor Croix to locate the two establishments on the Colorado, it was on the basis of the recommendations of the Franciscan friars Garcés

## HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA

and Diaz. These correctly determined that the locations of both were north of Fr. Palou's line and therefore in Alta California, although the question as to which of the orders had the best right there was the subject of some debate. Both missions were placed on the west bank of the river, near the mouth of the Gila. The northern, or up-stream, mission was named La Purisima Concepcion and the site has been well authenticated as at Fort Yuma where ruins have been identified and a monument to Father Garcés erected. The down-stream mission, named San Pedro y San Pablo Bicuñer, was about four leagues or twelve miles south. Now there actually can be no doubt that this places the mission in Mexican territory, as Coues (5) says "about a league south of Pilot Knob," close to the bend in the Colorado or less than a mile south of Algodones, Sonora, a small town chiefly noted for the multiplicity of its saloons. The writer one winter day visited Algodones and noted the names of two saints on the mirror of every bar: Tomas y Geronimo—which hardly need translation as "Tom and Jerry."

Here it is necessary to add the clue to the apparent inconsistencies in the last paragraph. Many historians have evidently assumed that the Franciscan-Dominican boundary at 32 degrees 15 minutes was adopted for the international line, whereas in fact the boundary is about fifteen miles farther north. The map attached (prepared with the assistance of Phil Townsend Hanna of *Westways*) will make it clear that while both establishments were in Alta California, San Pedro

Father Adam (6) in 1893 visited the site of the southern mission and felt clear in his identification of its ruins, though he does not report on the location. However, forty years more seem to have obliterated the traces of the adobe structures.

If these facts might give La Purisima Concepcion the right on the basis of location to be considered in the list of California missions, both are ruled out by the strict interpretationists because they were not established on the standard mission plan. Governor Croix, following, according to Chap-

## COLORADO RIVER MISSIONS IN CALIFORNIA?

man, the plan submitted by Fr. Diaz, decided that a combination mission, presidio and pueblo could operate on a less expensive basis than either presidio or mission. As the control of the temporalities was not in the hands of the padres, and as there were colonists already in the party, there is adequate ground for the contentions that they should not be classed as true missions.

These establishments, slow in being started, brief and tragic in existence, their very location now a subject of controversy, mark a turning point in California history. Their destruction effectively ended the promising beginning of an overland route to California so favorably demonstrated by Anza. Alta California was left to its own resources, except for irregular ships, and the ultimate separation from Mexico became almost inevitable.

1. Bancroft—*History of California*, Vol. I, p 359
2. Chapman—*History of California*, Spanish Period, Map p 418
3. Father Zephyrin Englehardt—*Missions and Missionaries of California*, Vol. II, Ch. XI
4. Hunt and Sanchez—*Short History of California*, Map frontispiece
5. E. Coues—*On the Trail of a Spanish Pioneer*, *The Diary of Fr. Garces*, Vol. I, p 163
6. Fr. J. Adam—*Pub. Historical Society of Southern California*, Vol. III (1893), p 36

## THREE EARLY CALIFORNIA LETTERS

*With Introductions and Notes by Thomas Workman Temple II*

### I. THE STORMY CATALAN

THE following interesting human document opened at the Royal Presidio of San Carlos de Monterey, on December 21, 1772, describes in detail the trials and hardships suffered by the *soldados de cuera* who made possible the new conquest of "California Septentrional," and throws new light on the character of their hard task-master, that bluff Catalan soldier, Don Pedro Fages. Written by Mariano Carrillo, corporal of the Loreto Company, and under Rivera in the "Expedicion Santa" of 1769, it reveals many a heart breaking incident during the first few years of Spain's attempt to establish a foothold in her long-neglected province. Faced with starvation, hostile Indians, and the ever-nagging conscience of their hot-tempered commander, these men were clearly among those who best earned their daily bread for the august monarch whom they served. It took soldiers of great fortitude and patience to withstand the fatigue of daily tasks, and keep the pace set by a man so possessed with devotion for the royal service. Fages rarely missed an opportunity to storm over trifles, yet found time to attend to the most petty details of his official duties.

This account is also in the nature of a complaint, set down by a man born to the rigid discipline of the presidio of Loreto, yet who smarted under Fages' command and keenly felt his every slight and insult. Serra has given us his version of the stormy Catalan, and historians have often felt that the Padre Presidente's statements may not always have been free from bias. But here we have the words of a soldier intimately connected in the conquest with the commander, under his orders for a number of years, and thus in a position to give us a secular rather than a religious estimate of the man. True, there was some jealousy between the *soldados de cuera* and the Catalan Volunteers, even perhaps an animosity which may



## THE STORMY CATALAN

have started when Lieutenant Fages was made to rank the veteran Captain Rivera in Portola's expedition. Still Carrillo describes a number of instances when his superior could have tempered his rule over the provincial soldiers with tact and understanding. These incidents do not detract from the record of Fages as a staunch supporter of his king, an intrepid explorer, and later a wise governor, but rather give us an insight into frontier conditions and discipline.

Don Pedro Fages, a native of the Villa de Guisona, in the Bishopric of Vogel, Principality of Cathaluna, Spain, enlisted as a second lieutenant in a company of the First Battalion, Second Regiment of the Catalan Volunteer Light Infantry on June 29, 1762, and saw service in the Portuguese wars. On May 15, 1767, he was made a full lieutenant and in the same month left Spain with his battalion for Mexico. Soon after his arrival he joined Colonel Domingo Elizondo's expedition against the Seris and Apaches in Sonora. In the autumn of 1768 at the instance of the visitador general, Don Josef de Galvez, he was sent over from Guaymas to La Paz by Elizondo, where with twenty-five men of his "Compania Franca" he had arrived by August 16th, to take part in the California expedition. He was named military chief of the maritime expeditions to the ports of San Diego and Monterey, left with his detachment on the *San Carlos* on January 9, 1769, and arrived in San Diego on April 30 of the same year. He was *Comandante* on shore from May 1st to June 29 and may thus be considered California's first ruler.

With Portola's departure from Monterey on the *San Antonio*, July 9, 1769, Fages became commander of the infant province of California, and held that position until he reluctantly turned over the command on May 25, 1774, to a man he had ranked from the beginning of the conquest, Don Fernando de Rivera y Moncada. The appointment of Fages with his Volunteers, who were really foot-soldiers, to the commandancy may not have been such a happy choice, for these Europeans could not have adapted themselves so easily to frontier conditions. The *soldados de cuera*, among whom were the best horsemen in the

## HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA

world, were eminently better fitted for service in a new country. However, Fages and his twelve volunteers withstood the pestilential scurvy and the rigors of the service, and left an enviable record, worthy of men who planted the sword and the standard of the Holy Cross on barbarous shores.

Details of building activities, exploring expeditions, daily life of the soldiers, and the famous bear hunt are put down faithfully as a background for Carrillo's censure of his commander's conduct. The conversational interludes make of this "short account" a most readable and human narrative. It was written while Serra was on his way to Mexico to bring before the viceroy a plea for the new establishments and his grievances against Fages. It is not addressed nor do we know the conditions under which it found its way into the Mexican archives. However, it may have helped to strengthen Serra's cause before the august tribunal of the Council of War, or at a later time justified the Padre Presidente's stand. We do know that the retirement of Fages was one of many points decided in Serra's favor. This document is translated and published here for the first time and forms an item in Volume 66, Californias, Archivo General de la Nacion, Mexico City. Through the kindness of Mr. Henry R. Wagner a transcript of the interesting manuscript was secured. It is offered here as a further contribution to the annals of "Los Nuevos Establecimientos de Monterey," as California was often called in the early uncertain years of this far-flung province of Don Carlos III, King of Spain and of Her Indies.

Mariano Carrillo, the writer, was born at the royal presidio of Nuestro Señora de Loreto about 1730, son of Juan Carrillo and Efigenia Millar, founder of a sturdy and prominent line of California families. Mariano counted among his brothers-in-law such men as Joseph Francisco de Ortega, Juan Maria Ruiz, Juan Diego Verdugo, Martin de Olivera, and Joaquin Arce, all of whom left an enviable list of scions, many of whom married Yankee, English, and Scotch pioneers. His brother, Guillermo, was also a corporal under Rivera in the 1769 Expedition, and like him died without issue. Another brother,

## THE STORMY CATALAN

Hilario, was the father of Joseph Raymundo Carrillo, founder of a family outstanding for the prominence of its members and also for its connection with equally prominent American pioneers. Mariano enlisted in the Compania de Cuera de Californias at Loreto on July 26, 1756; was already a corporal by 1769; was made a sergeant of the Monterey Company in April 1771; promoted to ensign in February 1780; and died at Monterey on January 27, 1782 "with fervent signs of a true Christian," to quote from the entry of his death, some three weeks after the venerable Crespi had been laid to rest by Serra. So by the time that Don Pedro Fages had returned as governor, his faithful but complaining subaltern had been buried within the walls of the royal chapel of Monterey, where already lay many of his fellows who had helped found a province amid untold hardships, hunger and fatigue, under the watchful eye of the "slave-driving" commander.

---

J. H. S.

AN ACCOUNT OF SOME THINGS THAT HAVE HAPPENED DURING THE NEW CONQUEST OF MONTE-REY SINCE THE BEGINNING OF ITS FOUNDATION, WHICH TOOK PLACE ON THE FIFTH DAY OF JUNE IN THE YEAR OF OUR LORD ONE THOUSAND SEVEN HUNDRED AND SEVENTY; THE MANNER IN WHICH THE SOLDIERS HAVE BEEN TREATED, AND THE RATIONS THAT HAVE BEEN DISPENSED; ALSO THE WAY THE WORK HAS BEEN CARRIED ON, AND HOW THESE SAME SOLDIERS HAVE BEEN COMPELLED TO LABOR BY FORCE

On the fifth day of June in the year 1770, after formal possession of this land had been taken and a Solemn Mass of Thanksgiving had been sung, we were ordered to erect a warehouse, for it was necessary to store the supplies of the king, Don Carlos III, (whom God guard), which the paquebot *Prin-*

*thirty-one*

## HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA

*cipe* \* had on board. We were also told that since there were no other men for the task, we soldiers \* would have to undertake it. At once the work of cutting timber and transporting it on mules was begun. We soldiers acted as woodsmen and muleteers, without any of us being excused, and although there were two muleteers at hand, everyone did a like share of the work. Within twelve days two warehouses were put up, wherein we stored the supplies that had come with the ship.

After having unladen the *Principe* we started hard at work on the construction of the presidio, laboring from sun-up to sun-down, without any more rest during the day than the time we spent for our meals. Since at night the soldiers still had guard duty to perform, their daily tasks proved most burdensome to them, and their plight became all the more distressing when they realized that the following day would bring no let-up in their work. They knew that if they sat down to rest awhile or to roll a cigarette and the *Comandante* \* caught them, he would rebuke them harshly; thus the men became so disgruntled that there was not one among them who did anything cheerfully.

If the *Comandante* found any one resting or late in coming out to work he would say to him: "What is the matter with you? Why aren't you at work? Is this the way you earn the king's money? Man, have you no conscience? The king supplies you with rations, pays you wages and supports you. All you care to do is to sleep, rest and get your belly full."

These and other such remarks with which he tormented the men would pour forth from his lips. He would not relax his vigilance an instant, always on the heels of the soldiers to see who worked and who loafed. He was never satisfied with the work and trusted no one. Finally he decided to set the amount of work to be done daily at the different tasks, and said that whoever failed to finish his day's work must make up on Sunday all that he had left unfinished during the week. This, however, was never enforced, but it did happen that one day a soldier did not complete his task, and the *Comandante* ordered that no food be given him.



## THE STORMY CATALAN

The amount of work per day at cutting timber was set as follows: fifty logs of from three to four *varas* in length, if a good width; if they were thinner, then sixty must be cut daily. The work of those who transported the logs depended on the distance they had to carry them. In everything else, however, a day's task was rigidly set, so that no one had any spare time during the day. The *Comandante* would never refrain from putting all of us to work on the particular task that he had in mind, some of us mixing mud for adobes, others making them, some carrying mud to plaster the huts, others doing the plastering, some sawing boards, and others making lime kilns. In short he had us do whatever occurred to him, whether we wanted to or not.

One day early in the morning a soldier named Francisco Xavier Aguilar (who was one of those cutting timber) set out for the woods, his axe over his shoulder, when the officer intercepted him and asked: "Where have you been cutting timber?"

"*Senor*, at such a place," replied the soldier.

"I do not understand you," said the officer, "explain yourself."

"*Senor*, in that small arroyo, at such a place, where we first started to cut timber," explained the soldier.

"I don't understand you; be more explicit," rejoined the *Comandante*, as he came towards the soldier in a fit of temper.

The man again tried to explain as best he could, but the officer would listen to none of it. Instead he kept coming closer, using less civil language, demanding a better explanation, and insisting that he did not understand. The other now remained silent, but the *Comandante*, as if he wanted to tear the fellow's eyes out, kept forcing him to speak, until the soldier blurted out: "*Senor*, I have been cutting timber in the woods."

Hardly had the officer heard this than he made an attempt to throttle the soldier, who fled in terror. He called to him, but the other would not venture a step, and not until I spoke to him would he return. The *Comandante* now grasped him by

HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA

the hand, took him to the warehouse, called the blacksmith, and ordered a pair of irons to be put on the prisoner.

The soldier now said: "*Senor*, you have no reason to punish me. What you are now doing to me is what you would like to do to all the *soldados de cuera* \* because you hate us so. You may recall what you once said to me that you would remain in command here, and that we would suffer the consequences."

"I said no such thing," put in the *comandante*.

"You did say that to me," replied the soldier, "on the other side of the Rio Carmelo, when we were awaiting the arrival of the *Principe*, in company with the governor, Don Gaspar de Portola."

At this the officer stopped, and did not put him in irons.

It also happened that he dispatched two parties of men to the Salinas \* to fetch salt. They returned almost torn to pieces, their feet and legs cut and bruised, and in such a bad way that they could hardly walk. One of the soldiers brought back some salt for his own use. The *Comandante* found this out, took it away from him, and thus addressed the men:

"You are nothing but thieves, traitors to the king, who connive to destroy his goods. This salt belongs to the king, and no one may have any of it." And he continued to insult them with other insolent language.

Furthermore these men arrived by noon at the presidio and he immediately set them to work finishing a watering-trough for the horses. Although one of them did not fail to show him the pitiable condition in which they were, not on this score was any mercy shown them.

During that year of 1770 the rains were very heavy and it would rain for weeks at a time, leaving the ground so that one could hardly walk for the many mudholes. But this was no excuse to stop working. There were men who had to plod into the woods to cut timber, for the horses could not make their way in the mud. Those who were carrying timber spent most of the day digging their mules out of the mire, themselves covered with mud. One day it dawned raining so hard that it was impossible to venture forth and work out of doors. But

## THE STORMY CATALAN

just so that we might get no rest that day, the *Comandante* gathered us all into a room and put us to work twisting twine to make fishing lines, but not a fish have we had yet.

The rations <sup>7</sup> given us as this time were as follows: one *almud* <sup>8</sup> of corn, one pound of rice, one pound of beans, one pound of *pinole*, one-half pound of *panocha*, and four pounds of meat. This we received once a week, or rather this food had to last a whole week. As the meat came in barrels, some of them contained such rotten meat that it was unfit to eat, and besides being bad it was so water-logged that the four pounds supplied us really amounted to very little. Half the meal and corn was usually ground to a powder and weevil-infested, but not once was it shaken out before being dispensed. The work being so strenuous, the men could hardly live on such rations and were forced to eat what herbs they could find in the fields. In this way three men were poisoned, one from eating soap root and the others with mushrooms. The soldiers could not keep from bartering their goods with the heathen for food, so that several *mangas de pano*, <sup>10</sup> pocket knives, daggers, and white handkerchiefs were given away. In short, they gave away whatever they had with them, when they chanced to meet the Indians with something to eat. Necessity forced us to this extreme.

No chance was given the men to wash or mend their clothing or do anything for themselves. If one asked permission to do so, the *Comandante* would reply that he could do them on Sunday. So that on Sunday one had to wash, mend, carry in a whole week's supply of wood for his kitchen, bring in his own water from the Rio Carmelo some two leagues away, clean his weapons, and pass muster. Thus everything which one needed or had to do for himself must be done on Sunday. This continued for a year and a half, until at the instance of the Reverend Fathers, the practice was done away with.

When a soldier broke one of his spurs, bridle, or any other part of his equipment, he would see the *Comandante* so that the blacksmiths might repair it for him. But the officer would usually reply that they were very busy, and to have a little

## HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA

patience. Thus the men would be put off for a long time, until at their instance he would order the repairs made, and as often happened, the work was partly done. Some even fared worse, for what they left to be repaired disappeared from the smithy's shop and was never returned.

Also the *Comandante* had a mulatto servant of whom he was very fond. One day this fellow came to me and said that if I were willing, he would bring over his rations and eat at my mess. I told him that he could not. A few days later the officer called to me and said:

"My man, I want Juan Antonio" (for that was the fellow's name) to eat at your mess."

"*Senor*," said I "how can that be? Even if I am willing, the soldier who acts as mess-steward may not want to cook his meals."

"I command it! His meals must be served him, whether they like it or not. He wants to, and he is going to eat at your table."

That same day rations were dispensed and the *Comandante* ordered the mess-steward to take the fellow's food and prepare his meals. He took it like one who swallows a bitter pill. Nevertheless the fellow began to eat at my table.

Sunday came, and since the men on this day were accustomed to go hunting when they were not otherwise occupied, some of them asked permission to go, and among them went Juan Antonio. They returned in the afternoon with a mess of geese. Juan Antonio brought one and, like the others, gave it to the mess-steward for our table. The week passed and on Sunday the same ones went hunting again and brought back more geese. The fellow got several. He gave some to the *Comandante*, sold a few, and ate the rest by himself, contributing nothing to our kitchen. The soldiers were well aware of this, but made no complaint, although Juan Antonio partook of those which the others brought. The men went hunting again the Sunday following and shot other geese. Juan Antonio did likewise and still gave some to the officer, sold others and ate the rest by himself, but gave none for our mess. The soldiers who saw this said:



## THE STORMY CATALAN

"This is all foolishness. Why should we give him any of our geese?"

So the next day they prepared their geese in their pots, but cooked for the other fellow only the food taken from his rations. This they set before him at noon, but served him no goose. He went straight to the *Comandante* and related what had happened to him. That evening I was summoned and the officer addressed me in this manner:

"I suppose that you men have spent a good day of it."

"Yes, *Senor*," I replied, "thanks be to God."

"Did you have goose for dinner?"

"Yes, *Senor*, we did."

"I suppose all the men of your mess partook of them."

"Why, yes, all except Juan Antonio."

"And why is that?"

"Because, *Senor*," I explained, "granting that he goes out and kills geese like the others, still he eats a few by himself, gives others away, and sells the rest of them. There is no reason why he should partake of those which the other men bring home."

Having heard this, he came at me in a rage, saying: "*Senor*, do you know one thing? Juan Antonio goes hunting geese for me, and if he sells any it is because I give them to him. Furthermore, he must share in whatever is killed for your table, though it be a pheasant; for the bullets, powder, fire-arms, geese, and everything else there is belongs to the king."

I told the soldiers what had been ordered and what they did was not to go hunting any more, but if some one did get any game, it would be hidden from Juan Antonio and eaten secretly. To such extremes were we forced to resort.

There was a soldier named Carlos Rubio who had a fine shot-gun. Its stock was inlaid with metal and had hammers, trigger-guard, and sights of silver. The *Comandante* was about to set out on an expedition <sup>12</sup> to the port of San Francisco, and among the soldiers picked to accompany him, he named Alejandro Soto. This man on being singled out replied: "Senior, I have no shot gun."

## HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA

"Why this man will surely lend you his," said the officer., pointing to Rubio, who said.

"*Senor*, if you command it I will lend it to him."

"I do not command it," corrected the *Comandante*, "but being an old friend of his, you may lend it to him."

"Very well," replied Rubio, "but there is one thing. This gun cost me fifty-three pesos. I am but a poor man and if something should happen to it, who will bear the loss,"

"You are quite right," put in the officer, "if the gun is damaged, I shall pay half the cost and Alejandro the other half."

"Very well," said Rubio, "here is my gun."

They set out on their expedition and the gun became damaged. Soon after their return, the *Comandante* summoned Rubio and said to him:

"My man, the stock of your gun has been shattered. It happened in the service of the king, so Alejandro pays nothing. It is the king who will stand the cost."

"Very well *Senor*," said Rubio.

A few days later the barrel of a musket broke. The *Comandante* ordered it well repaired and called Rubio.

"Take this musket," he said, "and use it while your shotgun is being repaired."

The soldier took the musket and after some time, he reminded the officer about his shotgun. The latter replied that he was already satisfied that Rubio should keep the musket in place of the gun. I am sure that the musket has been charged against the soldier's account, for one day when I was with the *Comandante*, he read me several entries from Rubio's account, and one of them listed the musket. The shotgun was never paid for, and its decorations I have seen on the *Comandante's* own gun.

The *Principe* having come a second time <sup>13</sup>, the *Comandante* decided to sail on her for the port of San Diego, and as new missions <sup>14</sup> were to be founded the duty of remaining at the mission of Carmelo <sup>15</sup> with seven men fell upon me. At the time of his departure he ordered me to summon them before him, and addressed them in this manner: "You men are to stay here

## THE STORMY CATALAN

with this gentleman," pointing at me, "you are to work at everything he may order, and if you fail to do so, he will punish you, and if you, *Senor*, do not punish them, I shall punish you myself. Now bear this well in mind. You may go".

They went out in silence without uttering a word, although not all of them were soldiers, for among them were three sailors <sup>16</sup> who did the same work as the soldiers. I labored there for six months with these seven men, without wasting a single day or refraining from work of any sort, until having returned from his journey south, he took me away from the mission.

During all this time the rations were much different from those formerly dispensed. For the ship having brought no meat we were given in its stead two ounces of ham daily, and the *pinole* which we had heretofore received was not now forthcoming, or anything else in its place. The rations at this time consisted of one *almud* of corn, one pound of rice, one pound of beans, one pound of ham, and half a pound of *panocha*. This must last us a whole week, so that the day a rabbit was shot, or any other food procured from the heathen, we were ravenous with hunger. But the work never ceased. Finally he took me away from the mission as I have stated, and I returned to the presidio where the work continued as before. The *Comandante* now told me:

"I don't want you or any of the soldiers who have worked before this, to do so now."

"Very well, *Senor*," I replied.

But nevertheless, he always found some excuse to keep me occupied. He would say to me: "Go along with the mule train, and see that those who go do their work well, so many of them are going."

Thus he would include me among them, and as there were never enough men along, I was obliged to work like the rest. Though he did not put the other soldiers to work, he still had them continually on the go, watching the horse herd, doing guard duty, or sending them here and there. Among other things I heard that he did not force the work on those soldiers

## HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA

<sup>17</sup> who had recently arrived, and that the tasks properly theirs were done by other men. If a soldier complained that he could not work, the *Comandante* would threaten to discharge him from the service. Once a Catalan Volunteer <sup>18</sup> told him that it was not part of his duty to work, and that he would not work. So the officers put him in irons for two days and locked him up in a cell. Only after the Volunteer had resigned himself to labor, was he released.

Great was the vexation suffered by the men, for there were even regulations governing one's bodily habits. There was an order that all men should use the latrine and no one was to do otherwise. I had many occasion to lament this for the many scoldings that the *Comandante* gave me. One day while working in the corral I suddenly felt the call of nature most urgently, and went behind some bushes back of the corral. As he was so suspicious that he was always looking for an excuse to mortify the men, he spied me coming out of the corral. He came to where I was and caught me in the act. He said nothing at the time but that night I did not escape a good display of his rage. He told me that I, who should see to it that his orders were obeyed, was the worst one of all. With a good deal of humility I replied that it had not been a case of intentionally disobeying his orders, but that the emergency had come upon me then and there. He then gave vent to his wrath with other insulting remarks, and threatened that if he caught me another time, he would hang a chain around my neck.

It is a matter of common knowledge that the armament which we *soldados de cuera* use in the service is bought with our own money, and although our shotguns and swords are issued to us from the king's armory, we must pay fixed prices for them. If anyone divests himself of these weapons he forfeits the purchase price and must have others issued to him. But here (in the establishments of Monte-Rey) this is not the case. If a soldier damages one of his arms, the *Comandante* orders him to turn it in, and if he issues another, he charges it to the man's account. Whether this be done with the idea that the soldier must pay for the new arm, or it be issued in



## THE STORMY CATALAN

place of the old one, I know not. At any rate some of the men have held on to their old weapons, and have not handed them in, but the *Comandante* has made others surrender them. The mounts and other things used in the service we purchase with our own money. This rule has always been observed in our company.

During the first year when the work was being carried on so strenuously, some soldiers were sawing boards and the officer approached them and asked:

"How goes the work?"

"Badly *Senor*," they answered, "this saw does not cut. It could be sharpened."

To which he bluntly answered, "I spit on sawyers who will not help their saw."

This I did not hear personally, but right away the soldier to whom he had said this, and those who were with him came to me and excitedly recounted the affair. I believed it, for insults by the *Comandante* are very common.

As for the food, I repeat that at the very beginning of this year 1772 the meal, ham, and *panocha* began to dwindle considerably so that by the month of March we were reduced to but a loaf of bread daily. Before the loaf was placed in the oven, it was supposed to weigh a pound and a half, but after being baked it weighed only a pound. There were times when it was even less, for once a soldier did weigh his bread and it came to only fourteen ounces. At this time we were also given a little milk and some vegetables, with an ounce of lard to fry them. These were the only provisions available for the maintenance of all these men.

At this time a party of fourteen of us men set out in company with the *Comandante* to explore <sup>20</sup> the port of San Francisco. We spent sixteen days going and coming, until we returned to a place near the presidio called "El Portezuelo." The provisions given us on this journey consisted of a pail of flour which barely contained a pound, and a tablet of very ordinary chocolate daily. And since we travelled the live-long day, tending the pack train, guarding the camp and the horses,

## HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA

and performing every task the *Comandante* ordered, these short rations were hardly sufficient for us to live on. I can truly say that during this journey we experienced the greatest pangs of hunger which have as yet been endured in the whole expedition. God finally came to our rescue when we shot a bear, for it helped to renew our strength. Only with this and afterwards with some seeds which we found among the heathen were we able to withstand the journey.

On the return trip, at that place which I have mentioned as "El Portezuelo" the *Comandante* decided that a party of men should go back and explore a river <sup>20</sup> that we found which empties into the port of San Francisco and try to ascertain whence it came; also he ordered that a different route be taken from that which we had just travelled. He ordered me to undertake this search with six men and set a time limit of eight or ten days for the trip. He gave us the same amount of rations for this period as he had on the previous journey.

I started on this exploring trip Sunday, the fifth of April, about 8 o'clock in the morning, the same time that the *Comandante* set out for the presidio. In four day's time my task had been accomplished. By the route I had taken I came to the banks of the river in this short time, and convinced that it was impossible to ford, due to the swiftness of its current, its depth and width, I decided to return to the presidio and give an account of what I had seen. Since one is able to espy from afar those who are approaching, the men at the presidio reported my coming to the *Comandante* and without waiting for any explanation whatever from me, he said:

"They must have been waiting outside somewhere for the eight days to elapse, so they could return. I do not believe they did any exploring."

This happened to be on the eighth day <sup>21</sup> since I had left him at "El Portezuelo". I finally arrived, came before him, and delivered the diary which he had ordered me to keep. I reported what I had seen and examined, and apparently he was satisfied and well pleased. Some of the men, however, had overheard his words, and on seeing me draw near I noticed that they

## THE STORMY CATALAN

regarded me most pitifully. It was not until a brother of mine, to whom the *Comandante* had spoken directly, could no longer bear it, that he told me what had been said, for he too smarted under the insult. So great was the mortification that this caused me, that nothing could console me until I went straight to the officer for satisfaction. He tried to make up for it, but since he had already treated me like this on so many former occasions, I told him that I would remember this all the days of my life.

Insulting men is something that this man does at every turn, though there be no motive for it; he boasts that a superior need have no motive for such action. Whomever he has insulted without reason, however, can hardly be expected to bear good will towards him or remain willingly in the service. Perhaps that explains why there have been desertions in the ranks.

He has taken special care to see to it that when men have gone out from the presidio, the days for which rations have been advanced are set down. If they return before this time is up, there is no danger that additional rations be given them, until after the day set. And on the other hand if they should stay away longer, say two or three days, or whatever it be, no one is paid his rations in arrears. These remain in the warehouse.

Just to show how diligently the work has been carried on, and that this account may not seem exaggerated in any respect, I recount the following experience. It happened that the heathen Indians killed some of our mules. A few of the wrong-doers were apprehended, but the one who had been the instigator of all this escaped. About this time the making of a stockade was undertaken at Mission Carmelo, where the men from the presidio had gathered to lend a hand, and with them. One day after sundown, the laborers having already retired from work, I was told that this Indian who helped or had been the ring-leader of the culprits was very near at hand. At this late hour I returned to the presidio and informed the *Comandante* of what I had learned. He was pleased with the news, and right away dispatched me with a few soldiers in

## HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA

pursuit of the Indian. I spent the whole night in diligent search, under the most adverse conditions, for it was raining and very cold and the ground was a mass of mud, just covered with water. But we plodded on afoot, unmindful of the mire and dampness, until after midnight we chanced to come upon the Indian. We took him prisoner and I brought him back with me to the presidio, where I arrived just at daybreak, without having had a moment's rest during that awful night, and having labored all the day before. This I had done gladly and willingly, for it was my duty as a soldier, and I would have spent as many sleepless nights as necessary to accomplish it. But what hurt me to the quick was no sooner had I handed over my prisoner to the *Comandante*, than he ordered me back to work, without seeming to realize, or taking into account how badly we were in need of rest, and that going to work on the stockade was not in our line of duty. But ever obedient and without uttering a dissenting word, I went out and did as he ordered. The other soldiers had much to complain about this treatment and became greatly dissatisfied. We spent the day in cutting timber, carrying it, and fencing in the posts for the stockade. In the light of these things, how could any man remain here contented.

In the month of May of 1772, our supplies <sup>22</sup> having run out, the *Comandante* determined to set out with a party of fourteen men for "La Canada de los Osos," <sup>23</sup> to get bear meat and relieve the dire conditions at the presidio and missions. <sup>24</sup> At the time we set out he ordered me to have all the men who were going bring along their utensils and animals. This was done as ordered and at the same time he dispatched another party to the port of San Francisco for the same purpose. But these latter men were not ordered to take along their utensils; only those going to "La Canada." We set out for "La Canada," and within a few days had hung up a good supply of bear meat, the soldiers having stalked the game, cut the meat into strips, salted it down, and acted as muleteers. As soon as there was enough meat to load on to five mules, the *Comandante* decided to return to the presidio, and left me at "La Canada" with six



## THE STORMY CATALAN

men and orders to kill bears. Now since there were no longer any bears to be found in that region, for those that had not been slain had been frightened away, I was forced to take to the mountains in search of them. My men were thus exposed to all manner of accidents, as in fact some might very well have happened, for while running, several horses fell with their riders, the footing being unsafe. There was but little bear meat to be had at this time, and the *Comandante* was not well pleased with this state of affairs. As he returned a second time and saw that we had hung up only a pack load and a half, he boasted to me that he would pull bears right out of the ground. But no such thing, for although he went out hunting for them on such occasions as he could, he brought back only two, and small ones at that. He then returned to the presidio with the meat that had first been procured, and left me behind with six men that I have already mentioned, without any more provision for food than the bears we might chance to kill.

On his return to the presidio the *Comandante* found the party that had gone to the port of San Francisco, and at once sent the men down to me to join in the bear hunt. As, however, there was no longer any game to be had, we killed none. After his departure from "La Canada", some soldiers <sup>22</sup> from the southern missions arrived there with the mail. I sent the letters on to him, and in view of their import he determined to return to "La Canada" where he arrived within two weeks time. The party of men which had been to San Francisco was already there, and having decided to send letters south, he called me and asked:

"Have all the soldiers got their animals and utensils here?"

"*Senor*," said I, "those men who came with me have them, but these who have recently arrived, have not."

I would not have chosen such an answer, had I known the embarrassment it was to cause me. Hardly had I ventured this reply, when he shouted in an angry tone.

"Well, what things do you attend to? Did I not order you at Monterey to have all the men bring along their animals and utensils? Why have they not done so?"

## HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA

Without stopping for any other explanation, he began to insult me as he pleased, but not until he had quieted down did I attempt to answer.

"Sir, even though one were a saint, he could never please you. If these men have not brought along their animals and utensils, why should you blame me? How could I order them to bring their things, when I was here and they in Monterey? You who sent them down could well have ordered it then, and not shift the blame on me now."

The soldiers were not so far away that they could not hear what was being said. After I came away one of them approached me and asked:

"What has the captain to say to you about our animals and utensils? If we came away without them, it is because we asked him and left them behind with his permission."

The soldier said this in a loud voice and the *Comandante* couldn't help but overhear, but he made out as if he had not heard and said not another word. Under such conditions and in view of this and the many other things which we are continually experiencing how can any man be content to remain?

Finally we dispatched his letters and returned to the presidio, leaving me there with but two men to shift for ourselves as best we could, though he did leave us some horses so that we could hunt bears. As these animals had already fled the place, what was there for us to kill? So each one of us began to hunt for his daily sustenance, according to how God would favor him with something or other. Since it was not always an easy task to find what to eat, many a time we had to munch the roots of *tule*, and this would keep us for a few days. Finally realizing our dire necessity, I decided to move camp from there to *Canada* some four leagues distant, where there were some *rancherias* of heathen, to see if we could find nourishment among them. So we did, for amongst those wretched Indians we found such charity, that we were relieved in our extreme necessity with *pinole de sacate*, \* and whatever else they had, for they denied us none of their food. In this manner we spent almost three months, each one of us sustain-

## THE STORMY CATALAN

ing ourselves with what we acquired from the heathen by bartering. Thus it came to pass that there was one of us who hardly had a stitch of clothing left, and nothing to cover himself with.

At this time the mail arrived from San Diego with the welcome news that the ships had arrived <sup>27</sup> and the *Comandante* decided to go south to that port. He ordered me to return to the presidio, where he left me in charge until his return, when he dispatched me with the pack-train to the missions of San Antonio and San Luis Obispo, to leave some supplies.

From some of the soldiers I learned that on the trip the *Comandante* made to San Diego he left the heathen of the channel very excited. It seems that one of them stole his sabre and three days were spent trailing the thief until they found the sabre and retrieved it with no little danger of loss of life, as happened with one of the wretched heathen. Besides this the soldiers also related that he would stop at the *rancherias* to buy *coritas* <sup>28</sup> from the Indians, and that he obtained some of them almost by force. Several times he did not pay for them, as happened in the case of a soldier who took a *cora* from an Indian in his presence and never paid for it. On the return trip this Indian accosted the soldier to charge him for the *cora* but the soldier merely replied that the captain was coming behind and to charge him for it.

After the arrival of the ship <sup>29</sup> he opened up a box of ordinary chocolate and dispensed four pounds of it to every man alike. But afterwards at night he secretly gave out some of the fine chocolate to the Volunteers, and enjoined them to keep the *soldados de cuera* from learning of this. He even complains about giving us a cook to grind us some *nixtamal* <sup>30</sup> and make us some tortillas. As a last resort we soldiers may have to do this work ourselves.

I could relate much more about Senor Don Fages, but having neither the opportunity or the time, I give only this short account of what has happened to me. And I may add that there is no exaggeration in what I have written; much less do

## HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA

I include in this narrative all that has actually happened and what we have all experienced.

Presidio of Monterrey, December 21, 1772.

MARIANO CARRILLO, (*rubric*)

<sup>1</sup> The mission and royal presidio of San Carlos de Monterrey were founded on June 3, 1770. Carrillo no doubt refers to the day on which work was actually started, though he may have been mistaken as to the exact date of founding. See Portolá to Croix, Monterey, July 15, 1770, official report of occupation of the port, with attestation by Pedro Fages, Juan Pérez and Miguel del Pino. (Mexican Archives, Archivo General, Californias Tomo 76); Crespi, *Diario in Palóu, Noticias*, vol ii, p. 269 Palóu, Vida, p. 101, with letter of Serra's describing the ceremonies of Act of Possession and Mass.

<sup>2</sup> The paquebot *Príncipe*, also known as the San Antonio, had sailed from San Diego on April 16, 1770, with Serra, Costansó, Prat, nad Juan Pérez, her master, and arrived at Monterey on May 31, having on board the supplies taken from the San Carlos at San Diego, as well as her own cargo.

<sup>3</sup> The soldiers at Monterey, present at the time of founding, were twelve Catalan Volunteers including a sergeant and corporal under Fages, and eight soldados de cuera including Mariano Carrillo, their corporal. There were also two muleteers, nine Lower California Christian Indians, and ten sailors who were left behind by Pérez. On June 14 mails were dispatched south with José Velasquez, a soldado de cuera, and a sailor, leaving but seven men of Carrillo's company.

<sup>4</sup> The Comandante of the royal presidio of Monterey was Don Pedro Fages, who assumed control of the new establishments on Portolá's departure, July 9, 1770, on the San Antonio for San Blas.

<sup>5</sup> The names of the soldados de cuera or "leather-jackets" at Monterey were Corporal Mariano Carrillo, the author of this account, José María Góngora, Anastacio Xavier Verduzco, Alexandro de Soto, Carlos Rubio, Antonio Cota, Francisco Xavier Aguilar, and José Velásquez, the courier.

<sup>6</sup> The Salinas or salt deposits are mentioned by Fages in a letter to Gálvez, of July 1, 1770, in which he relates having prepared three pack-loads of salt to be sent the visitador general aboard the San Antonio. He also expresses his hope, if conditions permit, to store up as large a quantity as possible for the coming of the next ship. In another letter of Fages dated Monterey, June 20, 1771, he reports that a small boat seven varas long and one and one-half varas wide had been constructed to bring salt from the Salinas, some six leagues by sea from the presidio.

<sup>7</sup> The rations left at Monterey by July 3, 1770, appear in Fages' letter to Gálvez of that date. They consisted of fifty fanegas (each about 1.60 of a bushel) of corn; seventy-five of flour; twelve fanegas of lard; twelve fanegas of pinole (cereal meal). All the above goods had already dwindled considerably, but the rest of the provisions were nearly all intact.

<sup>8</sup> An almud is an uncertain measure of grain or dry fruit, probably here about fifty pounds.

<sup>9</sup> Panocha is unrefined sugar put up in small cakes.

<sup>10</sup> Mangas de paño were a kind of fine zarape, with a slit through the middle so the head could be introduced, thus forming a warm protection for the body. Also known as a poncho.



## THE STORMY CATALAN

Juan Antonio Coronel, the mulatto, was none other than the muleteer who had cured Serra's inflamed leg on May 18, 1769, on the way from San Fernando de Vellicatá to San Diego. By making a poultice of tallow and some herbs which he found nearby, mixing and heating them, and applying them to the injured parts, the muleteer, turned physician, so improved the Padre Presidente's condition that he was able to continue the tiresome journey north. On Serra's visit to Mexico in 1773 he placed among other things before the viceroy, a plea from Coronel to be relieved from the service and allowed to join his wife in Sinaloa, whom he had not seen for many years. The request was no doubt granted, for Juan Antonio disappears from the records after February 14, 1773, when he acted as sponsor for a little Indian neophyte at Monterey. See Palóu's *Noticias*, vol. iii, p. 33; *San Carlos, Libros de Mision*.

<sup>12</sup> This was Fages' first expedition to the port of San Francisco, which he made on November 21, 1770, with six soldiers and a muleteer (no doubt Juan Antonio Coronel), returning to the presidio on December 4, 1770. The diary of this exploring party written by Fages has been published by the Academy of Pacific Coast History.

<sup>13</sup> The Principe with Don Juan Pérez still her captain dropped anchor at Monterey on May 31, 1771, with a good supply of provisions and new missionaries for California. Fages sailed on her for San Diego on June 7, and landed at the southern port on the 14th, with Fr. Benito Cambon and Fr. Angel Fernández de la Somera, assigned to the proposed new mission of San Gabriel. While the Comandante was at San Diego, fourteen Catalan Volunteers and ten new soldados de cuera arrived on October 4, sent up by Governor Felipe Barri. By December 9, Fages had returned to Monterey with twelve Volunteers and eight of the leather-jackets.

<sup>14</sup> The new missions of San Gabriel and San Buenaventura were to be founded.

<sup>15</sup> Serra had decided to move the mission from its location near the presidio to the Carmel Valley before Fages had left Monterey, June 7, 1771. Upon Carrillo and the seven men then fell the duty of making the change, which was commenced in August, according to Palóu, and finished in December of 1771. Palóu's *Noticias*, Vol. ii, p. 319.

<sup>16</sup> When Don Juan Pérez departed for San Blas with Portolá July 9, died by September 20. He also left five able-bodied sailors to help the men on land with the work.

<sup>17</sup> See Note 13.

<sup>18</sup> Serra, in a letter to Fages at San Diego, October 13, 1772, mentions this volunteer as Ygnacio Estevanel, who on the Padre Presidente's exhortation finally resigned himself to work and obey the Comandante's order, and was released from the cell.

<sup>19</sup> This was Fages' second expedition to the port of San Francisco, when he was accompanied by Fray Juan Crespi, both of whom left noteworthy diaries of this eventful trip. The rest of the party consisted of six Volunteers, six soldados de cuera, one muleteer, and one lower California Christian Indian. The start was made on March 20, 1772; they returned on April 5. Crespi's diary appears in Palóu's *Noticias*, Vol. ii, Chap. XXXII and XXXIII.

<sup>20</sup> The Rio de San Francisco, now known as the San Joaquin.

<sup>21</sup> April 13, 1772.

<sup>22</sup> While Fages and Crespi were on their exploring expedition, Serra

## HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA

had received letters at Carmelo giving notice of the dearth of supplies in the southern missions, a condition which was inevitably involving the Monterey establishments as well. Fages returned from San Francisco on April 5 and the 13th he dispatched a pack-train south with fifteen packs of flour, under an escort with Crespi. This move but helped to aggravate the state of affairs at Monterey, and the bear hunt was the only solution.

<sup>23</sup> La Cañada de los Osos, so named on the first expedition of 1769, is located near the present site of the San Luis Obispo Mission, a goodly distance even today from Monterey, some fifty leagues or so.

<sup>24</sup> San Antonio Mission founded July 14, 1771, was one of these.

<sup>25</sup> José María Verdugo, a soldado de cuera, formerly at San Diego, acted as sponsor for baptism at Monterey July 13, 1772. He may have been one of the couriers with the mail from the south. He later became grantee of the Verdugo Rancho and was a nephew of Sergeant José Francisco de Ortega.

<sup>26</sup> Pinoles de sacate, cereal meal commonly used by the Indians, made from wild oats.

<sup>27</sup> During the month of August 1772, the paquebots San Carlos and the Principe, captained by Don Miguel del Pino, and Juan Pérez, reached San Diego with the greatly needed supplies. Due to adverse weather conditions the captain refused to attempt the voyage to Monterey. Late in August of the same year Fages and Serra started south to fetch the supplies. On the way they founded the mission of San Luis Obispo on September 1, leaving Fray Juan Caballer in charge and a small escort of one corporal, four soldiers and an Indian. The Comandante and the Padre Presidente arrived at San Gabriel on September 11 and reached San Diego on the 16th. Crespi who had been there since May, now left for Monterey with a pack train of provisions on September 27 with an escort under Corporal Guillermo Carrillo. Exasperated at the conduct of Fages who had for some time roused the Padre Presidente's ire, Serra now decided to go directly before Viceroy Bucareli with his grievances. He sailed from San Diego on the San Carlos October 19 and reached San Blas by November 4. On that same day in October Fages and Fray Francisco Dumetz started back for Monterey to meet the Principe whose captain Pérez had finally been prevailed upon to make the voyage north. It was on this trip, while chasing deserters, that Fages crossed over into the San Joaquin Valley and preceded Garcés into the Tulares.

<sup>28</sup> Coritas and coras are the Indian baskets for which the Santa Barbara Channel tribes were so noted.

<sup>29</sup> The Principe landed at Monterey some time in November of 1772.

<sup>30</sup> Nixtamal, ground corn.

## II. A LETTER OF FRAY CRESPI

THE following letter of Fray Juan Crespi, dated March 2, 1769, written from the mission of Nuestra Señora de Guadalupe to Fray Francisco Palou, was discovered in 1912 by the late Right Reverend Monsignor St. John O'Sullivan, shortly after he became resident pastor of the long-abandoned mission of San Juan de Capistrano. While searching for historical data in the "Libros de Misión" or parish registers which date back to 1776, he noticed that glued to the inside leather cover of the Second Book of Obituaries, there appeared to be a manuscript of some sort, with a blank sheet of paper pasted over it. In the course of time this blank sheet had become torn at the binding, and now exposed to view several lines of writing. By applying steam to the cover he succeeded in removing the first sheet and found this early letter penned in the irregular and complex hand of Crespi. For twenty years he tried to get a complete translation.

When I visited the mission in 1931 I came upon the letter, and together with the good padre spent many hours working on it. We subjected it to all kinds of light; even placed it under a violet ray machine which an obliging doctor offered for our use. In the process of pasting the letter on the naked leather cover, native glue was used and it streaked parts of it. Finally after a number of visits to San Juan we succeeded in getting all but six words, which were completely obliterated, but which we easily supplied from the context. Before the Monsignor's untimely death he gave me permission to publish it as it appears here, and I gladly dedicate it to him, a keen student of California history and tradition, the restorer of one of Serra's missions, and a worthy successor of the Franciscans.

As it is evident from the date, Crespi was then on his way north to join Captain Rivera y Moncada at Vellicatá in order to take up the march with the first detachment of the land expedition to San Diego. What a figure he must have made in the mayordomo's "chaps", a veritable padre on horseback, and we trust that Palou saw to it that the obliging mayordomo was amply rewarded for having lent Crespi so indispensable an article of frontier attire.

The letter is addressed on the reverse side:  
To the Most Reverend Father Lector Fray Francisco

HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA

Palou, May God guard him many years at his Mission of San Xavier. From the Missionary of La Purissima on his way to the frontier of heathendom.

*Thomas Workman Temple, II*



MISSION OF GUADALUPE  
THURSDAY, MARCH 2, 1769  
Viva Jhs. Ma. y Jph.

Very Reverend Father Lector and Fellow Student  
Fray Francisco Palou.

My dearest Fellow Student, friend, and Senor:

Last Tuesday evening at the Pueblo de San Miguel, <sup>1</sup> with the usual pleasure and appreciation, I received your Reverence's favor, along with the enclosed letter of our Padre Lector and Presidente Fray Junipero Serra. As to his request regarding the holy oil containers, I discussed the matter with Padre Lector Juan Sancho. <sup>2</sup> He has an extra set of them and has promised to let me have it. I shall see that they are filled with holy oils at the Mission at Santa Gertrudis, <sup>3</sup> as the Padre Presidente suggests in the postscript to his letter.

Day before yesterday at San Agustin, I met Padre Lector Sancho who was escorting his Indians, and they must have already arrived at our mission of La Purissima. From San Agustin the Indians continued on their way escorted by the "soldado de cuera" Leiba. From there the two of us retraced our steps to this mission. Thursday night we slept at San Miguel, eight leagues distant from this place, and yesterday we arrived here at 11 o'clock in the morning.

Today Thursday I remain to rest here, and with the help of God will soon resume my journey tomorrow Friday, so as to arrive this Saturday at San Ygnacio. Thanks be to God we continue to enjoy good health; nothing worthy of mention, except that my eye is much relieved. The unmarried Indians are happy as usual and my escort the soldier Miguel Islas, up to this point has served me well. He pleases me greatly and without doubt is an honorable man, from what I have observed of him.

Padre Lector Sancho tells me that more than twenty days <sup>4</sup> ago, the Indians of the San Pedro rancheria, which belongs to this mission, espied a large ship sailing northward. Without doubt it was the Paquebot San Carlos, and this being the case,

## HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA

with favorable winds behind, it must already have landed at the Port of San Diego, or at least be at the very gates of that harbor.

Padre Sancho received mail written at Santa Maria de los Angeles \* by Padre Miguel Campa, along with Captain Rivera y Moncada's letter, in which Padre Campa says that the Captain has been repeatedly instructed by the Visitador General to penetrate into the interior, in search of the Port of San Diego. Also Don Fernando awaits my arrival as soon as possible at Vellicatá, \* so as to start on the expedition. With this request in mind, I shall strive to proceed northward as soon as I can, and as quickly as the necessary stops for rest at the missions may permit.

Tomorrow Friday with God's grace, we shall continue our march for San Ygnacio \* to see if we can possibly reach that mission this Saturday. I trust that I shall not forget the message which Your Reverence gave me for Padre Campa.

The mayordomo Don Francisco Castro loaned me some leather "chaps" which he very willingly offered for the journey, if they fitted me, suggesting that I should take them as they would prove indispensable. So with the good wishes of Señor Castro I am using them on the march. But let me remind Your Reverence that new ones should be made for Don Francisco. There is no suitable leather at the mission for this purpose, and no reason why he should be without them, just to oblige me. I gave Don Francisco an order on the mission for new ones, but he may not get them in case no Minister is assigned to my mission. So I repeat that Your Reverence see to it that they are made for him.

Receive the most affectionate regards of Padre Sancho, and pass them on to Don Francisco. The four Indians of La Purissima are returning with their three women, the burro, and other supplies that came along with them. I beg that Your Reverence keep me always present in your thoughts, and I pray God may preserve and watch over you many years to come.

## A LETTER OF FRAY CRESPI

Your ever affectionate fellow student and friend, kisses  
the hand of Your Reverence with all his heart.

From this Mission of Guadalupe, March 2, 1769.

Fray Juan Crespi.

<sup>1</sup> The Pueblo de San Miguel was a "visita" some 8 leagues south of the Mission of Nuestra Señora de Guadalupe, from where Crespi writes this letter. He was one of three Missionaries chosen by Serra to take part in the land Expedition, and had left his Mission of La Purissima at the order of the Padre Presidente, on February 21, 1768. He was to meet Rivera at Santa Maria de Los Angeles, northernmost of the former Jesuit establishments, and reached that point on March 22nd, two days before the first detachment of the land party started for San Diego.

<sup>2</sup> Padre Lector Juan Sancho had been known to Serra since childhood. He was a Master of Arts, ex-Professor of Philosophy and later Lector of Theology in the University of Mallorca. He had been one of the original sixteen "Fernandos" who had come to take over Baja California missions, on the expulsion of the Jesuits, and was assigned to Nuestra Señora de Guadalupe by Serra.

<sup>3</sup> Santa Gertrudis Mission is about fifty leagues north of Guadalupe near the present boundary between the northern and southern districts of Baja California.

<sup>4</sup> This was about February 10th, some thirty days after the "San Carlos" had left La Paz via Cape San Lucas, for the Port of San Diego.

<sup>5</sup> Santa Maria de Los Angeles was the rendezvous of Rivera and Fray Miguel de la Campa, the other missionary chosen by Serra for the Conquest. Here too were to come Crespi, Portolá and Serra. Campa had originally been assigned to the San Ygnacio Mission but was ordered to join Rivera and his men. He was left in charge of the new Mission of San Fernando de Vellicatá, some eighteen leagues north of Santa Maria, founded by Serra on May 14, 1769.

Rivera had chosen this spot as it offered better facilities for water, wood and pasture.

### III. A LETTER FROM SERGEANT ORTEGA TO GOVERNOR ARONA LISTING THE "SOLDADOS DE CUERA" OF THE EXPEDITION OF 1769

THIS letter of the intrepid pathfinder of Portola's expedition of 1769, Sergeant Don Joseph de Ortega, is in the nature of a report on conditions at the new establishment of San Diego, a year and a half after its foundation. It is written to Governor Don Mathias Arona who succeeded Portolá in the administration of the Californias. It also contains a list of the "soldados de cuera" or leather-jacket soldiers then stationed at San Diego and Monterey. These had accompanied Captain Rivera y Moncada and Portolá from their presidio of Loreto in quest of the ports of San Diego and Monterey. Some of them soon returned to their presidio, but others remained here permanently and reared our veritable first California families. Thus the document not only gives early historical data on the conquest, but may also be regarded as the foundation stone on which the genealogies of the Spanish Californians may be built.

Ortega's record is too well known to need repetition here, but for a better understanding of his letter it is necessary to say that after his return from Portolá's fruitless search for Monterey, on January 24, 1770, he remained at San Diego until the time of his departure for Loreto in September. On February 11th Captain Rivera set out from the port for the newly established mission of San Fernando de Vellicatá, with 20 soldiers and some muleteers to bring up surplus supplies, mules, and more men if possible. On Portolá's departure in April on his expeditions to Monterey, Ortega was left at the mission and camp of San Diego with but eight "soldados de cuera", and remained in command until Rivera's arrival from the south in the first week of July. Fray Fernando Parron and Fray Francisco Gomez had been left in charge of the new mission by Serra on his departure for Monterey with Captain Juan Perez on the "Santa Antonia".

Ortega has given us a clear picture of prevailing conditions



## A LETTER FROM SERGEANT ORTEGA

at the oldest Spanish settlement in "La Nueva California", and intimately describes the patient efforts of the sons of St. Francis to bring the light of faith to the stubbornest nation to convert in all the Californias, the Dieguinos. Truly the Indians of San Diego were "of a daring and arrogant nature", for in November of 1775 Ortega was himself to witness the drenching of California's pristine soil with the blood of her first martyr, Fray Luis Jayme. Ortega further describes those events, "all of which he saw, much of which he was", to paraphrase the words of Aeneas, and leaves us a lasting record of the feeble efforts of Spain to settle permanently in this new land.

This letter was translated from a copy of the original in the *Archivo General*, Mexico, Sec. Californias, Vol. 76.

*Thomas Workman Temple II.*

Royal Presidio of Loreto, 10 Oct., 1770

My dear Sir:

The previous letter which I wrote to Your Excellency was most concise, for as soon as I dismounted from my horse I took pen in hand and confined myself solely to giving you an account of the dire conditions prevailing at San Diego, for whose relief my captain was bending every effort. But now realizing that I should render a fuller report, for the lack of space and my failing health gave me no opportunity then, I do so at this time, begging the indulgence of Your Excellency for the reasons expressed.

Late in the afternoon of the second day of September, I set out from the port and mission of San Diego, and on the twelfth of the same month I arrived at San Fernando a little after mid-day, bearing my captain's orders. These I now send to Your Excellency, and you will find listed therein the names of the mule-drivers and the number of mules taken; all arrived without accident at San Diego.

His Majesty's paquebot named the *San Carlos* set sail from

## HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA

that port about noon on the first day of August (last past), leaking about four inches of water. Señor Comandante Don Vicente Vila attributed this accident to the ship having dragged her keel. After it sailed a good northwest wind came up, and lasted about a week, during which time she must have made much headway.

From the enclosed list Your Excellency may see the small number of "soldados de cuera" that went on to Monte Rey, and those who were left of my company at the Port of San Diego. I repeat those who went north were the same ones as accompanied my governor, Don Gaspar de Portolá, for I wish to inform Your Excellency that up to the time of my departure nothing definite had been settled regarding whether more men were to go to Monte Rey nor whether they should follow later.

A few days before I left, my captain dispatched six "soldados de cuera" (naming one as corporal) to the brea or asphaltum pits, on a line with the roadstead of San Pedro, whence they were to bring back a small pack-load of pitch to be sent to Your Excellency; the intention being, subject to your orders, to experiment with it and see if it can be used for the careening of ships. The procuring of this pitch cost the life of at least one savage, and it is not known whether another died also. Certain it is that his leg was shattered by a bullet, and those who made this trip assured us that they were forced to punish many others who barred their way. The heathen attempted to steal whatever the soldiers carried, until finally they scattered, discharging their arrows. But when they saw two of their number fall, they threw down their arms and took to flight. I brought the pitch as far as San Fernando and notified the lieutenant about it.

The Indians of San Diego are of a daring and arrogant nature, very mercenary and deeply steeped in their heathen practices. They promise but little hope of embracing the comforting solace of the law of God, a respect for which Our Catholic Monarch endeavors to infuse in them by means of his troops, and through his evangelic laborers, zealous champions of the honor of God. These latter, I assure Your Excel-

## A LETTER FROM SERGEANT ORTEGA

lency labor fervently day by day in that mystic vineyard availing themselves of gifts and caresses, signs and manifestations in an effort to gain their good will. In spite of all this, their only reward so far has been to see from day to day a few of the heathen come to the camp unarmed (a practice we have tried to impose on them, and after much patience have succeeded in doing).

This daily communication with the Reverend Fathers is the greatest hope they offer. The Fathers have already made some of them understand that there is a God, the creator of heaven and earth, and thus not only the Diegueños have come but also those of other nations, solely for the purpose of seeing the image of Our Lord Jesus Christ crucified, and that of His Most Holy Mother. But what has filled them most with wonder has been the image of the Infant Jesus, who I believe must shower them with His Most Holy Grace which they already manifest judging from the great joy with which they gaze on Him.

There has been one heathen who asked the Reverend Father Gomez if the infant grew to manhood, if He is the one hanging upon the Cross, if He descended from heaven, and if He took a long time to return to earth. The missionaries endeavored to answer all his questions, and have done their utmost to enlighten those miserable Indians. What has proved the greatest setback in winning them over has been the diversity of tongues, for in this regard they have shown themselves most obstinate. The missionaries have tried to overcome this, by winning as best they could the confidence of three little heathen of from nine to ten years of age. But when the adults see them treated so kindly, for day and night they assist the Fathers, who endeavor to teach them the catechism, they frighten and lure the young ones away from the mission so that if these insist upon staying, they spirit them away to other *rancherías*, and nothing more is seen of them.

In the vicinity of San Diego at a distance of five or six leagues there have been seen, or rather I have seen, at least ten *rancherías* numbering thousands. These people, or better

## HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA

said, these selfish heathen, cast their wily snares far and wide, and whenever they find a favorable opportunity, try to take advantage of it. I was entrusted with the charge of the mission guard and camp at San Diego, and only in fulfillment of my duty do I now report to Your Excellency, that every day I was aware that they wanted to attack us, and burn down our huts, and I was even told that all those *rancherias* were united in this fiendish design. Their actions gave us clear evidence of this, for great numbers of heathen would gather around, armed and using threatening gestures. But we were ever on the alert with our weapons, for only nine of us remained there after my governor set out for Monte Rey. And since of this number some had to tend and pasture the horses, and others had to keep the ship supplied with fresh water and work at other necessary tasks, only four of us at the most would be left on active duty, none of us any too well.

As a result, Señor, the truth of the matter is that in order to perpetuate the glory of the troops of Our Lord and Master, those outposts must be strengthened with a strong force of soldiers, so that whenever the heathen make a display of their power, it may be possible to chastise and make an example of them, and thus everything could be made much easier while on the other hand, were they to attack now, the only resort is to bar the doors, and much bloodshed might result in defending them.

Truly I say to Your Excellency that I am my master's servant, and with but a single soldier I blazed a trail as far as San Diego, and would have made my way ever farther, in the knowledge that whenever my life could render a service to God and my king, I would consider myself the most fortunate of men. But now, Señor, due to divine providence, my health is such that I believe Your Excellency must clearly see that my strength is waning and realize that I am in need of a new conquest.

From San Juan de Dios to the Rio Jesus de los Temblores, the country abounds in heathen of the same species described above. This is a stretch of about 144 leagues. From there



## A LETTER FROM SERGEANT ORTEGA

northward to Monte Rey and as far as San Francisco, the land is peopled by a different nation or nations more pacific in nature, yet withal more mercenary. On the other side of the port of San Francisco we came across nine Indians, whom we followed up to that point, men of a very haughty nature, and great warriors, judging from their appearance. On the road from San Diego to San Fernando nothing happened worthy of mention to Your Excellency. I had the good fortune to come through without a mishap. Accidents are not apt to happen while traveling in light marching order, unless one is careless in making camp near the *rancherías*. On the other hand, traveling with a pack-train, since one must proceed by short marches, the heathen have a chance to spread the alarm, and unite the neighboring nations. Thus a strong escort of men is indispensable, some for guarding the camp and watching the mules, others as guards on the road for the pack-train and the horses. And, as many armed heathen are apt to follow the train, treating with the men and congregating at the stopping places, it is not an easy task to leave them behind and retire gracefully.

I have no news for Your Excellency from Monte Rey, for we have no other account than that brought by Velasquez, and as I know that he reported to Your Excellency, he must have given you all the details.

I trust that Your Excellency is enjoying good health, for my own is ever ready to pray God to keep you many years.\*

Royal Presidio of Loreto, October 10, 1770.

Your most obedient subject who venerates you, kisses the hand of Your Excellency.

Josseph Francisco de Ortega (rubric).

Senor Don Mathias de Armona

## LIST OF THE CREW OF HIS MAJESTY'S *PAQUEBOT* NAMED THE *SAN CARLOS*

Senor Comandante Don Vicente Vila

Pilot Don Joseph Canizares

Sailors

## HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA

Joseph el "viejo"  
Ygnacio Francisco Morillo  
Diego Guainamota  
Bautista Carabajal  
N. Valenzuela  
One negro cook.

This not being a sufficient crew, the Senor Comandante asked my captain for more men, which he furnished as follows:

Joseph Camacho, *soldado de cuera*  
Juan Joseph Carpio, Indian vaquero from Loreto  
Juan Antonio Carpio, Indian vaquero from Loreto  
Narciso Verdugo, muleteer  
Three California Indians from the Mission of San Ygnacio.

### LIST OF THE SOLDIERS WHICH HAVE RECENTLY COME WITH THE PACK TRAIN FROM THE PORT OF SAN DIEGO

Sergeant Joseph Francisco de Ortega, with a touch of the scurvy  
Bernardino Alvarado, item  
Juan Bautista Alvarado, item  
Juan Joseph Dominguez, item  
Joseph Gabriel de Arce, advanced in years and suffering from a chest injury  
Sebastian Manriquez, advanced in years and in broken health, already on the pension list.

### LIST OF THE *SOLDADOS DE CUERA* STATIONED AT THE PORTS OF SAN DIEGO AND MONTEREY

At San Carlos de Monterey:  
Corporal Mariano Carrillo  
Joseph Maria Gongora

A LETTER FROM SERGEANT ORTEGA

Anastacio Xavier Verduzco  
Alejandro de Soto  
Carlos Rubio, married  
Antonio Cota  
Francisco Xavier Aguilar.

At the port of San Diego:

Captain Don Fernando de Rivera y Moncada, married  
Corporal Guillermo Carrillo  
Juan Joseph Robles  
Bernardo Rubio, married, and suffering from scurvy  
Matheo Ygnacio de Soto  
Juan Maria Miranda, married  
Francisco de Avila  
Raphael Hernández  
Marcelo Bravo

Nicolás Antonio Zambrano

Joseph Ygnacio Olivera  
Mariano de la Luz Verdugo  
Alejo Antonio Gonzáles  
Juan de Osuna, married, and suffering from fever  
Sebastian Alvitre  
Andrés Cota, married  
José Joaquin Espinosa, married  
Agustin Castelo.

To this list may be added the following men who are known to have taken part in the Expedition of 1769, yet who were not at either San Diego or Monterey at the time of Ortega's letter.

Joseph Velásquez, who was the first courier from Monterey overland to Loreto, and left for the south June 14, 1770

Juan Bautista Valdés, who afterwards accompanied Anza on his first expedition to Monterey in 1774, and also acted as a courier for the captain

Miguel Islas, who accompanied Crespi to San Diego, with Rivera

Pedro Amador.

## HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA

<sup>1</sup> San Fernando (de Vellicatá) was the site of the first mission established by Serra on his way north to San Diego on May 14, 1769, about 121 leagues south of the port. It is 18 leagues north of the mission of Nuestra Señora de Los Angeles, a short distance from the San Luis Bay, on the Gulf side on the peninsula, where the launches from Loreto could readily bring up supplies for the northern establishments.

<sup>2</sup> The brea or asphaltum pits are mentioned by Crespi in his diary, entry for August 3, 1769 in Palóu's Noticias, Vol. ii, p. 124.

<sup>3</sup> Fray Francisco Gómez and his companion Fray Fernando Parró, had been left in charge of the San Diego Mission when Serra embarked with Pérez for Monterey.

<sup>4</sup> San Juan de Dios was an arroyo some six leagues north of San Fernando de Vellicatá, so named by the Jesuit Father Wenceselao Link on his expedition of 1776. Rio Jesus de los Temblores was the Santa Ana River.

<sup>5</sup> Velasquez was the soldier courier who left Monterey with the news of the formal occupation of the port by the Spaniards, on June 14, 1770 for Loreto. A day's march from San Diego Velasquez and his companion a sailor, met Rivera returning with his men from San Fernando with the mules and supplies. The captain now gave Velasquez an additional escort of five soldiers, and they reached the southern part of the peninsula at the mission of Todos Santos, where Governor Armona happened to be, on August 2nd of the same year.



## THE REMINISCENCES OF MELVILLE DOZIER

THE month of May in our family seemed to have been a favorite month in which to commence life. My mother was born on May 21, 1811, my brother Gaillard on May 5, 1833, my sister Virginia on May 22, 1838, my sister Emeline on May 13, 1840, and I on May 22, 1846, all in Georgetown, South Carolina, one of the oldest settlements in the south, and named in honor of King George of England.

This town is situated on a beautiful estuary of the Atlantic Ocean, known as Wingah Bay, formed by the confluence of three of the leading rivers of the state, the Santee, the Congaree, and the Pee Dee. It is about sixty miles north of the city of Charleston in the same latitude as Los Angeles, California, and was formerly the chief port for the shipment of rice, of which South Carolina produced more than any other state, and chiefly in the region contributory to Georgetown.

The cultivation of rice requires the frequent application of great quantities of water, and it is necessary that at intervals the land should be submerged for several days at a time. The contour of the country in what we called the lowlands of the state was peculiarly adapted to this feature of rice cultivation. These rivers having a very slight fall for many miles above the bay, were subject to tidal reaction from the ocean, causing the waters to spread out over the adjacent swamps, which could be controlled by flood gates constructed in the rivers; thus enabling the rice planters to keep their lands submerged as long as desirable, and also to drain them at pleasure.

This also afforded the additional advantage of enriching the soil by the deposit of silt from the rivers; thus making the application of a fertilizer unnecessary. Many square miles in that section of the state were formerly devoted almost exclusively to the cultivation of rice, and the quality of the grain was recognized as superior to that produced in any other portion of the world. In this respect, however, the old Palmetto State has undergone a decided change in the years since the

## HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA

Civil War. The absence of slave labor, together with the increased production of rice in foreign countries, especially in Asia, has made rice culture in America less profitable, and the port of Georgetown has felt the force of changed conditions very decidedly.

In Georgetown my father was regarded as the leading lawyer at the bar, and was that community's representative in the state senate for many years. So great, however, was the strain of his legal duties, especially upon his voice, that he found it necessary in the prime of his practice to retire from his profession, and to assume the life of a southern planter, a vocation in those days regarded as of the highest dignity and independence. Consequently he purchased a tract of six thousand acres of land, bordering on the Western bank of the Pee Dee river in Williamsburg County, and removed in my early childhood to the home about which all of my memories cluster, and there reared his family of ten children under conditions regarded as ideal in our old unique pre-war Southern civilization.

The owner of several hundred slaves had to make ample provision for their accommodation as well as for their labor. This involved the construction of a large number of cabins, for each family had a house of its own, arranged in rows with streets between; also a home with suitable outhouses for the overseer of the plantation, besides a gin house, cotton press, blacksmith and carpenter shops, barns, stables, carriage houses, corrals, etc. So it can readily be seen that a southern plantation was a village in itself.

In addition to these, the "big house" where the owner's family resided must be an imposing structure, with ample grounds for ornamental and domestic uses, together with appropriate outhouses, such as kitchen, dwellings for house servants, dairy, smokehouse, poultry houses, fuel house, vegetable garden, orchard, etc., making altogether a social unit pretty nearly complete in all of its aspects where there was much to do and many hands to do it.

When to these are added many horses, mules, cattle, hogs,

## MELVILLE DOZIER

sheep, goats, and poultry of all kinds, including chickens, ducks, turkeys, geese, guinea fowls, pea fowls, and pigeons, with of course the inevitable quota of dogs and cats, and the equally essential supply of guns, fishing rods, canoes, etc., you cannot wonder that the old pre-war southern civilization was unique, nor can you blame an old southern man reared under those conditions, for recalling the dear old home of his boyhood with a fervor and a love that never can perish. If to all those externals you add the high sense of honor and virtue, of courtesy and courage and sympathy, inculcated in the minds of the youth from infancy to maturity, you have a picture of social happiness, contentment and patriotism that has never been surpassed in the history of the world.

I shall never cease to thank God that the youthful days of my life, and all the days of my scholastic preparation for life, were spent in an environment like this. If everything else were blotted from my memory I am sure this would remain. Among the practical arts of which a normal southern boy was supposed to acquire a fair mastery early in life were those of horsemanship, gunning, swimming, and fishing, in the attainment of which he had every opportunity and encouragement. On the better equipped plantations each boy was supposed to have his own saddle horse, gun, and fishing cane, and to know how to use them. Quite a variety of game was available in the region of our home, including deer, wild turkeys, foxes, raccoons, 'possums, squirrels, rabbits, quail, and ducks. The small boys usually limited their hunting to squirrels and rabbits, shooting the former, and catching the latter by chasing with dogs; and there was a lot of sport in each. We did not have the ground squirrel, so abundant in California, but two varieties of tree squirrel: the cat squirrel and the fox squirrel. Of the latter there were three kinds: the gray, the black, and the red. These were much larger than the cat squirrel, but not so abundant, nor as desirable for eating.

Deer were not abundant there in my day, and to kill his first buck was quite a feather in a boy's cap. They were

## HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA

hunted by stationing the hunters at different stands on the course the deer would be supposed to take when started by the "driver" who would have charge of the dogs; and the deer would seldom fail to pass by one or more of the stands. The extreme caution and watchfulness of a deer when he hears the hounds barking on his trail, makes it necessary for the hunter to hide himself if possible, and to keep perfectly quiet.

The importance attached to this rule was quite remarkably illustrated on one occasion when my father and a brother of his were hunting deer. My father had a stand in a group of pine trees, and being in the autumn the ground was thickly covered with pine needles making a soft cushion beneath his feet. After standing there in perfect stillness for some time he happened to look down at his feet, and saw to his astonishment that he was standing squarely on the body of a large rattlesnake; the snake being almost of the same color as the pine straw. The chill of the early morning air, and the softness of the bed of pine needles had served to keep the venomous creature quiet.

My father then reasoned to himself as follows: "If I step off the snake the movement might stir him to action, and he might bite me before I get out of his reach. If I shoot him the deer will be warned by the report of the gun, and will not come my way." While deliberating about the better course his eye fell upon another large rattlesnake a few feet away! His conclusion was then quickly reached. He emptied one barrel of his gun in the head of the snake on which he was standing, and with the other blew the head off its mate, but he missed the chance to get a shot at the deer.

Soon after, he heard the report of his brother's gun, followed by a whoop which signified that he had bagged the buck. Hastening to that stand what was his amazement to find the deer and the hunter in deadly combat! As was the custom, the hunter had hastened to the deer as soon as he fell, and grasping him by the antler with one hand, with the other he drew his knife to cut the deer's throat, but no



## MELVILLE DOZIER

sooner had the sharp knife pierced his hide than the great buck sprang to his feet and furiously attacked the man. Fortunately my Uncle Leonard was a large and powerful man, and grasping the buck by his antlers he had it "nip and tuck" in a life and death struggle. By the time my father reached the scene of the deadly conflict, his brother was almost exhausted, for the furious and powerful animal had only been stunned by the shot that floored him. Of course it took but a moment for my father to grasp the situation and to deliver a charge of buckshot where it would do the most good. So he got the deer and the rattlesnakes, too. The perils of that day's hunt, however, did not lessen their enthusiasm for the chase.

What was regarded as one of the finest sports known to the hunter in the South was that which still holds the first rank among the aristocratic sportsmen of England, the chase of the fox with a pack of hounds. Starting out by daylight, trail easier to follow, when the saddle horses are eager for the fray, when the pack responds with their music to the sound of the horn; then, my brother, if ever a man or a boy when the dew is still on the grass, which makes the fox's feels a thrill of joy run down his spine, it is in a moment like that! The open pine forest in our section of South Carolina lent itself splendidly to that particular sport, and many a time did we boys enjoy it to the full; coming home with one or more foxes strung to our saddles, and as hungry as wolves.

It was against the rule to shoot a fox in the chase, the fun being in chasing him to the finish, but it was customary to take a few firearms along in the event that we should jump a wild cat instead of a fox. A wild cat is one of the worst known fighters and many a good dog has been seriously injured by his vicious teeth and claws. One day I was on a fox hunt with my brother Edward and several other young men of the neighborhood, when we heard in the distance the barking of dogs, as if in chase. We knew at once that some other party was out, and had some sort of game on the run. Put-

## HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA

ting spurs to our horses and followed by our hounds, we soon came upon the party in pursuit; and to our amazement found that they were after a large black bear. The dogs all around him were pinching his legs as he ran, and at every pinch were knocked heels over head by the bear. Our dogs joined in the fray just as the bear reached the edge of a dense copse of trees and underbrush. It became too hot for Mr. Bruin, and he took to a tree.

There were several rifles in the party, but we wanted to see the fun, and so we did not shoot. When the bear went up the tree the hunters set up a yell and such a yell! The poor bear was so frightened by that din of unearthly sound that he came sliding down the tree tail first and no sooner had he hit the ground than he was literally covered by dogs, who in broke forth and the poor frightened bear came sliding down quick return were scattered helter skelter by the strong arms of the infuriated beast. Then he took to the tree again and the dogs gave him a boost with their sharp teeth before he got out of their reach. But no sooner had he reached the first limb upon which he could rest than that unearthly yell again again into that mass of angry dogs. This was repeated several times; when our hard hearts relented, fearing that some valuable dog would be injured in the melee. So one of the boys put a bullet through his heart, and the bear fell dead at the foot of the tree.

We butchered him on the spot; the fellow who shot him taking the hide, and the rest of us taking chunks of meat from the carcass to carry home as evidence that we had killed a bear; for no bear had been seen or heard of in that section for at least a half of a century, and we needed concrete evidence to back up our word. The puzzle as to where the animal came from has never been solved, but it was soon discovered in the neighborhood that he had been feasting on the sheep and hogs of the farmers during his short stay there. As a matter of curiosity we had some of the meat cooked for dinner; but on trying it we were glad that some other meat had been prepared for that meal.

## MELVILLE DOZIER

It may be of interest to state that our plantation was the scene of some of the historic events of the Revolutionary struggle with Great Britain. A portion of the estate consisted of an island of several thousand acres known as Snow's Island, which was bounded by the Pee Dee River, Clark's Creek, and Snow Lake, each of which were great fishing and swimming centers, and hunting grounds for wild ducks. This island, except where cleared for cultivation, was covered by a dense growth of trees and underbrush, and constituted the hunting ground for deer, raccoons, and wild turkeys.

The predominant tree of that forest was the cypress, large tree of peculiar form and used exclusively for shingles. The peculiarity of its form consisted in a very large hollow base, tapering to an ordinary size some fifteen or twenty feet above the opening, five or six feet high, constituting an excellent natural doorway into a spacious and comfortable room. In one of these tree houses, General Francis Marion, known to the British as the "Swamp Fox" made his headquarters while operating in that part of South Carolina and defying British pursuit or capture. What was said to be the identical tree was still standing during my boyhood.

It was in that swamp that a British officer, under a flag of truce, was conducted to Marion's headquarters where they tried to persuade him to surrender. While there he was invited to dine with Marion and his officers and the meal consisting of sweet potatoes and acorns was served on a log used as a table. The old "Swamp Fox" treated with great courtesy the British officer, but of course spurned the proposition to surrender, and when the latter returned to his own headquarters he reported that it would be absolutely impossible to conquer a foe that could live in a swamp and subsist on acorns and sweet potatoes.

In cultivating the land that was cleared on this island, we found a number of relics of the Revolutionary struggle, consisting chiefly of musket barrels and balls. One of these musket barrels, in an unusually good state of preservation, we took home with us; mounted it on a wooden carriage with block

## HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA

wheels sawed from a small log; loaded it with gun powder several inches deep, and thoroughly rammed it down with dry moss. This we would fire off at daybreak every Christmas morning, to arouse the whole plantation with a thundering "Merry Christmas".

It would have made a gem for the movie screen had one been able to take a picture of that scene. Half a dozen boys would gleefully get the "Old Cannon" as we called it, ready to shoot. When it was "all set" with plenty of powder at the touch hole one of us, as a special privilege and honor, would take a ten-foot pole with a notch in one end into which a red-hot piece of charcoal was placed, and would stand as far away as the pole and an outstretched arm would permit, while the others would scamper away to a safe distance, for fear that the old army piece might burst. And it is a wonder it did not burst, for the explosion sounded in the still of daybreak as that of a real cannon, and the glorious echoes came rolling back from the woods of old Sockee a mile away; the richest music that a boy could hear. That crude, but dear, old cannon was at the old home when I left it in 1868, and had faithfully ushered in every Christmas day for many years.

This leads me to say a word about the observance of Christmas in the South. It was the "day of days" of all the year; the homecoming day and the day of feasting and good will. The boys reveled in their fire crackers, and in their mock military marching in which they wore cocked hats made of paper and adorned with feathers from a rooster's tail. We also carried wooden guns, with a hole bored in the end to carry a fire cracker. It was the day for presenting gifts, and for the slaves to feel at liberty to come to the "big house" and "Catch Mar-sa or Missus" with a jolly "Merry Christmas", for if they could get that word in first, they were entitled to a gift.

At dinner time the table would fairly groan under the load of good things to eat, and probably some of the eaters would groan with stomach aches during the night. In the North, Thanksgiving Day was observed more like Christmas Day in the South. But the judgment of later years causes me to be-



## MELVILLE DOZIER

lieve that neither is very appropriate. Each occasion calls for reverence and worship rather than sport and jollification.

As to the educational facilities in my youth, they were far less efficient than at present. In many of the Southern States the public school system was not introduced until after the Civil War; so that children of poor families had to depend upon the education they could get at home. There were, however, excellent institutions of learning under private management, and nearly every state had its military academy and its state university. Many of the academies and colleges were under denominational control.

Living in the country, many miles from town, none of these were available to the younger children of our family; so our father had a school house constructed on the premises. He hired and boarded a teacher, and threw the school open to all of the neighborhood. This gave a good elementary foundation to those who could not afford to go away from home for a higher education and fitted those for more advanced work who could afford it.

Fortunately, our family belonged to the latter class, and our father, himself a graduate of the State University, was a strong believer in higher education. So that, when the Civil War broke out, the eldest brother, a graduate of the U. S. Naval Academy at Annapolis, was an officer in the U. S. Navy; the second brother, a graduate of the University of Virginia, was practicing law; the third, a graduate of the South Carolina Military Academy and of Oglethorpe Medical College, was practicing medicine; the only sister, a graduate of the Murfreesboro Institute, North Carolina, was living at home; the next two brothers were cadets at the State Military Academy at Charleston, South Carolina. I was a student at the preparatory school of Furman University, in Greenville, South Carolina, and the three younger brothers were attending the private school at home.

This was the situation in our family when that awful storm of political strife and hatred broke over our devoted country and changed the whole course of American history.

## HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA

As is well known, the question of the extension of slavery, and the question of state rights, including the right of secession, had been the bone of increasingly bitter contention between North and South for a number of years, and both sections had thrown down the gauntlet in the presidential nominations of 1860. The election of Abraham Lincoln was therefore the challenge to the South to submit to the northern view on these questions, or to carry into effect the extreme view of secession from the Union.

While the Southern people were not united in believing in the wisdom of secession, they were practically unanimous in their belief in the right of secession. They had been reared in the doctrine of state rights, which contended that since the Union had been voluntarily entered into by each individual and independent state under terms of a written compact, known as the Constitution, each state retained its individual right to withdraw from the Union when it believed that the terms of the contract of union had been violated. The same attitude had been taken by some of the New England states much earlier in the history of the country, but the inevitable effect was to divide section against section, to the serious injury of each and to the vital detriment of the country as a whole.

But the people of South Carolina were practically a unit in believing that the time had come when they should assert what they regarded as their constitutional right to set up a government of their own.

Whatever may be thought of the wisdom of such a course, no one can rightfully question its sincerity and its courage. Not knowing whether any other state would follow her example, it was no small matter for this little state to set up an independent republic in the face of an overwhelming opposition on the part of the country as a whole. No group of people, reared with such high ideals of manhood and patriotism as had characterized Carolinians from the beginning of their history, could take so perilous a step unless they were actuated by the same high and noble motives that induced the original thirteen colonies, to which they belonged, to declare

## MELVILLE DOZIER

their independence from Great Britain.

So a convention of the people was called to consider this momentous question, and it met in the city of Columbia, the capital of the state. My father was appointed head of the delegation that represented our county of Williamsburg. While in session at Columbia an epidemic of smallpox broke out in the city, and the convention fearing that its deliberations might be interrupted, adjourned to the city of Charleston. There, on the 20th day of December, 1860, the Ordinance of Secession was unanimously adopted. The original of this historic document is among the relics of the Civil War placed in the South Carolina room of the building in Richmond, Virginia, that Jefferson Davis occupied while he was president of the Confederacy. That building is public property, and is dedicated exclusively to the preservation of mementos of that tragic period of our history.

Within a few months several other southern states passed similar ordinances, and amidst intense excitement preparations were begun for what seemed inevitable war. In the harbor of Charleston stood several fortresses occupied by U. S. troops: among these were Fort Sumter, Fort Moultrie, of revolutionary fame, and Fort Johnson. Consistent with her declaration of independence the state relinquished all rights of interest in fortresses outside of her territory, but claimed exclusive ownership and authority over all fortresses within her borders, such being necessary for her protection. Notice to this effect was given to the government at Washington which denied its validity, and which gave orders to Major Anderson, then in command of all the forces in Charleston Harbor, to concentrate his troops in Fort Sumter and prepare for its defense.

General P. G. T. Beauregard was put in command of all the Carolina troops, who were hastily gathered from all parts of the state in volunteer regiments. The abandoned forts of the harbor were occupied by some of these volunteers, and preparations continued for the impending struggle. A naval craft the "Floating Battery" consisted at one end of a large plat-

## HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA

form with an iron screen; and port holes through which the muzzles of the cannons projected, and at the rear proper machinery for propelling and guiding the craft. The purpose of this strange kind of battleship was to fight from various angles on the water's surface, while other armed points remained stationary, and to board Fort Sumter in case of surrender.

My eldest brother, Gaillard, who had resigned from the U. S. Navy when the state seceded, was placed in command of the floating battery which, for the time being, constituted the entire navy for the new government. Major Anderson called upon the War Department at Washington for reinforcements of men, ammunition, and supplies for Fort Sumter, and General Beauregard made preparations to prevent their delivery. As a part of this preparation a battalion of cadets from the State Military Academy in Charleston, among whom was my brother Anthony, were stationed at Fort Wagner, on Morris Island nearest the entrance to the harbor, and therefore the first point of contact with any approaching relief ship. They had not long to wait before the *Star of the West*, bearing the desired reinforcements made her appearance at the entrance. The cadets promptly turned loose their battery of cannon on her, and she wheeled about and took to sea.

This was the first shot of the Civil War. General Beauregard then gave notice to Major Anderson that unless he capitulated by a certain hour on the 12th of April a bombardment of Fort Sumter would be opened. The gallant major declined the offer, and at the appointed hour the Stars and Stripes were floating as proudly as ever over the fort. At the same hour the booming of cannons from the surrounding fortresses ushered in one of the most tragic fratricidal struggles that has ever marked the history of nations; a struggle, thank God, from which has emerged a nation more thoroughly united than ever, and destined to play the most important role in the development of the civilization of the world.

It is not my intention to recount the history of the Civil



## MELVILLE DOZIER

War, but this being a sort of family record in which the events of my own life were so closely entwined, and this war having marked the turning point in the life of each of its members, I feel that I must briefly state the part taken by my brothers and myself in this historic conflict.

My eldest brother, Gaillard, spent the first three years of war in the Confederate Navy, his time and efforts being chiefly devoted to guarding the cities on the coast, in running the blockade of these ports, and in conducting the traffic between the Confederacy and the Bermuda Islands. During the last year of the War, when the Confederacy was sorely pressed for men, he was transferred to the infantry forces, and served for the balance of the struggle with the army of General Robert E. Lee in Virginia. Though his work was dangerous, especially in running the blockade, he escaped bodily injury, and after the surrender returned to the family home in South Carolina where his wife and children had been cared for during the war.

My second brother, Cuttino, joined the Ninth Regiment of South Carolina Infantry, under Col. Graham, and was quickly sent to the front in Virginia. Cuttino saw much heavy fighting in the army of General Lee, the hero of the war. Some of his experience was tragic in the extreme. At the battle of Cold Harbor, which was a desperate hand to hand struggle, his regiment was ordered to charge the breastworks of the enemy. Being the "color bearer" of the regiment, he was the "guide" for their movements in executing the order, which was started in "double quick time". Before reaching the breastworks the order was given to "right about and retreat". The color bearer did not hear the order; and continued to advance at double quick speed.

Being shot through the neck he thought his jugular vein was severed; so as he ran he wrapped the folds of the flag about his neck to stay the flow of blood, and mounted the breastworks of the enemy all alone, to the astonishment both of himself and of the "Blue Coats" who were defending the stronghold. Of course he was taken prisoner and sent to the

## HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA

rear to have what was regarded as a mortal wound attended to. As is always true among brave men, his courage and intrepidity were loudly acclaimed, and received much praise in the northern press. The papers thinking his wound was fatal stated that he had died from the loss of blood, but the jugular vein not being cut, he recovered. After spending a year as a prisoner of war in Fort Delaware, New York, he was released after peace was declared. This brother at the battle of Fort Wagner, was also shot through the thigh by a bullet that barely missed the main artery of the limb; and in another battle was struck squarely over the heart, but a copy of the New Testament in his breast pocket stopped the ball in its deadly course.

My third brother, Leonard, being a physician was assigned to the medical corps, and served as a surgeon in the army of General Braxton Bragg whose operations, chiefly in the west, culminated in the famous battle above the clouds, on Look-out Mountain. These forces were later transferred to Lee's army in Virginia. This brother also had a close call for his life at the siege of Fort Wagner in Charleston Harbor. While the fort was under heavy bombardment, he was lying on the ground, supported by his elbow. A shell from one of the big guns, loaded with shrapnel, struck the ground immediately in front of him, and burst while burying itself in the ground beneath him. The force of the concussion lifted him to his feet, and several balls from the loaded shell were buried in his side. Fortunately, the resistance of the earth prevented the balls from penetrating the interior of his body, and they were extracted without great difficulty, but the wound, of course, disabled him for some time.

My fourth brother, Anthony, had a tragic experience. In 1862 he and my fifth brother, Edward, were cadets at the State Military Academy in Charleston, South Carolina. The war became so fierce that a large number of cadets resolved to withdraw from the institution (which was under the military control of the state) and organize a cavalry company to join the Confederate army.

This group of about one hundred and twenty young men,

*seventy-eight*

## MELVILLE DOZIER

between eighteen and twenty-one years of age, full of patriotic zeal and thoroughly drilled in military tactics and discipline, constituted one of the most dashing and effective units in the entire army. Of this company, Anthony was elected first lieutenant and Edward was made sergeant, and the company was assigned to "Wade Hampton's Legion". They were stationed on John's Island in the harbor of Charleston, where a body of Union forces had secured a foothold.

Of course it was but a short time before the opposing forces came into deadly collision. In the heat of the conflict, Anthony, being of an impetuous temperament and mounted upon a superb race horse which he loved with all his heart, plunged forward, and with brandishing saber literally cut his way through the ranks of the enemy, only to find himself in the rear of the Union forces, cut off from his own command. His predicament was extremely serious, and how to return to his own company was the problem to be solved. Anxious to save his beloved "Shark" as he called his noble charger, he rode quickly into a thick copse of woods, and dismounting hitched the horse to a tree. He resolved to get back to his company on foot and to recover his horse after the fight was over.

Having been seen by an infantry company of the enemy as he emerged from the woods, the company immediately struck out on a run to capture him. But being swift of foot, and making effective use of his revolver as he ran, the pursuers dropped out, one by one, until there was but one man left in pursuit. Seeing this Anthony stopped, and awaited a personal conflict. The Union soldier then stopped, and fired the last cartridge in his rifle, which cut a clip out of Anthony's chin. Seeing that he had not killed his antagonist, the soldier seemed to lose his head, and ran right by Anthony in the direction they had been going. Anthony who had also fired his last cartridge, then took up the chase after his pursuer. A small stream of water crossed their path and in the midst of that they came together in mortal combat. Having a dirk in his belt, Anthony plunged it into the body of his foe, who fell dead in the stream.

Seeing on the deceased a bulging haversack in which sol-

HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA

diers carried their rations, he quickly transferred it to himself and made his way to the canebrake which lined the edge of the island. There he resolved to await the coming of darkness before making his way to his own encampment, as he was still in the rear of the enemy's lines. Being desperately hungry, he hopefully opened the haversack only to find an old blue flannel shirt. His situation then assumed a more desperate phase. He had to stand in water in the canebrake and remain perfectly quiet, for he could hear the soldiers talking as they searched for him. When night came, he essayed to make his way back to the encampment of his comrades. He had not gone very far before he found the way blocked by the Union picket line, and he had to retreat to his hiding place in the canebrake. Here, standing in water, he spent the night and the next day desperately weary and without food. During that day he was also the object of an unsuccessful search by the Union troops.

When night came he realized that he must face either starvation or capture if he failed to reach the Confederate lines. So, with what strength he had left, he started again to work his way home. Passing the point at which he encountered the picket line the night before, he thought he was beyond the danger zone; when suddenly there arose around him a group of soldiers who had been waiting in ambush. One of them shot him in the shoulder and another struck him with the butt of his gun, and Anthony, being too weak for resistance, fell into their hands, prisoner of war.

On being taken to the headquarters of the commanding officer, he inquired about the splendid horse which he had hitched in the woods on the day of the battle. "Yes," said the general, "we found him and he is the finest horse I ever rode". Anthony then told him how he prized the animal, and pleaded with him to return the horse to its company, assuring him that he would receive in return the finest horse in the Confederate camp. "No, Sir, that is the horse I have been looking for ever since the war commenced, and he will be my saddle horse to the end of the war." But the tragedy did not end there. Having been captured within the lines of the enemy, he was charg-



## MELVILLE DOZIER

ed with being a spy, which if proven, meant death. A court martial was held to investigate the charge. His only witnesses were men with whom he had been in personal combat in the struggle, but these testified to the facts and he was not convicted. He was then sent to Washington City, and to his surprise the charges of being a spy were sent along. So he had to face another court martial there. Because of the absence of the witnesses who had met him in the conflict, this was more difficult to confront than the first trial. But the truth finally prevailed, and he was transferred to Fort Delaware, in New York.

Not long after his admission to the Fort Delaware prison he got hold of a copy of the Philadelphia Press, in which was an impressive account of the lone charge and capture of the color bearer of the 9th South Carolina regiment at the battle of Cold Harbor. It related how the Confederate had wrapped the colors about his neck to stay the flow of blood from a "mortal wound" and mentioned his brother's name. Of course, he mourned his brother as dead, which added greatly to the depression incident to his imprisonment. But imagine his astonishment when, a few weeks later, while walking across the parade ground of the fort, a hand from the rear slapped him on the shoulder, and a familiar voice said, "Hello, Anthony, what are you doing here?" That meeting was tragic indeed! The two brothers told their respective stories, and rejoiced that they could at least be together during their confinement as prisoners of war.

But even this lingering hope was doomed to be dashed by a circumstance that well illustrates the perils and cruelties of war. About this time four young Union officers were arrested in Richmond, Virginia, as spies from the Army of the Potomac, which they readily confessed to being. Upon court martial they were, of course, sentenced to death, the invariable fate of a spy in time of war. This news being conveyed to Washington, orders went forth from the authorities there that four young Confederate officers of corresponding rank should be selected to be executed in retaliation. Anthony who

## HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA

was selected as one of the four and his three doomed companions were thrown into dark cells, two in each cell, to be so held until the Union spies in Richmond, comfortably imprisoned, had been shot; then the same fate would be imposed on the Confederate officers in Fort Delaware.

Upon learning of this cruel and unjust edict, President Jefferson Davis of the Confederacy protested against so unheard of a procedure, but without avail. The benign old chief, himself a hero of the Mexican War, and the Secretary of War in the Cabinet of President Buchanan, unwilling to see sacrificed the lives of four brave young men who had violated no rules of warfare, offered to change the sentence against the spies to life imprisonment, if the Union authorities would do likewise in the case of the Confederate officers. The proposition was accepted by President Lincoln. This situation was continued for several months, but the Confederate officers were kept in confinement in a dark cell, lighted only by means of a small aperture at the top, their food being served to them through a grate which was then closed until the next meal time; while the spies in Richmond were confined in comfortable quarters, with plenty of light and fresh air and all the books they wanted for entertainment.

Needless to say, the health of the Confederate prisoners soon showed signs of breaking, and this fact they were permitted to communicate to President Davis, whose solicitude for their welfare caused him to propose a change of sentence to imprisonment for 15 years. This offer also was accepted, but the cruel and unjust conditions of confinement were unchanged, and it was evident to the four Confederates that they could not much longer survive these conditions. Is it any wonder that they became desperate, and that they preferred death from a bullet to this lingering state of dying?

At this state of affairs there occurred a circumstance full of drama and stranger than fiction. Possibly because of relentless feeling the authorities of Fort Delaware ordered that these four young men be released for a time from their cells, and be put to work wheeling earth and rock in wheelbarrows in the

## MELVILLE DOZIER

process of some work that was being done by prisoners in the fort; an order which one would naturally suppose, under the circumstances, would be readily and gladly acceded to. But not so by these poor fellows who, though greatly weakened and emaciated by long confinement had lost none of their spirit of independence and sense of justice.

They were permitted to hold a consultation on the subject before rendering their decision. They took this view of the matter: "Though entitled to treatment due to prisoners of war, captured in battle, we have been confined in dark, unventilated cells without just cause, until our health is broken and life made not worth living; and now they want to heap insult upon injury for the purpose of humiliating us. We will not submit, and we refuse to obey the order." When their decision was given to the officer who conveyed the order, he was utterly astonished, and said to them: "Why, men, this is an order from the commandant of the fort, and don't you know that if you refuse to obey you will be shot?" "Yes," said my brother who was chosen spokesman for the group, "we know that, but we prefer death to humiliation."

The officer took their reply, together with their names, to the commandant, who formerly had been connected with the U. S. Navy. Looking over the names he saw one which was familiar to him, and ordered that the men be brought to his office. They went, of course, expecting the sentence to death. Looking at my brother, he said,

"Is your name Dozier?"

"Yes sir, it is."

"Did you have a brother in the Navy?"

"Yes sir, I had."

"Well, he was a good friend of mine. You men go back to your cells."

And thus, through the bonds of an old friendship between men now fighting on opposing sides in the same war, the lives of these four helpless but courageous young men were saved.

While they were both surprised and relieved, yet they realized that they could not much longer survive the conditions

## HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA

of their confinement, and were permitted to make a written statement of the facts to President Davis. On receipt of this statement, Jefferson Davis was so moved with sympathy for his suffering soldiers that he sent a communication to Abraham Lincoln offering to exchange the four spies imprisoned in Richmond for the four officers sentenced in retaliation at Fort Delaware. The heart of Lincoln relented, and the offer was accepted.

The eight young men, by appointment, met in the city of Washington on their way to their respective homes and had dinner together. There, for the first time, the Union self-confessed learned of the treatment to which the Confederates had been subjected, and were highly indignant that their government should have countenanced such gross injustice, asserting that they themselves had been treated with kindness and consideration, having all the comforts and conveniences that could be expected in a prison. These two groups of young Americans separated as friends, but went home to recuperate and to join again the opposing forces and fight against each other.

The bloody strife was then near its close. Lieutenant Dozier was not able to return to his own command, then with General Lee in Virginia, but a few weeks of rest and careful nursing at his home fitted him sufficiently to join the hastily gathered local forces, consisting of furloughed soldiers, old men, and boys, to resist the march of Sherman through the Carolinas. This was a futile effort as far as the outcome was concerned, but they did remarkable execution during the few weeks of that memorable march.

My fifth brother, Edward, saw very hard service during the entire period of his connection with the army, which ceased only on the surrender of General Joseph E. Johnston to General Sherman in North Carolina. Soon after the battle of John's Island, in which our brother Anthony was captured, his company was transferred to Virginia, and became a part of the famous cavalry brigade of Wade Hampton and shared in all of the exploits, hardships, and sufferings of that noted



## MELVILLE DOZIER

band of men. His company, composed entirely of cadets from the military academy of South Carolina, did most valiant service and suffered severe losses, both in rank and file; so that, at the close of the war, all of the superior officers having been either killed, captured, or disabled, Sergeant Dozier was in command of the remnant of this group of young men that had been regarded as the flower of Lee's army.

One incident in his experience will suffice to show the metal of which he was made. In the summer of 1863, on a very hot day, a sharp and spirited cavalry fight occurred at Cedar Run, Virginia, in which the Union forces were driven off. There being a large millpond in the vicinity, the Confederate boys stripped off and plunged into the water to cool off and enjoy a swim, leaving one man in charge of each group of four horses. While thus engaged in disporting themselves, the Union forces got wind of the situation, returned at double quick to the fray, hoping to capture the horses.

The Confederates in charge of the horses retreated in double quick giving the alarm to the boys in swimming. With tremendous speed those boys got into their clothes and seizing their carbines struck out across an old field that separated the millpond from the road on which the horses were running and the enemy pursuing. Being swift of foot, Sergeant Dozier led in the race, reaching the road just in the nick of time. Mounting a stump on the roadside he shot down the leading horse and rider, which threw the whole force in the narrow road into such disorder that the Confederate horses made good their escape, and another battle was on between the Union cavalry and the dismounted Confederates, resulting in the retreat of the boys in blue.

In this conflict Sergeant Dozier received a severe wound which almost cost him his life. A ball struck him on the upper part of the left arm, shattering the bone of the arm and penetrating the left side of his body. Completely disabled for the time being, he was sent home for treatment. Thirteen fragments of bone were removed from his arm and half of the ball. The other half of the ball had buried itself in the muscles

## HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA

of the body, but could not then be located. Several months were necessary for a sufficient recuperation to rejoin his command, and the other half of the ball was taken from an abscess in his side several years after the war closed.

As to my own part in that historic struggle, it was not so spectacular as the parts played by my older brothers. Being a cadet in the state military academy, we were subject to the military control of the state, and the public duty exacted of us in the early years of the war was the guarding of military supplies stored in the city of Charleston, and the drilling of new recruits in their preparation for service at the front. During this period, however, the city of Charleston and the forts in the harbor were under constant bombardment from the Union warships, and from a battery of long range guns established on Morris Island at Fort Wagner, which had been captured by the Union Forces.

At this fort was mounted a gun known as the "Swamp Angel," regarded as the most powerful weapon on either side, and which could hurl shells, loaded with "Greek Fire" into the city six miles away. This "Greek Fire" was a chemical which would ignite when the shell burst, scattering what was said to be an unquenchable flame in all directions. Strange to say (and perhaps providentially) the great majority of the shells fell on the cobblestones with which the streets of the city were paved, and did but little damage. Notwithstanding this, however, that portion of the city fronting the harbor, where many of the aristocratic homes were located, was badly shattered and had to be abandoned.

An incident which fastened itself on my memory in connection with the bombardment was the fact that I happened, with a few other cadets, to be on the street when, and near the spot where, the first shell thrown into the city struck. We ran to the spot to see what damage had been done, and found that it had struck the kitchen of a large brick mansion, reducing that part of the house to a pile of brickbats and dust. With others, we set to work removing the debris to see if anyone had been injured, and soon we uncovered the body of an old negro

## MELVILLE DOZIER

woman, the cook of the family, who had been crushed to death by the impact. As the bombardment was maintained day and night for many months, the city was not a pleasant place in which to reside, and many families removed to different places in the interior. During these many months of continuous cannonading, old Fort Sumter, which stood in the middle of the channel, and was the scene of the first conflict, was reduced to a heap of ruins on the side next to the sea; so that only half the fortress was habitable or usable, but the brave old stronghold never surrendered.

Many attempts were made on dark nights to take the fort by storm, by means of many boats, manned by troops from the battleships blockading the port, who with muffled oars would attempt to reach the parapet unheard and unseen, and scale the walls before resistance could be made. These attempts were always frustrated by the watchful garrison, who with deadly rifle fire would drive the assailants back to their ships with great loss of life. This rifle fire could be plainly heard in the city in the stillness of the night, so that we always knew when such an attack was being made.

But I have said enough about the Civil War, that bloody strife between brother and brother. Let me close this familiar account of some of the circumstances that can never be effaced from my memory (though retained without bitterness) by reference to an amusing circumstance in which I was one of the actors, for war has its funny side. In the spring of 1864 the Confederacy, cut off from contact with foreign nations, its resources both of men and substance reduced to the minimum, and bleeding at every pore, was forced to call into active service both the old and the young in a desperate attempt to drive from its borders the ever-increasing army of invaders seeking to crush out its life.

At this juncture the states yielded their most treasured hope for future military leaders, and sent their cadets to the front. Our battalion at first was assigned to the defense of the Charleston and Savannah Railroad against the persistent efforts of the enemy to cut that important line of supplies and

## HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA

communication, and thus open the way for an attack on Charleston from the rear. This put us under constant bombardment, with a stiff fight in the open every now and then thrown in.

The event to which I refer occurred at the close of a battle in a forest bordering on the railroad. The enemy had withdrawn, and we were preparing to return to our encampment when three of us spied what we took to be a Union soldier, standing under an oak tree about a hundred yards distant; the underbrush interfering somewhat with our vision. One of the three said, "Let's take a crack at him," and so saying, he took deliberate aim and fired. But the soldier did not move. Of course, we concluded he had missed his mark, and the second said, "Let me try him." With steady nerve, he fired, but that stolid Yankee stood his ground. Then the third said, "I'll fetch him," and with confidence he pulled the trigger, but that soldier did not flinch. Being regarded as good marksmen, we did not know what to make of it. But one of us said, "Let's charge him!" And no sooner said than with a whoop we started on a run towards our motionless enemy, but he stood his ground until we got there. It proved to be a Union soldier's overcoat, hanging to the limb of the tree, and pierced with three bullet holes.

Early in 1865 I was stricken with typhoid fever in camp, and had to be removed to a hospital in Charleston. The case soon reached a serious stage, and I was sent home to be cared for by the tenderest of all nurses, my mother. The disease ran its course, reducing my body to a state of extreme emaciation and weakness from which I did not recover for many weeks, and it was during that time that General Sherman passed through that section of the state, leaving only desolation and smoking embers in his path.

By the time I was able to leave home to rejoin my command, Sherman's army had reached the southern boundary of North Carolina, having torn up the railroad tracks on his memorable march, thus making it necessary for me to go on foot for more than a hundred miles. On reaching Spartanburg, near the



## MELVILLE DOZIER

northern border of South Carolina, I joined my battalion, encamped there by order of the state authorities, who had refused to permit the cadets to be taken beyond the limits of the state. A few days later, General Lee having surrendered to General Grant at Appomatox, Joseph E. Johnston capitulated to Sherman at Goldsboro, North Carolina, and the war was virtually over. Our command was then marched to Greenville, South Carolina, where a body of General Stoneman's cavalry division were lingering, and to them we surrendered.

Greenville having been the scene of my earlier days at school, I remained there for several weeks visiting the friends of my youth. While I was there an event occurred which was echoed around the world and which doubtless changed the subsequent history of the nation, but which was more disastrous for the South. While I was sitting at home reading a book, Mr. Robert P. Duncan, a noble old gentleman with a level head and generous impulses, came from downtown, perturbed, and stepping up to where I was perched, said "My boy, the South has lost its best friend. Abraham Lincoln has been assassinated."

This sentiment uttered in the humiliation and disappointment of defeat, by one who was thoroughly in sympathy with the "Lost Cause," is a good illustration of the personal esteem and confidence in which Lincoln was held by those against whom the North had been waging relentless war. The bullet that slew Lincoln humiliated the South, and ushered in the darkest period of American history, known as the rule of the "Carpet Bagger."

In returning home I had to duplicate my long walk over the desolated trail of Sherman, where only lonely chimneys and heaps of ashes bore silent testimony to the ruthless hand of war. I found that all the other boys from the front had preceded me, except our brother Cuttino, who was still held in Fort Delaware, awaiting the slow and trying process of exchanging prisoners of war. He did not reach home until some time in June.

## HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA

That summer of 1865 was a memorable period in our family's history, and I alone am left to recall its blessed memories. The wives and children of the married boys had been at the old homestead during the anxious years of the war, and now for the first and last time in our family's history, all of its members were gathered under its hospitable roof and about its generous board, numbering twenty-three in all. The desperate losses incident to the war were largely lost sight of for the time being. Only a flood of gratitude filled our hearts, since the awful toll of war had taken none of our number. Now came the time of decision as to the future under these radical changes from all our former conditions.

The slaves all set free and clothed with the ballot; the civil governments existing in the states of the Confederacy, supplanted by what were virtually military dictatorships; thousands of the best citizens disfranchised by virtue of a law which excluded all who had been worth more than \$10,000, and who had held office under the U. S. Government; the schools for boys and men closed, and the country impoverished by the ravages of war, placed the southern people in a situation of extreme difficulty, from which many sought to relieve themselves by emigration to foreign lands, particularly South America; but to which the great majority had to submit by force of circumstances.

Then it was that we realized that the South had indeed lost its best friend in the assassination of Abraham Lincoln, for had he lived to serve his second term as president it is unbelievable that he would have permitted the establishment and maintenance of such corrupt and tyrannical administrations in the southern states as prevailed during the next ten years, known as the "Carpet Bag Regime"; so called because the holders of public offices were men from the North who had no domestic interest in the South, and no intention to become permanent residents of that section.

This condition prevailed in South Carolina until 1875; in that year the people succeeded in electing General Wade Hampton governor of the state, and thus ushered in the restoration

## MELVILLE DOZIER

of the state's control to the real people of the state. From that date to the present time the state has progressed in all matters civic, educational, and industrial. It is no wonder that they celebrate this date as marking a new birth in the state's history.

But, to return to our family history. The time had come when each of those who had reached his majority must look out for himself, and each of those still in his teens must be educated for his life work. At the beginning of 1866, the schools and colleges throughout the South commenced opening doors which had been too long closed to student life.

Among these was Furman University, which was situated in Greenville, South Carolina, and was the preparatory school where I had spent two years previous to the war. My course of study at the state military academy during the earlier years of the war had fitted me to enter the junior class in collegiate work, and with four other young men of the state, we constituted the upper class of the University until we graduated, a class of five, in the summer of 1867. Of that class, two became ministers of the Gospel, three became teachers, and one of them a professor in the University where we graduated.

Of that class of precious memory, four have crossed the Great Divide and I alone remain, not only the sole survivor of the group, but the oldest living alumnus of the institution. This thought is a forceful reminder that my remaining time on earth is brief, especially when coupled with the fact that all of the members of our large household, both older and younger than myself, have passed away, leaving me the only surviving member of the family. But permit me, with grateful appreciation to add this tribute, that they all lived noble and useful lives, and passed into the Great Beyond with their honor unsullied and their faith unshaken.

About the city of Greenville cluster many of the most sacred associations of my life. It was there that in my boyhood I met the lovely spirit who in future years was to become the companion of my life, and the mother of my children. It was there

## HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA

after more than seven years of engagement we were joined in the holy bonds of matrimony and then spent together in California forty-five years of unalloyed happiness.

Not long after my graduation, being footloose and unemployed, a proposition came to me for which I shall never cease to be grateful. My brother Leonard was practicing medicine in the county seat of our county, but the poverty of the people and the dark political outlook caused him to look elsewhere for a field of professional activity. His choice fell on California, but having a wife and three children he needed some one to assist him in making the long journey, which seemed to us at the time to be more than half the distance around the globe. He proposed that I should accompany him and, needless to say, I grasped the opportunity with avidity.

The decision, however, on the part of each of us, was a matter of no small significance both to ourselves and to the rest of the family. More than any other of the groups in the Union, the southerner is loath to leave his native state and the environments of his family history. To him these things make a strong appeal, and constitute a more sacred and binding relationship than exists in the North or the West, and our step was recognized as full of radical possibilities for the future life of a family which had been rooted to the soil of that section since the colonial days of the nation's life. We recognized, however, that the South of the past with its unique civilization and treasured social customs was gone forever, and that we owed it to ourselves as young men of a new generation to avail ourselves of opportunities of useful development which seemed absolutely and permanently impossible at home.

Our hope, also, was that others of the family would follow when possible to do so: in this we were not mistaken, for in less than two years every member of the family had landed in California with bright hopes for the future. This, as may well be imagined, involved a great sacrifice, both spiritual and material, for not only did it cost the severance of the ties of a lifetime, but demanded also the sale of an estate that had been worth hundreds of thousands of dollars for the



## MELVILLE DOZIER

pittance of \$10,000. But none of us has ever regretted making the move, coming as we did to a new and promising land with every inducement and determination to start life all over again. Being personally without funds, my transportation had to be provided for in some way. My father said to me: "My son, all I can give you is a bale of cotton." The offer was accepted and the bale of cotton, which was loaded on to a small spring wagon, was to be converted into money at the railroad station thirty miles away. I used the bale as a seat until I reached the station and then paid my fare with the proceeds of the sale; so I sometimes say to my old friends that I came to California on a bale of cotton.

We left the dear old home on February 12, 1868, and reached San Francisco on March 12, just four weeks later. The transcontinental railroad then not being completed, we went by rail to New York, where we took a steamer for what was then called Aspinwall, now Colon, on the east coast of the Isthmus of Panama. There we took the good ship *Oregonian* for San Francisco, after having traveled on the Atlantic Ocean in the *Fulton*, an old ship on the eve of being condemned as unseaworthy.

An incident or two connected with this month's sea voyage may be of interest. On the Atlantic, while passing Cape Hatteras, a severe storm was encountered, which gave us our first experience in seasickness. The sensations produced by this disturber of peace are too well known to need description, but in after years I was vividly reminded of the occasion when I came across Mark Twain's brief but comprehensive description, for he said that "at first one feels that he is going to die; but before he gets over it he is afraid he won't die." One unfortunate woman was struck by the malady the day we left New York and suffered the agonies of it until we reached San Francisco.

When we reached Aspinwall, about noon, the sailors were permitted to go ashore for the afternoon, but a number of passengers remained on board, awaiting the starting of the train on the next morning. Late in the afternoon the sailors

## HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA

returned to the ship, many of them thoroughly intoxicated. Very soon on the deck a free fight broke out among them, and knives and clubs were soon playing a vicious part in the conflict, accompanied by the kind of swearing and cursing of which only sailors are capable.

The captain of the ship, hearing the turmoil, ran out of his cabin on to the deck to quell the riot, but there was blood in the eyes of those drunken sailors, and one of them, with a vicious dirk in his uplifted hand took after the captain who, being unarmed, ran for his life towards the stern of the ship where I and my brother's wife and children were sitting. It looked as if the captain would be overtaken, or the sailors would in a few seconds be right in our midst. But just in the nick of time another officer of the ship armed with a belaying pin jumped between the pursued and the pursuer, and dealt the latter a deadly blow on the head, laying him out on the deck. He died from the blow that night. Another of the ring-leaders of the disturbance was arrested and tied up to the rigging by a cord around his thumbs while his toes just touched the deck. The agony of the poor fellow was most pitiable, but it was a desperate condition which called for a desperate remedy. The other drunken sailors were locked up in their quarters or put in irons, after which quiet prevailed.

Upon reaching the old city of Panama, and having several hours to await the sailing of the steamer, I used the time walking around the quaint old city, through its narrow streets not more than ten or twelve feet wide. This walk made me realize very vividly that I was on foreign soil. The streets, or more properly alleys, were populated by buzzards that were busy consuming the garbage thrown there by the human population, for there was no other disposition of garbage and waste matter from the dwellings. These buzzards are so tame that one has to kick them out of his way to get by, but they are the scavengers of the community and it cost five dollars to injure one of them.

Donkeys afforded the means of transportation, and were usually laden with a great bundle of firewood on one side,

## MELVILLE DOZIER

and a barrel of water on the other, these two being strapped together across the back. On meeting one of these slow and patient plodders of the street, one had to lean up against the buildings to give him room to pass.

The houses all joined each other, with a continuous front wall coming flush up to the street. The only way to distinguish one house from another was by the door and the one window of each. The yards, if any, were all in the rear, and the neighbors appeared to do their visiting from little verandas built under the window of the second story. Here they would be within a few feet of their neighbor next door or across the street, and conversation could be carried on with ease as the parties remained comfortably seated in their own houses.

Leaving Panama we reached our ship by traveling on a flat boat. The boat was anchored outside, for the bay of Panama in those days was little better than a mud flat at low tide, and could not be entered at any time by a seagoing steamer. Our pleasant journey from there to San Francisco was marred by only two incidents, one a storm off the coast of Central America which gave us another unwelcome touch of seasickness, and the other the death of a woman passenger, who had to be buried at sea.

This funeral service was both sad and novel. The body was securely sewed up in a wrapping of canvas, and placed foot foremost on a long plank, one end of which rested on the railing at the stern of the ship. The captain read a brief burial commitment, the other end of the plank was raised by sailors, and the body slid down the plank, quietly dropping into its boundless watery grave. As the canvas was loaded at the foot with iron weights, the body sank immediately out of sight in the wake of the ship.

Two or three stops on the coast of Mexico both gratified our curiosity and served to quicken our interest in our approach to the Golden Gate. Our entrance into the harbor of San Francisco made an impression upon my mind that can never be effaced. It was just at sunrise, on the morning of March 12, 1868. The sky was clear, the air cool and bracing,

## HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA

and the sun was just showing itself over the hilltops of the beautiful city. The whole scene impressed me as a Divine welcome to the promised land, and my heart went up to God in praise and thanksgiving for His gracious protection and guidance.

The inspiration of that moment kindled by such splendors has never left me, and I have never seen the day when I would exchange California for any other spot on earth. Landing at the dock in the midst of the din of trucking and traffic, and the shrill and almost deafening calls of the hotel runners and cabmen, we felt than we had dropped upon a new planet. We took accommodations at the good old "Russ House," then one of the leading hotels of the city, and sallied forth to look with increasing wonder upon the novelties of our new home.

Having brought a letter of introduction to Dr. H. H. Toland, a former resident of Columbia, South Carolina, and then the leading physician of San Francisco, we soon found ourselves in his office, where every morning a score or more of patients awaited their turn to receive a gratuitous prescription from the good doctor. Doctor Toland had acquired great wealth, and his heart was as big as his pocket. He made it a practice for years to devote his office hours every morning to the medical needs of the poor of the city who could not afford to pay a physician's fee. These gathered in numbers every day in a large room adjoining his office, and were admitted in turn to his private office, to be examined. Prescriptions were filled at moderate cost in an adjoining drug department, and many a patient found relief within his limited means.

The record of Dr. Toland's life would form a bright page in the early history of San Francisco. His generosity, so freely bestowed, has been perpetuated in the Toland Hospital and School of Medicine, which he bequeathed to the University of California, and which was converted into the medical department of that institution.

This same good man owned a large estate of about 10,000 acres in the Montezuma Hills, near Rio Vista in Solano



## MELVILLE DOZIER

County, on the Sacramento River. On this he kept large herds of cattle and sheep which were fattened for the market on the luscious growth of wild oats that covered those hills, and which needed no cultivation. With a heart full of sympathy for the misfortunes that had befallen his native State, he received us with great cordiality and gave us the benefit of his long experience in California.

He advised my brother, himself a physician, to open an office in Rio Vista, then a young but growing town, and sent me to his ranch with a note to his foreman instructing him to install me as a shepherd over a flock of his sheep. We accepted his good advice and his generosity, and I enjoyed that first month in California with genuine delight, and feel that some of its incidents are worth relating.

The Montezuma Hills constitute a commanding site just across the river from Sherman Island and Antioch. In former years it was a great feeding ground for herds of elk which once abounded in that part of the State. When I went there the hills, treeless and shrubless and covered with wild oats, were dotted all over with the bleached antlers of elks, shed by the old bucks every spring. Meadow-larks and jack-rabbits filled the hills.

The shepherds had to get up at daybreak, and after a break fast by lamplight, they took their flocks to the unfenced pastures for the day. Each shepherd was provided with a splendid shepherd dog, whose intelligence was a standing wonder to me. Those dogs would drive several thousand sheep with perfect ease in any direction indicated by the shepherd, and when too far away to hear a word of command would respond with perfect accuracy to a wave of the hand, whether it meant to move in a certain section or to lie down. Different dogs were assigned to different shepherds from time to time, but during the dog's service he would pay no attention whatever to anyone but the shepherd to whom he was assigned.

The song of the meadow-larks on those green hills early in the morning afforded as sweet music as I ever listened to, and frequently afforded me a note of inspiration in my fre-

## HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA

quent letters to my betrothed sweetheart in far away Carolina. For several hours in the middle of the day, while the sun was warm, the sheep would lie down to rest and ruminate, while the faithful shepherd dog kept watch over them. This gave me an opportunity to read and write in quiet. Since there was no shade to be had, I gathered a number of the cast-off antlers of elks and constructed a dome-like frame with an opening on one side, and covered this bony frame with gunny sacks, thus making a cozy nook in which I could read or write with comfort during the warm hours of the day.

At that time nearly all the shepherds in the country were Portuguese, and went under the general name of "Manuel," just as all Chinamen were called "John" and the Indians "Jim." One day while reading in my improvised tent, a man on horseback came by, and stopping near the tent, called out, "Hello, Manuel."

"Hello," I answered.

"What are you doing in there?"

"Reading," I said.

"Reading? Why, what are you reading?"

"Haven's Treatise on Mental and Moral Philosophy," I answered.

The fellow almost fell off his horse.

"What! Who are you, and where did you come from?" he asked. I told him my story briefly.

"Well, sir," he said, "You are just the man I have been looking for. I want you to enter my service. I have a string of book agents selling books up and down the coast, and I want you to sell books for me in Oregon."

"No, I thank you," said I. "I would rather be a shepherd than a book agent." He rode on in disgust, and I renewed my acquaintance with the old college text-book.

At that time the superintendent of instruction for California was Rev. O. P. Fitzgerald, formerly of North Carolina, and subsequently a bishop in the Methodist Church South. Be it remembered that in those days California was strongly Democratic. He took a deep interest in young men who were emigrating from the South to escape the burdensome condi-

## MELVILLE DOZIER

tions prevailing there. Hearing of him, I wrote him a letter telling him briefly of my situation and of my desire to become identified with the educational interests of the state. His answer was an invitation to report at once to his office in San Francisco and take the teachers' examination. Of course, I complied without delay.

The examination, which was in writing, lasted nearly a week, but before the certificate could be issued there were three requests from school trustees, asking for the assignment of a teacher to their respective districts, and I was at liberty to take my choice. Knowing nothing of the districts involved I left the choice to the superintendent, and he assigned me to a school in Suisun Valley in Solano County, where almost the entire population consisted of people from Missouri, Kentucky, and Tennessee. In those days of bitter political sentiment throughout the state, I found myself very pleasantly situated among people who were warmly sympathetic with the South, and I greatly enjoyed my first year's teaching in that community. So strongly did teacher and pupils become attached to each other that to this day, sixty-four years later, there is an occasional exchange of letters of friendship between us, recalling the school days of 1868.

At the end of the year my brother Anthony with his wife and young child arrived in California. As he had had some experience in teaching in South Carolina, and because of his greater responsibilities. I persuaded the board of trustees to relieve me from my engagement for the following year, and to give the position to my brother, while I would seek a position elsewhere. They complied with my request, and fortunately for me the teacher in the adjoining district resigned quite unexpectedly, and I was appointed to his position.

It will be of interest to the citizens of Los Angeles to know that the teacher whom I succeeded was none other than Judge George H. Smith, a lawyer from West Virginia, and a colonel in the Confederate Army. He was moving again to Los Angeles to practice his profession as a member of the legal firm of Smith, Glassel, and Smith, who for a number of years were

## HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA

regarded as among the leading members of the bar. Henry Smith, the brother of George, was elected to the Superior bench, and Colonel George Smith, who in the meantime had become the author of one or more important law books, was appointed a commissioner of the Supreme Court of the state, in which exalted position he continued to function with marked ability to the time of his death.

At the end of my second year of teaching I went to San Francisco with a view of entering the office of some prominent lawyer to prepare myself for the practice of that profession. When I called on the superintendent of education to thank him for his many kindnesses to me, and to tell him of my intention, he earnestly requested that I should postpone my purpose for a time, and accept the principalship of the school in Austin, Nevada, the center of the silver mining region of that state. He said the trustees of the school had written him to the effect that three principals in succession had been run out by the larger pupils, the third one having been thrown out of the window, and that they could find no one who could fill the place. They requested that he send them a man from California who could qualify for the position. The superintendent added: "I believe you are the man, and I wish you would do me the favor of accepting the appointment." The challenge was too strong, and I accepted, starting almost immediately for the Sage Brush state.

The romance of the trip which was exceedingly interesting to me was in passing over the Sierra Nevada Mountains amid the most glorious scenery, of going through snow sheds and along the shores of historic Donner Lake and of emerging onto the treeless plains of Nevada, with only sand and sage brush and distant bare mountains in view. How different must have been the impression upon the traveler going in the opposite direction! To emerge from the grandeur of the Sierra Nevada into the broad, tree-covered green plains of the Sacramento Valley must have been almost like landing in paradise. No wonder the physical welcome received by immigrants to California holds them like a spell within her generous bounds.



## MELVILLE DOZIER

Reaching my destination, I found that I had to stand another examination, as they did not recognize California certificates. That ordeal over, I made preparation to open school on the appointed day. I found one sentiment prevailing in the mining community, and that was, that like my predecessors, I would soon be on my way back to California, a defeated pedagogue. Nevertheless the community was anxious to have the school succeed; so I felt that I would at least have the moral support of the parents if force became necessary. My preparation, therefore, consisted of two beautiful cowhides which the pupils, as they came in, saw hanging silently, but significantly on the wall just back of my desk. This was a new piece of furniture for that school room, of which the use was readily understood, and it was amusing to see the pupils look at each other with a knowing smile, and then fix their eyes on the cowhides.

As was always my custom, I opened the session with prayer, and then quietly proceeded to distinguish the classes, and assign them their respective lessons for the following hour. There was a number of large boys in the room, some as large as myself, and it was easy to realize that by banding together, they could readily throw any teacher out the door. I saw that my only hope of success lay in combining the deportment of a gentleman with the firmness of an autocrat. The former quality appealed to the majority, but I did not have to wait long before the latter had to be brought into action, and that with very decided emphasis. It is with no pleasure that I recall the experiences of the first two weeks of that term, and I would not pass through it again for any consideration. The larger boys determined to try the new teacher to the utmost, but they met with such quick and decided reaction that they soon realized that in school discipline there could be but one master, and in about two weeks the school was transformed into a sympathetic group of friends who studied and played together for two years.

During my stay in Austin, Nevada, my father passed away at Rio Vista, California. This sad event occurred on June 2,

## HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA

1870. A telegram saying that he was in a dying condition brought me home as soon as I could get there, but the delays were such that when I arrived the family were just returning from the cemetery. My father had lived a noble life, and had set for his sons an example of honor and integrity that none of them ever forgot. On his tombstone was appropriately inscribed the brief but significant quotation: "An honest man, the noblest work of God."

After a few days at home, I returned to Nevada to complete my engagement there. A number of incidents during those two years have furnished ever since food for pleasant reflection but would scarcely be of sufficient interest to justify a record here. Suffice it to say that under the rough exterior of those miners of the early days, I found gems of character worthy of true manhood and womanhood.

On my return to California I was appointed principal of the school in South Vallejo, suburb of the city of Vallejo. In this town train and steamer met on the line from San Francisco to Sacramento, and it was the seat of the U.S. Navy Yard of Mare Island. At that time my brother Anthony was vice-principal of the Vallejo High School, and had built himself a home in the city. Thus was renewed our pleasant association in the work of teaching, but it was doomed to a comparatively short duration and sad ending.

Due as we have always believed, to his long close confinement in Fort Delaware as a prisoner of war, he developed the dread disease of tuberculosis while teaching in Vallejo, which made it necessary for him to seek a change of climate in the hope of throwing off the disease. He accepted the principalship of Santa Clara High School, since the climatic conditions were drier and warmer in that vicinity. Here his genial nature and his versatility as a scholar soon made him a host of friends, but the seeds of the dread disease had become too deeply rooted in his system to yield to medical treatment, and he passed away in the early prime of a useful and promising life.

He was the first of our large group of brothers to yield to

## MELVILLE DOZIER

the inexorable call of death. Since then all of the others except myself have answered the same inevitable call, and I alone am left to record the fact. But it has been my privilege to write a sketch of the life of each of them, to preserve for their descendants a knowledge of the nobility of character for which each was distinguished.

As the year 1873 approached its end the hope that had been deferred for more than seven years seemed about to be realized. During all of that time I had been bethrothed to the dearest girl in South Carolina, and for six years a continent had separated us, but in spite of solicitations to the contrary, she had been as true as steel to her plighted faith, and the time now seemed ripe for the fulfillment of our natural hopes.

Having been appointed principal of the high school of Santa Rosa, Sonoma County, California, for the coming year, my life work seemed sufficiently settled for us to launch upon the sea of matrimony; so the first day of January 1874 was appointed for the long delayed nuptials, during which time the record of old Jacob himself had been broken. It is not in my heart to say unto my young friends, "Go thou and do likewise." Nay, verily, engagements are frequently too short, but this one was certainly too long.

The brother who came with me to California in the early part of 1868 had lost his wife before the end of that year, and was now ready to accompany me on a trip to South Carolina with the same object in view as I had. That journey, certainly, was full of interest, but the seven days required to complete it seemed all too long. The celebration of my marriage to Elizabeth W. Edwards, daughter of Professor P. C. Edwards of Furman University, was the beginning of a happy co-partnership of forty-five years, sharing with mutual confidence, sympathy, and affection all the blessings and sorrows of life. The journey of the two newly married couples back to California was a longer wedding tour than was customary, but it seemed about half as long as the trip in the other direction.

The destination of myself and bride was the lovely little city of Santa Rosa, California, as delightful a commun-

ity as one could wish for. The people of this charming town, then of some six or seven thousand inhabitants, measured up in intelligence, virtue, and sociability with any community in the country, and our stay there of ten and a half years resulted in many friendships that can never perish. Arriving there on Saturday, I was installed in my new position on the following Monday, and entered upon my work with a sense of responsibility and contentment which the Good Lord has permitted to remain with me ever since.

Transferring my church membership to the Baptist Church of Santa Rosa, that body honored me with a deaconship and the superintendency of the Sunday School; so the spiritual interests of life were provided for.

Another phase of life which appealed very strongly to me was highly gratified during those years. Being by nature and early training very fond of hunting, the opportunity there presented was peculiarly fortunate. Quail, ducks, and doves were abundant in the immediate neighborhood, and several of my fellow teachers were as fond of the sport as was I. Each of us had a gun, a horse, and a bird dog, and our Saturdays were frequently devoted to bagging game in abundance. During vacation periods with rifles instead of shot guns, we invaded the home of the deer in the neighboring mountains, camping out by some mountain stream and enjoying to the utmost the health-giving touch which nature thus afforded and which was combined with the exhilarating joy of the chase.

In Santa Rosa my children were born, the greatest gift of High Heaven to mortal man, and the crowning glory of earthly life. There, also, I became well acquainted with that world-famed wizard of plant life, Luther Burbank, and had the privilege and honor of contributing towards the publication of his books. Mr. Burbank has been worthily honored by the Board of Education of Los Angeles in having one of the most beautiful Junior High Schools of the city named for him, and I had the great pleasure of presenting to the library of that school the set of Burbank's books which he dedicated to me.

One day in July 1884, while returning from a bird hunt, a



## MELVILLE DOZIER

telegraph messenger stopped me on the street and handed me a telegram consisting of the following words: "Will you accept a position in the State Normal School at Los Angeles?" Signed, State Superintendent of Public Instruction. This was a great surprise to me for I had made no application, and did not know that a vacancy existed in the faculty. The question was not easily answered, for it involved the surrender of a position in which I was very happy, and the separation from a town full of friends, both young and old. So, after mature reflection, I replied that I would first visit Los Angeles, and look over the situation before giving my answer.

In a few days I was in Los Angeles, then a city claiming from twenty to twenty-five thousand inhabitants, but full of life and growing rapidly. Under the guidance of Professor Ira More, then principal of the school, which had just completed its second year of existence, I took in all there was of Los Angeles at that time. I was so deeply impressed with the energy and enthusiasm of the people, and the evident destiny of the community, both materially and educationally, that I readily consented to accept the offer, though it cost a great pang of regret to separate from my work and associates in Santa Rosa. I have, however, never regretted the change, for it opened up a field of service much larger and more far reaching than that which I had previously occupied, and in which, by the help of God, I have been permitted to do the best work of my life.

The Normal School building then stood on the site now occupied by the Public Library at Grand Avenue and Fifth Street, though the hill was then at least twenty feet higher than it is now. The area had been the site of an orange and walnut orchard combined, and when offered by the city to the state for a Normal School site, the chief objection to its acceptance was that it was located too far from the central part of the town for the convenience of the students. The objection, however, was overcome, and today when the city extends for many miles in every direction from that point, it seems almost incredible that it should ever have been made.

## HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA

Teaching in the State Normal School is the most congenial and delightful work in which I was ever engaged. Dealing, as it does, with young men and women of the highest character, all of whom have a definite purpose in life and are actuated by the noblest ambition that can prompt the human soul: namely, to serve their generation to the best of their ability. The opportunity to direct the thoughts of these young people in lines of moral and mental development was the highest privilege I have ever enjoyed, and shall ever be grateful to Almighty God that this sacred function was mine for so many years.

That is a work that is cumulative as the generations come and go, for there seed is sown which will produce ever-increasing results as the influence widens and deepens. I withdrew in 1906, having served in that institution for twenty-two years, under three administrations of the presidency thereof, and during the greater part of which time I was the vice-president of the school.

In 1907 I was appointed auditor of the Los Angeles Aqueduct, an enterprise upon which the city was then entering, and the successful accomplishment of which has contributed immensely to the growth and prosperity of the community. During three and a half years of the construction of this great work I served in this capacity, and resigned to accept an appointment as assistant superintendent of schools of the Los Angeles School District.

This work appealed strongly to my taste, and was in harmony with my past activity and preparation. For six years I had the high privilege of serving in this responsible capacity, covering the term of service of Superintendent John H. Francis, a period during which marked progress was made in the development of our splendid public school system; one of the most important features of which was the establishment of the Junior High School, then designated as the Intermediate School. This method of dividing the twelve years of the public school curriculum is based upon true scientific principles and is now recognized and adopted by every city in the land. It

## MELVILLE DOZIER

originated in Los Angeles.

My further official service in connection with the department of public education was as a member of the City Board of Education, in which capacity I had the privilege and pleasure of serving for six years. This rounded out a half century of effort in behalf of education. Since then I have lived in retirement as far as official positions are concerned, but I have lost none of my intense interest in the affairs of the world, and especially in the welfare and progress of our beloved country.

This interest was further intensified at the entrance of our country into the World War, at which time I was appointed as chairman of one of our Selective Service boards, whose duty it was to select qualified young men within certain ages to enter the army, and send them to training camps to be prepared for service in France. In view of the haste that was necessary, and the maze of minutae that had to be mastered, in obedience to orders in Washington, this duty was most exciting, and even puzzling for the first few weeks after the declaration of war, and required the closest attention daily from early morning until late at night. Our services on these boards continued for four or five months after the close of the war.

The preparation and direction of the amazing number, and comprehensiveness of the records that had to be made during that terrific struggle will ever remain a monument to the genius and industry of General Enoch Crowder of the U. S. Army. The numerous and complicated details required to put into immediate effect in the shortest time possible, the selection, examination, and enrollment of millions of young men who were to be put in training for the most desperate war of history, demanded a genius and a power of application seldom combined in any one man. But in the personality of General Crowder they found full development, together with a sympathetic courtesy that endeared him to all who had personal or official relations with him.

The official records of that great campaign of preparation, continuing up to date of the Armistice, and covering every detail of the work, were compiled and carefully boxed in every

## HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA

district in the United States, and forwarded to Washington, D.C., where they will remain among the official records of that mighty struggle as long as the government lasts. On November 11, 1918 at eleven o'clock a.m. the last gun was fired by mutual consent and previous agreement, bringing to a dramatic end a war that has almost revolutionized not only the map of the world, but the destiny of nations as well.

As was our custom at the Christmas holidays, my wife and I in 1918 went to the home of our son and his wife in San Francisco to celebrate together the common anniversary of our respective marriages, which occurred on January 1. At this time my son was recovering from a succession of attacks of influenza, then very prevalent in the state, and he had been greatly reduced in strength and vitality. Notwithstanding this, however, he gave to us and to his children a most delightful Christmas with all that goes with that sacred social day. None of us, however, had any premonition of the dark days that were awaiting us in the immediate future. Being at that time the general manager and chief engineer of the State Reclamation Board, my son was called to Sacramento on important engineering business on the 26th but he expected to return to San Francisco in time to participate in our anniversary holiday observance.

My wife and our daughter-in-law continued in familiar conversation until nearly midnight, but very soon after retirement my wife complained of difficulty in breathing. I assisted her to a large arm chair in the room, hoping that a change in position would give relief, but she grew rapidly worse, and was soon in a condition of accute suffocation. My daughter-in-law telephoned every physician in the city of whom she had any knowledge, but for one reason or another, none could answer the call, until finally the one physician who did accept got there too late to accomplish any good, and my precious wife breathed her last at 1:30 A.M. on the 27th of December 1918.

The next few years of my life were spent alone at my home in Los Angeles, and yet I was "never less alone than when alone," for the spirit of the Master was with me to sanctify the



## MELVILLE DOZIER

reading, the correspondence, and the reflections which filled the home hours of these years. Fortunately my interest in public affairs, as relating to both our country and the countries of foreign nations, has never known any abatement, but rather has become intensified as these interests have assumed greater human importance, and become more intricately involved.

This sense of world entanglement, together with the delightful opportunity of frequently lecturing to classes in our public schools on the subject of astronomy, contributed to peace and contentment, and filled the passive years of approaching old age with a sense of satisfaction for which I can never be too grateful.

A long desire to see once more the dear old home of our youth in South Carolina lingered in the heart of my only surviving brother, Dr. Barton Dozier, and myself, and had grown in intensity with the passing years. Being well along the span of life, though in good health and spirits, we concluded in 1928 that the opportunity was at hand, and perhaps was the last time for us to gratify this ardent desire to once more visit our friends and relatives on the Atlantic coast, many of whom we had never seen, and to tread once more the soil made sacred by the treasured memories of our boyhood days. And it is well, indeed, that we did so, for had the purpose been postponed another year, changes in the circumstances of our lives would have made it impossible for us to realize the treasured hope.

And not only was this true, but in the year 1930 the hand of an insidious disease laid itself upon the body of my brother, from which he suffered ever increasing disability until August 31, 1931, when he answered the inexorable call of death, leaving me the sole survivor of the once large and vigorous family that had inherited and treasured the traditions of the historic old Palmetto State.

Imagine, if you can, our disappointment and almost dismay, on reaching the site of that dear old home, to find not a vestige of it left! The winter house, the summer house, the negro quarters, the barns, the stables, the fences, the roads were all completely obliterated, and the entire area overgrown with forest

## HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA

trees. It was hard to restrain the tears when we realized how completely the hand of time had wiped out the physical objects about which our most sacred memories clung so tenaciously. But, thank God, it cannot wipe out the memories themselves.

However, one circumstance did much to compensate us for the oblivion that had overtaken the dear old home. Inquiring of our guide, who was a boyhood friend still living in the neighborhood, whether any of our former slaves, which were several hundred, were still to be found in that vicinity, he said, "There is one, and that is old Ben." Now old Ben, as he called him, was Barton's special servant and playmate in the days of slavery, and there was not one of the entire number whom he would be more delighted to meet again.

Though it was now getting dark, we started for Ben's home, away off in the pinewoods and difficult of access. Our friend, Mr. Johnson, knowing that Ben kept a dangerous dog, put us on guard to arm ourselves with sticks, and called out to Ben before we reached the house. The dog answered, but not Ben. Repeated calls and fiercer barking of the faithful watch dog finally brought the wife to the door, inquiring who was there and what we wanted. After being repeatedly assured that we were friends and that the Sheriff was not with us, Ben himself ventured out in the darkness with great trepidation.

We asked him if he recognized us. He called for a light and looked us over from head to foot; then solemnly said, "I neber seed dese gemmons befo in my life."

"Oh yes you have, Ben; Now look again," said Barton.

Ben looked again, but he could find no mark of recognition. Then Barton recalled certain circumstances of the long ago in which he and Ben were the actors. The old darkey's eyes commenced to widen. He drew nearer, and with trembling voice he asked, "Is dis Marse Barton?"

"Yes, Ben, that's who it is."

"De good Lawd have mussy!" The two old men, master and slave, were clasped in each other's arms, weeping on one an-

MELVILLE DOZIER

other's shoulders. I never saw a scene more tragic nor more deeply affecting.

His recognition of me then was easy, and he named over all the members of the family in the order of their ages, and was deeply affected when we told him that all but ourselves had passed over the great divide. Needless to say we spent a delightful hour at old Ben's home. We found that his wife was also one of our former slaves, and that they had fourteen children, nearly all of whom were still with them.

## THE SOCIETY'S GOLDEN ANNIVERSARY

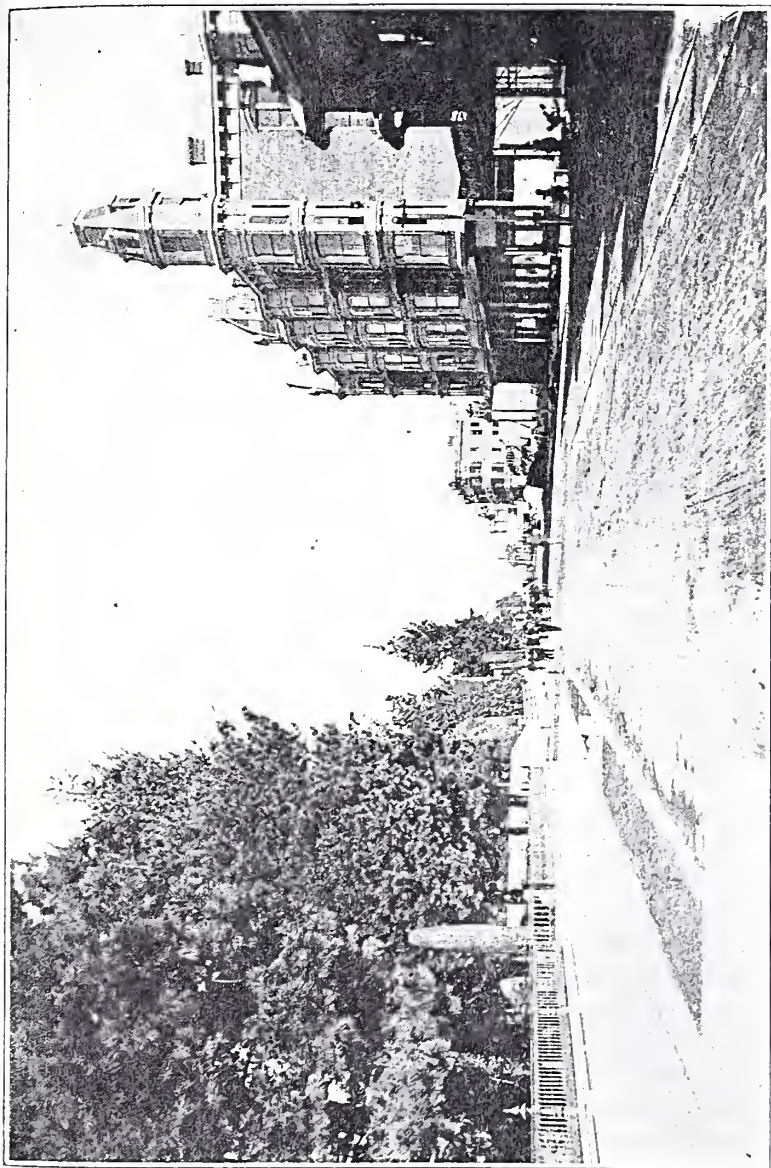
*By Marion Parks*

ON THE evening of November 1, 1883, in the city court room in the old Temple Block, the first meeting of the Historical Society of Southern California was held. Toward a fitting observance of the fiftieth anniversary of that occasion and a celebration of the completion of half a century of unbroken existence, the attention of the Society was directed throughout the Fall of 1933. Commencing with a project to enlarge the membership of the organization the Golden Anniversary program resulted in the gain of 100 new members and culminated with a dinner attended by four hundred prominent citizens of Southern California at the Los Angeles Biltmore Hotel on November 21.

More than two hundred members and guests attended the Fiftieth Anniversary meeting on Tuesday evening, November 7. This meeting and the commemorative dinner both were characterized by the attendance of a large group of pioneers and their descendants. Notable among them were Judge J. E. Pleasants of Santa Ana, who attended in special honor of his contemporary, Don. J. J. Warner, the Society's first president. Many organizations and other historical societies, that of Pasadena in particular, were represented.

Lending a festive note to the affair, officers and committee members appeared in authentic costumes of 1883, and, with a symposium on Los Angeles in 1883, the program turned imagination back to the days of the organization's founding. Mrs. Sarah Bixby Smith delighted the company with a review of "Life in Los Angeles in the Period of the 80's." Miss Laura C. Cooley read excerpts from local newspapers of November, 1883, including a notice from the former Los Angeles Evening Express of November 1, 1993, stating that "An attempt will be made this evening to organize a Southern California scientific and historical society". Reminiscences of the Rev. and Crs. C. W. Young, old members of the organization, and greetings from the two living founder members, Reginald F. Del





Main Street looking North from Fourth, 1883. Showing residences and the newly completed Westminster Hotel.  
(From the collection of J Gregg Layne)



## THE SOCIETY'S GOLDEN ANNIVERSARY

Valle and Dr. Joseph P. Widney, were read by the Secretary, following which stereopticon views of Los Angeles and its neighbors in 1883 were shown. Past President J. Gregg Layne presided over this meeting.

Looking back to the beginnings of the Society, it is apparent that many difficulties stood in the way of its organization, nor were they dissipated by that event. "It would have been easier to raise a company to defend the country than to write the history thereof" concluded Judge Noah Levering in the course of his early efforts to bring the founders together. On the conquest of many vicissitudes both spiritual and financial, as well as its important accomplishments during its fifty years of existence, the Society may well be congratulated.

Not the least of its difficulties was the lack of permanent quarters, the acquisition of which should be one of the largest objectives of the organization as its second fifty years begin. Begging shelter here and there, meetings were successively held in the Temple Block, the old Nadeau Hotel Block, and the old State Normal School at Fifth and Grand, then considered well out in the suburbs. Subsequently it returned to downtown lodgings in the Council Chamber at the old City Hall on Second Street. All of these buildings have been razed during the past decade. For a time the Society met in peace but not prosperity in the Police Court over the jail; then it moved to the City Hall on Broadway. Several times it met in Pasadena, at "Carmelita", the famous home of Mrs. Jeanne C. Carr.

Back in the "gay nineties" the Guinns lived on Grand Avenue between First and Second Streets. Profeser J. M. Guinn, leading member for thirty-three years, was the mainstay of the organization in those days. Writes his daughter, "We used to round up all the chairs our neighbors could spare for a meeting of the Society. Then we invited the neighbors to come to the meetings, most of them accepting. On one occasion Father Adam was host to the Society at the priests' house adjoining St. Vibiana's Cathedral. The Daughters of Eve attended." When Professor Guinn was elected to the Board of Education, he secured permission for the Society to meet in the Board

## HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA

rooms, a courtesy still extended down to the present.

With generous inclusiveness, the Society was organized not only for historical activities, but as an academy of sciences as well. There seems to have been a persistent idea, even among the studious souls who formed it, that they might some time "run out" of history. There were several public utterances to the effect that H. H. Bancroft, in his publications then just off the press, had said practically the last word on the history of California regarding times preceding theirs. As to the Spanish and Mexican era and the days of the Missions, Professor Ira More, the Normal School principal, said that he had "gathered the corn and left the husks" to the rest of the historians. Anyway, that period of California history could be dismissed with a gesture as far as Professor More was concerned. He said of it, "A score or two of names, a few crumbling adobes, and all is told." The founders of the Society were, however, deeply conscious of the fact that they were living in the midst of a history-making period; and indeed it is remarkable that they took pause in the hectic years of city-building which followed swiftly on the heels of 1883 to think about recording history when most people were so wholly engrossed with making it.

The fifty years which followed, with an annual publication for each one of them, left a record in which the members may justly take pride. The precept which Colonel J. J. Warner, as first President, laid down in his inaugural address has not been forgotten: "This Society was formed for work. It was not formed for show, for the name of the thing, but to do something."

Gratifying success attended the efforts of the committee in charge of the Golden Anniversary dinner of November 21, which took place in the ballroom of the Hotel Biltmore. It was characterized by brilliance of personnel and mood, and it was colorful and picturesque in entertainment. Thanks are due to a great number of members and friends who aided in ways far too numerous to mention.

At the conclusion of the several addresses included in the

*one hundred fourteen*



## THE SOCIETY'S GOLDEN ANNIVERSARY

program, glimpses into the local historical background were given with a series of "living pictures" and musical entertainment. A large number of exceptionally fine authentic costumes were shown and while intended as an entertainment feature, the series was developed on a theme inspired by authentic historical events and personalities. An old fashioned high wheel, a fireman's helmet, trumpet and leather bucket, and a champion pug dog were among accessories included.

In the following list of committees, the special Fiftieth Anniversary Membership committee, headed by John Treanor, has been included in the general anniversary committee. Of this body Miss Medelene F. Wills, member for many years, was named honorary chairman in recognition of her support of the Society's work and remembrance of the fact that she arrived in Los Angeles in the month and year of its organization. In recognition of her personal devotion to the organization over a number of years, Miss Lillian A. Williamson was named honorary vice-chairman.

## FIFTIETH ANNIVERSARY COMMITTEE

Miss Madelene F. Wills, *Honorary Chairman*

Miss Lillian A. Williamson, *Honorary Vice-Chairman*

Harrington Brown  
W. A. Bryan  
A. M. Chaffey  
Dr. Robert G. Cleland  
Miss Laura C. Cooley  
Robert E. Cowan  
Ernest Dawson  
Isadore B. Dockweiler  
Mrs. Susan M. Dorsey  
Mrs. Bruce A. Findley  
Miss Mary E. Foy  
Hon. Charles E. Haas  
George P. Hammond  
Phil Townsend Hanna  
S. M. Haskins  
Max E. Hayward  
Dr. F. W. Hodge  
Dr. Rockwell D. Hunt  
Elmer R. King  
L. E. Lampton  
Herman C. Lichtenberger

Mrs. George W. McDill  
Maynard McFie  
J. A. McNaughton  
Orra E. Monnette  
Mrs. Dexter Monroe  
John G. Mott  
Joseph Netz  
Marco R. Newark  
Dr. John C. Parrish  
Mrs. Lee A. Phillips  
Adolfo G. Rivera  
Mrs. Florence Dodson  
Schoneman  
Mrs. Sarah Bixby Smith  
T. E. Stephenson  
Marshall Stimson  
Mrs. Ralph L. Tuttle  
Erwin W. Widney  
Miss Estella Williamson  
Mrs. Arthur Wright

## FIFTIETH ANNIVERSARY DINNER COMMITTEES

Charles Gibbs Adams, *Chairman*  
*Vice-Chairmen*

Mrs. Florence Dodson Schoneman  
Mrs. Sarah Bixby Smith      Mrs. Ralph L. Tuttle  
Joseph Netz  
RECEPTION

Mrs. Florence Dodson Schoneman, *Chairman*  
Mrs. H. R. Wagner, *Honorary Chairman*  
Mrs. J. Gregg Layne      Mrs. Myra Parme Anderson  
Mrs. Owen C. Coy      Mrs. Robert E. Cowan  
Mrs. Frank Rolfe      Mrs. Phil Townsend Hanna  
Mrs. F. W. Hodge      Miss Harriette Saxton  
Miss Clementina De Forest      Miss Mabel E. Guinn  
Griffin

## THE SOCIETY'S GOLDEN ANNIVERSARY

### PROGRAM

Miss Marion Parks, *Chairman*

Roger J. Sterrett	Miss Hope Chamberlin
Mrs. Grace Thomas Bull	Miss Graziella Jacoby
Mrs. Isabel Fages	Lindley Bynum
Miss Irene Tillinghast	

### TABLES AND RESERVATIONS

Mrs. Ralph L. Tuttle, *Chairman*

Mrs. Gladys Moloney	Mrs. Anna Begué Packman
---------------------	-------------------------

### PROGRAM OF THE FIFTIETH ANNIVERSARY DINNER

Biltmore Hotel, Los Angeles, November 21, 1933

Introduction of Guests

"The Next Fifty Years" .....*Henry R. Wagner, President*

"Los Tiempos Viejos" (Living Pictures of the old  
Spanish Days

Brief Greetings on the Golden Anniversary....  
*Rev. Joseph Thomson, O.F.M.*

Address, "The Valley of Dry Bones"..*Dr. Robert Glass Cleland*

Greeting .....*Hamlin Garland*

Our Album (Living Pictures of Notable Events and  
Personalities of Fifty Years Ago)

*one hundred seventeen*

HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF  
SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA  
CALENDAR  
1933

January 3

Installation of Officers

Remarks from the President

Address—REMINISCENCES AND LANDMARKS OF  
YESTERDAY—*Don Carlos J. Prudhomme*

February 7

Papers — PIONEER PRESSES OF CALIFORNIA, by  
*Carl I. Wheat*, read by Mrs. Catherine P. Wheat  
THE EARLY SPANISH PRESS IN CALIFORNIA  
*Robert E. Cowan*

March 7

Address—SOME CEREMONIES OF THE SOUTHERN  
CALIFORNIA INDIANS—*Lindley Bynum*

April 4

Address—LIFE AND CUSTOMS OF EARLY DAYS IN  
CALIFORNIA—illustrated with display of an old  
California "hope chest" and collection of shawls and  
mantillas — *Anna Begué Packman*

May 2

Address—ROMANCE OF THE CLIPPER SHIPS  
illustrated with stereopticon slides  
*Marshall Stimson*

Address—DISCOVERY OF CALIFORNIA  
illustrated with slides showing advance of knowledge  
of the coast as revealed in early cartography —  
*Henry R. Wagner*

one hundred eighteen



CALENDAR — 1933

June 3

Tea for members at home of Mrs. V. R. G. Wilbur, Pasadena

June 10

ANNUAL LANDMARK PILGRIMAGE

Rancho San José, Pomona

Program—REMINISCENCES OF THE RANCHO

*Don Francisco Palomares III*

THE POMONA I REMEMBER — *J. Gregg Layne*

GREETINGS FROM POMONA HISTORICAL SOCIETY — *Edwin Rhodes*

TOUR OF LANDMARKS

July, August—Vacation

September 5

Address—MILITARY OPERATIONS IN SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA BETWEEN 1850-1870

*Arthur Woodward*

October 3

Address—THE TEXAS-SANTA FE EXPEDITION OF 1841—*Frederick Webb Hodge*

November 7

Symposium—LOS ANGELES IN 1883

led by *Sarah Bixby Smith*

illustrated with stereopticon slides shown by

*Marion Parks*

newspaper clippings of period reviewed by

*Laura C. Cooley*

November 21

FIFTIETH ANNIVERSARY DINNER

Biltmore Hotel

December 5

Annual Election of Directors

Address—TREASURES IN MEXICO—*Henry R. Wagner*

Reception to New Members



3  
5  
*Law - Reglamentos*

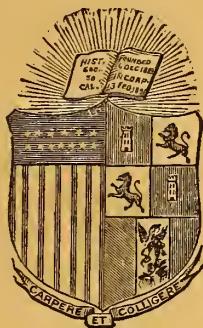
Organized November 1, 1883

PART I

Incorporated February 13, 1891

VOL. XV

## ANNUAL PUBLICATIONS



# HISTORICAL SOCIETY

OF

## SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA

---

---

1931

---

---

*Commemorating the One Hundred and Fiftieth Anniversary  
of the Founding of Los Angeles, September 4, 1781*

---

---

LOS ANGELES, CAL.

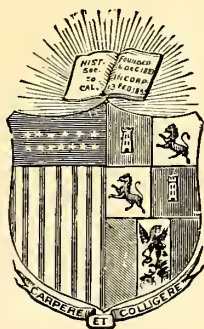
Adams County Public Library  
900 Webster Street  
PO Box 2270  
Fair Haven, VT 05743-0270



Organized November 1, 1883  
PART I

Incorporated February 13, 1891  
VOL. XV

## ANNUAL PUBLICATIONS



# HISTORICAL SOCIETY

OF

## SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA

---

---

# 1931

---

---

*Commemorating the One Hundred and Fiftieth Anniversary  
of the Founding of Los Angeles, September 4, 1781*

---

---

McBride Printing Company  
LOS ANGELES, CAL.



**OFFICERS AND DIRECTORS**  
**of the**  
**HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA**  
**for**  
**1 9 3 1**

**Officers**

J. GREGG LAYNE ..... President  
LILLIAN A. WILLIAMSON ..... First Vice-President  
CHARLES YALE ..... Second Vice-President  
LAURANCE L. HILL ..... Secretary-Treasurer  
DR. OWEN C. COY ..... Curator

**Board of Directors**

J. GREGG LAYNE	LAURANCE L. HILL
LILLIAN A. WILLIAMSON	ARTHUR M. ELLIS
CHARLES YALE	DR. JOHN C. PARISH
LINDLEY BYNUM	

---

**COMMITTEES**  
**1931**

**FINANCE**

Arthur M. Ellis, *Chairman*  
J. Gregg Layne  
Laurance L. Hill

**MEMBERSHIP**

Frank Rolfe, *Chairman*  
Mrs. Harry Leigh Bentley  
Mrs. Susanna Pepper

**HISTORY AND LANDMARKS**

Mrs. Marguerite Eyer Wilbur, *Chairman*  
Mrs. Florence Dodson Schoneman  
George W. Beattie

**LOCAL SOCIETY RELATIONS**

George W. Beattie, *Chairman*  
William McPherson  
Dr. Perry Worden

**PROGRAM**

Lillian A. Williamson, *Chairman*  
Estelle M. Williamson  
Dr. John C. Parish  
Charles Yale  
Marion Parks

**PUBLICATIONS**

Marion Parks, *Chairman*  
Arthur M. Ellis  
Laurance L. Hill  
Lindley Bynum

# CALENDAR

## 1931

---

- JANUARY 6—Installation of Officers  
PRESIDENT'S ANNUAL ADDRESS
- FEBRUARY 3—Paper, WHEN LOS ANGELES WAS A CITY OF  
VINES . . . . . By Mrs. A. S. C. Forbes
- MARCH 3—Address, ALEXANDER TAYLOR, THE FIRST CALI-  
FORNIA BIBLIOGRAPHER . . By Robert E. Cowan
- APRIL 7—Paper, A STORY OF THE BEAR FLAG REVOLUTION  
*as Dictated in 1888 by Benjamin Kelsey, One of the*  
*Participants, to Mary E. Foy* . By Miss Mary E. Foy
- MAY 5—Paper, MEXICAN ROOTS OF CALIFORNIA  
. . . . . By Phil Townsend Hanna
- JUNE 27—ANNUAL LANDMARK PILGRIMAGE,  
*Hacienda of Don Pio Pico*
- SEPTEMBER 1—Special Meeting, *LA FIESTA DE LOS ANGELES*
- OCTOBER 6—Address, LOS ANGELES IN 1850 . . By J. Gregg Layne
- NOVEMBER 3—Address, THE PROBLEM OF THE OWENS VALLEY  
INDIANS . . . . . By Frank M. Parcher
- DECEMBER 1—Program Commemorating the 100th Anniversary of the Ar-  
rival in California, December 5, 1831, of JONATHAN  
TRUMBULL WARNER, First President of the Histor-  
ical Society of Southern California  
Address . . . . . By William McPherson



## TABLE OF CONTENTS

PART I—ARTICLES	PAGE
A Great City Celebrates Its 150th Anniversary— By Laurance L. Hill .....	7
Governor Don Felipe de Neve—Chronological Note— By Lindley Bynum .....	57 ✓
Four Reports by Neve, 1777-1779— Translations by Lindley Bynum .....	63
“Se Fundaron un Pueblo de Españoles”—The Founding of Los Angeles—By Thomas Workman Temple II .....	69
Soldiers and Settlers of the Expedition of 1781—Genealogical Record—By Thomas Workman Temple II .....	99
<b>PART II—DOCUMENTS PERTAINING TO FOUNDING</b>	
OF LOS ANGELES .....	117
Supplies for the Pobladores— Translations by Thomas Workman Temple II .....	121
Correspondence Pertaining to Reglamento and to Recruit of Pobladores—Translations by Marion Parks .....	135
Bancroft Library Transcripts— Translations by Marion Parks .....	143
Outfits of Soldiers, Settlers and Families— Translation by Thomas Workman Temple II .....	146
Padron and Confirmation of Titles to Pueblo Lands— Translation by Phil Townsend Hanna .....	150
Regulations and Instructions for California—Felipe de Neve— Reprint of translation by Charles F. Lummis .....	157
Instructions for Recruit—Expedition of 1781— Translated by Marion Parks .....	189
<b>PART III—SPANISH REPRINTS OF TRANSLATED DOCUMENTS..</b>	
	204



FELIPE DE NEVE

Bronze statue presented to Los Angeles in commemoration of 150th anniversary by Californiana Parlor, No. 247, Native Daughters of the Golden West; Henry Lion, sculptor. The pool in center of the Plaza de Los Angeles, where it stands, was dedicated to the city's Founder in 1872.

# A GREAT CITY CELEBRATES ITS 150TH ANNIVERSARY

La Fiesta de Los Angeles, September 4-13, 1931

By LAURANCE L. HILL



LOS ANGELES—"as old as the Republic—as young as Today!"

Thus did the President of the United States in congratulating the metropolis of the West upon the one hundred and fiftieth anniversary of its founding, epitomize the whole story and spirit of America's fifth largest city!

The message was wired by Herbert Hoover to the President of La Fiesta de Los Angeles Association and read by the recipient over voice magnifiers to 110,000 people who completely filled the Olympic Stadium on the night of September 11, and to millions of others listening at their radios in all parts of the United States.

No wonder the nation's Chief Executive sent the telegram. Los Angeles was capturing the imagination of the nation by an epochal celebration of its birthday. The country had always known the City of the Angels as "young as Today." But for her to admit unblushingly an age of a century and a half by inviting everybody to a great community party lasting from the 4th to the 13th of September of 1931 astonished not only America but the world. It could not be possible that this city "without memories of a past,"—this city that "lives merely in the here and now," could have been in existence before England relinquished control over the Thirteen Colonies. It was inconceivable that it had been established long before Daniel Boone's followers

had brought Kentucky into the sisterhood of states. Boston only the year before had celebrated its three hundredth birthday. Could this bustling city on the opposite shore of the continent be even half as old? It was,—and, what is more, it impressed that fact on the whole of the continent with a celebration which far surpassed in magnitude and duration that held by the “Hub of the Universe”!

La Fiesta de Los Angeles, 1931, is now history. It was perhaps the most successful and most prolonged municipal natal anniversary celebration ever held in the country. And now that its place in history is well established we can afford, in the interest of accurate chronicling, to say that the City of the Queen of the Angels was not at all anxious in the beginning to admit her age. In fact, it took much coaxing and persuasion of certain leaders to get her to make the revelation. Now she is happy and glad that she did it.

As early as 1926, representatives of the Historical Society of Southern California, the Native Sons and Daughters of the Golden West, and the City Planning Association approached commercial bodies with the suggestion that preliminary work be started so that the sesquicentennial might be observed on a monumental scale in 1931. The commercial bodies refused to become interested. Let's keep the city's age a secret, they replied. “We want her to continue to be looked upon as the newest city in the country,” was the frank statement. The approaching sesquicentennial year was to be kept locked in the dark like a family skeleton.

But the historically minded knew that they were right. Fortified with this conviction they kept up the agitation,—kept it up for four long years. The result—on November 20, 1930, the “family skeleton” was observed sitting out on the front porch! It was on that day that Mayor John C. Porter, at the suggestion of the Downtown Business Men's Association, represented by Mr. N. P. Alexander, called together a group of citizens to consider the advisability of observing the one hundred and fiftieth anniversary of the founding of El Pueblo de Nuestra Señora





A gigantic birthday cake over the fountain in Pershing Square betokened Los Angeles' natal festivities.

la Reina de Los Angeles de Porciúncula. All interests were represented by those gathered at the mayor's office,—historical, commercial, social, fraternal, religious. Speaking on behalf of the “family skeleton” the historians announced that already she had refused to go back to the closet,—that she had firmly established herself out on the piazza and intended to remain there in her rocker indefinitely.

And this she did! What is more, by the time a year had passed she had reviewed a half dozen or more huge parades and pageants all arranged in her honor. But before a trumpet called, a drum beat, or a single parade had formed, the body and raiment of a lovely señorita encompassed her bony framework, and La Reina de Los Angeles “as young as Today” received, amid her smiles and her bows, the joyous plaudits of millions gathered to celebrate her one hundred and fiftieth birthday!

Everybody is pleased with and proud of the outstanding success of this great ten-day affair, a commemorative program of such magnitude as to necessitate a budget of a half-million dollars. This amount of money was secured in the face of a current gruelling business depression. When La Fiesta de Los Angeles Association closed its books all bills were paid. This in itself was a thing almost unheard of even in times of prosperity. Most community festivities are undertaken with the full expectation of a deficit and usually end just that way.

But the Mayor had called together the right sort of people on that warm November afternoon and once they had committed themselves to La Fiesta there was no stopping them.

However, the start was far from brilliant, as might be expected. There are comparatively few native Angelinos. Moreover, on an average, every other person on the streets has arrived here within the past five years. Naturally the newcomer knows a lot more about the city from which he came. His roots have not reached the rich soil of the city's traditions. His interests are in the surface strata from which he draws his living. And the year of 1931 notably found him entirely occupied with his own affairs to the exclusion of all others. When the subject of La Fiesta was broached to depression-worried business men of his type, they stopped still in their tracks and asked where the joke came in. Some thought it a fine idea but one that should be postponed for better days. Others could see in it only a gaudy street show with cheap amusements and gambling devices on the side, while still others, unduly suspicious, regarded it as a scheme whereby a great church organization might add historical glory to itself. Leaders among the last-named element declared they would have nothing to do with La Fiesta,—and in fact made radio attacks upon it, and otherwise threw obstacles in the way of its success.

We were at the end of 1930. An organization had to be built, money raised, a program conceived and carried



## THEIR DREAM CAME TRUE

Members of the Organization Committee of La Fiesta de Los Angeles. Standing, left to right, John G. Bullock, John G. Mott, Laurance L. Hill, Bruce A. Findlay, Edwin A. Meserve. Seated, left to right, D. W. Pontius, Grace S. Stoermer, Isidore B. Dockweiler, Mrs. Christine Sterling, Orra E. Monnette.

through and national interest aroused, all in eight months time. And because none of the preliminary work urged by the historical groups back in 1926 had been done, it became apparent that first of all a vast and vigorous campaign of education would have to be inaugurated if the community itself was to be marshalled behind the necessarily gigantic undertaking. Everything had to be built from the ground up,—and in the face of lukewarm public interest and staggering odds of financial frigidity and near-panic. Not a dollar could be raised without a hundred dollars' worth of personal effort and then wide-spread and endless publicity was required besides.

Every conceivable agency therefore was brought into service,—the press, the radio, the motion picture, the United



With colorful ceremony, in which descendants of Basilio Rosas, poblador of 1781, and of later Spanish pioneer families participated, the official Fiesta flag was raised at City Hall, June 9, 1931.

States Mail, the public speaker. Innumerable talks, illustrated and otherwise, were given from club to club, school to school, and from lodge and church to lodge and church. Circular and personal letters in untold numbers burdened the postmen.

At last things began to move. Easy-going citizens as yet unaffected by the depression and loath to become excited began to sense the impending activity and quickened their step and their interest. The city and county governments between them voted \$100,000 toward the half-million dollar budget. With the assurance of this money, headquarters, with a paid director and staff and publicity bureau, were opened March 5 in the Security Building at Fifth and Spring Streets, and the first professional, in contrast to the voluntary, work was started. From this point on, however, more and more men and women volunteered





Fiesta spirit was nurtured in Olvera Street. A pre-Fiesta dance contest before Avila Adobe.

their services. Thirty-five committees were formed. Live wires from clubs, lodges, public organizations, churches, schools, studios, banks, mercantile establishments, city, county and state offices, and from professional ranks, doctors, lawyers, educators, musicians, actors, were set to work at the thing they could do best—and there was plenty to do with the time desperately short.

And yet, with the city's best talent working fiercely to put the big job over, it almost failed. Not only was the general public only half sold on the project, but they harbored a lingering suspicion that the sponsors thereof had bitten off considerably more than they or the public itself could conveniently chew. The prevailing opinion seemed to be that the stupendously ambitious affair would be a dismal "flop," and those who shared in this view were thoroughly convinced that the following winter would be a hard one.

Feeling this way about it, it was not surprising that people openly side-stepped the offer of the Fiesta management to sell Founder Memberships entitling the holders to a generous allotment of preferred seats for \$100, and \$10 worth of admission tickets for \$5. It was only when the gorgeous street decorations of Spanish shawls and finely designed historical banners began to go up in the last days of August, that the aforesaid general public really began to come to life. Nobody had ever seen anything quite so unique and appropriate. Pendent at each downtown street intersection was a huge painting, 20 by 30 feet, designed by Juan D. Larranaga, of an event or person in early California history. From this time on people waxed enthusiastic and more and more of the gloomy doubts gave way to eager anticipation. Los Angeles became immensely proud of itself. There was a rush to buy tickets, and the sale of Founder Memberships mounted to a thousand in number. The objective had been 1781 members, in honor of the city's natal year.

#### AT LAST, THE DAY

Came September 4 clear, bright and warm. Clouds and rain the day before! Just to give the exhausted, overwrought Fiesta management, for good measure, one more near heart-failure, it seemed. But it was the last, for then followed ten glorious sunshiny days such as one reads about in the most expansive California boost literature. And from the beginning the spirit of the people seemed attuned to the glory of the days. They forgot their troubles and entered into La Fiesta beyond the fondest hopes of the hard-working committeemen. Dispelling thoughts of economic stress from their minds and heedful of their debt to the city's founders and pioneers, they joined whole-heartedly and enthusiastically in what is conceded to have been the outstanding community birthday observance in America. Thousands of celebrants milled about the City Hall and jammed the entrance facade and surrounding streets on the opening morning. A band crashed into the familiar first notes of "America." Standing under the great arch



"Thousands of celebrants milled about the City Hall . . ." Official opening of La Fiesta de Los Angeles, September 4, 1931.

at the entrance of the public building, the President of La Fiesta Association spoke introductory words into a microphone which not only carried them to the immense listening throng present but broadcast them to the Nation. A renowned Bishop, J. J. Cantwell, intoned an invocation, Dr. E. C. Moore assumed his duties as master of ceremonies and Mayor Porter declared La Fiesta de Los Angeles on its way. The Governor, who had flown down from the State Capital, brought a congratulatory message. From the throats of a famed speaker and of a well-known poet and playwright came eloquent words, an equally noted Bishop, W. Bertrand Stevens, pronounced benediction.

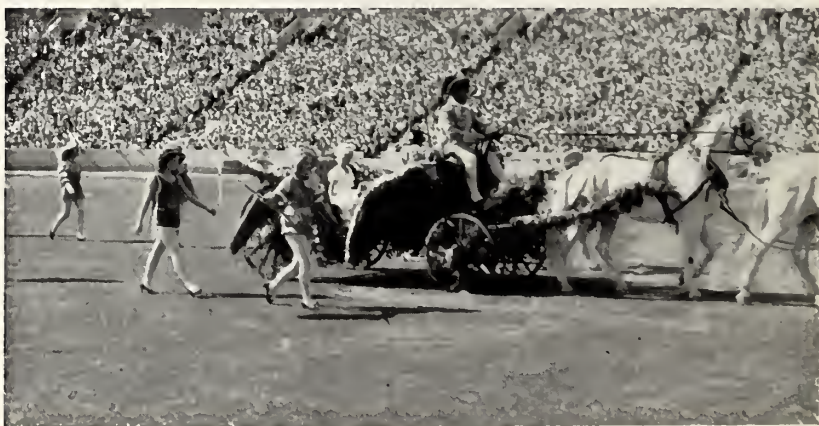
Beneath the broad-leaved rubber trees at the old Plaza a while later many of these notables joined the serious actors of a small but significant drama depicting the ceremonies which had taken place at almost the same spot 150 years before, when Don Felipe de Neve, Spanish Governor





Little princess of a day was Pattie Young. Presented by President Dockweiler at City Hall ceremonies she reigned over La Fiesta until the Queen was crowned.

of California, founded El Pueblo de Los Angeles, now a far-flung metropolis. There was singing of ancient hymns, chants of the seventeenth century and again the music of 300 years earlier.



"La Princesita de la Fiesta" rides in state to the throne.





"Came September 4 . . ." Governor James Rolph, Jr., Mayor John C. Porter, President Isidore B. Dockweiler at opening ceremonies.

To the ringing of the bells of the old Plaza Church began the pageant. Perhaps the colorful costumes of sol-



"Beneath the broad-leaved rubber trees at the old Plaza . . . depicting the ceremonies . . . of 150 years before . . ."

dier, priest and settler were brighter and in better repair than those of the original participants, and freer from dust, but no matter,—the spirit was what counted with the close-packed throngs which reverently listened and watched. The simple rites, the quiet dignity, the solemnity of it all, as the little drama was brought to an end and the actors thereof filtered out of sight, will always be remembered.

### THE GRAND HISTORICAL PARADE

Fast filling the seats of the great Olympic Stadium from whose towering walls Fiesta banners and the four flags of the city's history, were flung bravely in the breeze, eager humanity surged through gateway and tunnel. The impressive vastness of the but recently enlarged structure was a revelation in itself. With a canopied throne platform of enormous proportions at one end, and huge towers flanking the gateway opposite, it had been transformed into a colossal outdoor throne room. Steel-clad warriors paced



"Olympic Stadium . . . with a canopied throne . . . had been transformed into a colossal outdoor throne room."

the ramparts, standing out in bold relief against the sky. Others, together with gaily-clad trumpeteers, manned the mediæval gates and stood guard about the gorgeous throne. There came a swirl of brassy notes, and the barriers swung wide to admit a flower-bedecked coach drawn by snow white steeds in tandem, in which was seated a slip of a girl 10 years of age—*"La Princesita,"* who was reigning until the Queen of La Fiesta was crowned. This little Cinderella-for-a-day had been chosen for the honor from one of the city's orphanages and had been given her sceptre by the President of La Fiesta Association that morning at the City Hall exercises.

Attended by gorgeously attired ladies in waiting, by priests and heralds, by soldiery and courtiers in a stately procession of carriages down the center of the greensward, came Her Majesty. Slowly she mounted the crimson steps, paused by the glittering, gilded throne—and was lost from view to the expectant assembly as a horde of over-eager cam-





Mounted on magnificent white Arabians, Governor James Rolph and John G. Mott led the Grand Historical Parade



eramen swarmed from every direction, over and around the lady herself, her retinue and her throne.

But there came a surging billow of music at the gates and all eyes turned to greet the Grand Historical Parade, "Under Four Flags," which poured through the entry, and swung round the great oval, passing in review before the now orderly and visible throne, to the blare of brass and of silver, the mighty crash of cymbals, the roll of drums, and the scarcely heard announcements of the loudspeakers. It had already come down close-packed Figueroa Street before untold thousands and was now greeted with tumultuous applause by other thousands who had comfortable seats—but seldom used them.

A gorgeous parade—planned and assembled in ever so short a time, but marvelously satisfactory and complete. Under the Four Flags the picturesque participants swung bravely along with verve and precision, the motif, as was proper, being decidedly Spanish. Soldiers of the eighteenth century, *caballeros* of old Mexico, hundreds and hundreds of Western American horses—saddles and bridles and jingling spurs in silver and gold, resplendent *sombreros*, velvet suits and silken sashes, fluttering neckwear and glittering equipment. Astride high-stepping white Arabians and arrayed like Solomon in all his glory, had he been a highcaste Spanish Don, the Governor of the State and the Grand Marshal made striking figures. As the massed colors of the American Legion swung by, the audience, in wave after wave of approval, came to its feet, bared heads and roared enthusiastic approval. Certainly no finer display of horseflesh has ever been seen in California, even in the equine era. Cavalcade after cavalcade of handsome thoroughbreds—white Arabians and Western stock horses of the finest types, clattered musically along—horses of similar color in groups of twenty with riders in each group all costumed alike in colors forming striking harmonies with the colors of their mounts, and designed to carry out the idea of period and purpose and rank. Great bands in striking uniforms swung around the big oval in billows of crashing melody. Drum



## FOUR QUEENS

From left to right, Mrs. Robert F. Hicks, Mrs. Mark B. Lewis, Mrs. C. Modini Wood, Mrs. O. W. Childs, Queens of La Fiesta de Los Angeles 1931, 1896, 1895, and 1894 (the first Fiesta) respectively.

and bugle corps swaggered by with salvos of brass and thunders of sheepskin.

Ancient vehicles filled with blue-blooded descendants of an historical and happy past. Covered wagons laden with silvery-haired men and women, once babies born in these vehicles along the great overland routes. Allegorical floats. Lanceros in green and gold from up Santa Barbara way. Weatherbeaten stage coaches—six bronchos to each. Plainsmen in coonskin headgear and fringed pantaloons. Cabrillo's sailors and soldiers in helmets and breastplates of the sixteenth century. Fray Junípero Serra and his dusty gray-robed Franciscan followers.

Author of the Mission Play and his Honor the Mayor in an open carriage. Mission San Gabriel on sedately moving float. The flag of Mexico, its color-guard in white velvet, their horses coal-black, saddles and bridles studded



As the Archbishop, William May Garland places the crown on the head of La Fiesta's Queen. Coronation ceremonies, September 4, 1931.

with silver. The Shrine Patrol in nifty Spanish togs. The Elks Drill Team in shakos and ancient cross-belts and white broadcloth swallowtails. A group of *caballeros*, descendants of the very first in California, clad in red velvet, mounted on dapple-grey mounts. Twenty other *caballeros* in yellow velvet up on bays.



"... when the gorgeous street decorations . . . Spanish shawls and . . . historical banners . . . began to go up . . . the public . . . began to come to life." This banner shows coat-of-arms of La Fiesta.

Massive floats from Glendale and Pasadena, from the Los Angeles City Water Department, and one, a huge and bedazzling horn of plenty, entered by the City itself. Colorful Chinese,—fairy princesses on ponies; men, women and children in flowing garments, a cavorting Celestial lion alternately charging and retreating from his brilliantly-clad attendants on foot. A battered stagecoach, filled to overflowing with a gay chorus of girls singing "Oh Susannah!"

As was fitting, a coronation ball at the Sala De Oro of the Biltmore ended the first day's festivities, with the famous Banda de Policia from Mexico City furnishing part of the music and the Queen and her thirty ladies in waiting leading a grand march. Participants were in Spanish costume or in full dress. Outside in Olive Street before the hotel, a vast street dance was held to the lilt of a great orchestra of Mexican troubadours which played at various events throughout all of La Fiesta.





Fiesta Directors and Committee Chairmen on Admission Day. Left to right, J. A. McNaughton, Laurance L. Hill, G. D. Robertson, Grace S. Stoermer, Harry L. Harper, Mrs. Dean Mason, D. W. Pontius, Mrs. Louisa Guasti.

## THE TRANSPORTATION PARADE

Saturday, September 5, was Transportation Day. It marked the fifty-fifth anniversary of Los Angeles' connection with the East by rail, the second of a remarkable succession of anniversaries and legal holidays all within a week. The next day, September 6, was the one hundredth anniversary of the opening of the Santa Fe Trail for trade between Los Angeles and that famous trading post. The next day was Labor Day. And then September 8 marked the one hundred and sixtieth anniversary of the founding of Mission San Gabriel and the one hundred and thirty-fourth anniversary of the founding of Mission San Fernando. September 9, of course, was Admission Day. Just 81 years ago on that date California had become the thirty-first state of the Union.

No wonder the Fiesta Committee had been able to arrange so notable a series of events with such a succession of



Transportation Parade—Up Broadway behind twenty-six white horses came the "C. P. Huntington," locomotive used in construction of Central Pacific line, 1869!

birthday anniversaries as a framework around which to build a program. History, herself, had set the stage for La Fiesta de Los Angeles by having destined most of the significant happenings of a half century, a century, and a century and a half ago for the early part of September. Los Angeles was fortunate, in the first place, in having a birthday at all, for most cities just happen. But to have that day, September 4, followed by almost equally important natal days all in a row reads more like the happy ending of a novel than a correct community chronicle. But it was authenticated history and on the Truth of it all La Fiesta was built.

To repeat then, Saturday, September 5, was Transportation Day and it was observed by a downtown street parade reviewed by miles and miles of curbside sitters, and sidewalks packed solid from Washington Street up



"From feet to wings"

"... curbstone sitters, ... packed solid from Washington Street ... to the Plaza" saw the History of Transportation in a stunning parade.

Broadway and Main to the Plaza. A "whale" of a parade—not so colorful as the one of the day before, but with a snap and a go of its own and a gripping interest. For correct sequence and historical accuracy, as well as prompt-



ness and organization, it was outstanding. Each feature had been cleverly labeled, so that the slowest-thinking could tell what it was all about. There was transportation by shank's mares, by "Injun" drags, by dog-sleds, Mexican *carretas* filled with pretty guitar-strumming señoritas, by pony express and by badly shot and shattered stage coaches and also by historic stage coaches as brightly painted and as sturdy as the day they were built. The old Blue Army under Fremont ambled past in company with pack trains, red-shirted gold rushers and prairie schooners dragged by oxen.

The great twenty-mule borax outfit was a revelation to many. And there was the original transcontinental locomotive—very, very small, but spic and span, if you please, and still full of fight. Old Dobbin pulling the family buggy was quickly followed by the mule-drawn "hoss-car." Then the first of the electric cars, and so on to the rolling palaces of today. Came old fire engines with handbrakes, garlanded mottoes and everything. The first of the automobiles and others, followed by the great highway freighting vans we see now upon our asphalt and cement roads. And then the flying machine. It was indeed a great parade!

On the same day down at the Harbor the old Banning Home threw open its doors, and ten great dreadnaughts let down their ladders to thousands. In the evening there were fireworks at Terminal Island. At night also the Japanese held open house and celebrated with a parade, singing, dancing, speech making and a colorful reception at First and Weller Streets. Also in Los Angeles that night and every other night throughout La Fiesta, throngs visited the Japanese quarter where paper cherry blossoms and lanterns festooned the streets for many blocks and special entertainments were presented. Almost continuous were the gay hours of music and dancing at El Paseo de Los Angeles, the bit of Old Mexico on Olvera Street just off the Plaza, where the fiesta spirit had its deepest roots.





"One of the most magnificent religious dramas ever enacted . . . held 105,000 people spellbound . . ."

## SUNDAY—HIGH MASS AND VESPER SERVICE

Quoting Monday morning's *Times* regarding a great event on Sunday, September 6: "One of the most magnificent religious dramas ever enacted in the United States held 105,000 people spellbound in the Olympic Stadium at noon, with many of the highest priests in the Catholic Church in America and John McCormack, beloved Irish tenor, playing important roles." An attempt to further describe this glorious affair would be futile. The gathering itself alone was overwhelming and impressive enough. Then the pomp and circumstance, the massed chanting and responses, the magnificent setting, the precision of movement, the spirit of reverence and of devotion, the singing by 1500 students from parochial schools and by 500 priests, the glory and solemnity of it all, and the color, clog one's memory. The Pope had sent the Apostolic Delegate to the United

States across the continent from Washington, D. C., to celebrate Solemn Pontifical Mass.

Interdenominational Vesper Services at the Hollywood Bowl that evening were in their nature simpler, but equally impressive. The morning services had been overwhelming,—these were touching. Perhaps 35,000 found seating, standing or clinging room while other thousands turned back disappointed. Up to the stars swelled the chorus of one thousand picked voices from Protestant choirs—splendid voices and splendidly directed. Madame Ernestine Schumann-Heink, singing as always from her heart, captivated the huge throng. Divines of great repute took part, and—marvelous to relate, no seat was vacated until the last word of the benediction fell upon a hushed and reverent assembly. The services had been opened with a sacred concert by the official La Fiesta orchestra and were closed with the singing of Lutkin's "Choral Blessing" by La Fiesta A Capella Choir.

#### MONDAY'S RODEO AND CONGRESS OF ROUGH RIDERS

The great parade of the 4th made a showing of horse flesh—a magnificent showing of steeds blue blooded and pedigreed from generations back. Equines sleek of coat and delicate of nostril, whose natural gait was high, wide and handsome. Monday's parade also fairly bulged with horses. Many were of a different build and construction,—big boned buckskin bronchos, wiry Indian mustangs. Fleetness of animals and skill of riders were displayed by trick riders on beautiful Arabians from the famous Kellogg Farms. A U. S. Cavalry troop mounted on little dark Morgans presented an exhibition review.

Other riders were U. S. Cavalrymen, Canadian Northwest Mounted Police, Argentine Gauchos, Bedouins, Mexican Charros, Algerian Riffs, Russian Cossacks, American Indians, Pony Express Riders, Government Scouts, Cowboys and Cowgirls, Bronchobusters of 57 varieties. It was the greatest aggregation of trick riders most of the audience had ever seen and "they ate it alive."



Spirit of Old California went international with the brilliant assemblage of horses and horsemen of all nations for the Rodeo of September 7.

Followed then the Rodeo itself, also in the Olympic Stadium, consisting of hair-raising feats of horsemanship which made the old time circus look like a pink tea. Sandwiched in with these exciting events were rough and ready exhibitions on a large scale of practical horsemanship as pertains to the cattle range,—the roping of fleet-footed steers and elusive calves and the subduing of cantankerous nags.

### MISSION DAY

Tuesday was the day of the far-flung Franciscan Missions of old California. With the author of the Mission Play in charge of the program, old San Gabriel celebrated its one hundred and sixtieth anniversary by restoring to its old place in the weather-beaten campanile two missing bells, one of which had been astray for 117 years. With fitting ceremonies which began in the forenoon and ended at the





Participation by representatives of aristocratic Spanish-Californian families gave reality to the revival of old customs with La Fiesta. Waldo T. Tupper, Managing Director, greets Señoras Florencia Sepúlveda Schoneman and Florestina da la Ossa de Gilbert.

vesper hour, with the reading of Charles Warren Stoddard's great poem: "The Bells of San Gabriel"—the six reunited bells rang out in mellow-throated unison. Before the day closed there had been a procession of pioneers, a Pontifical Mass, a Spanish barbecue, songs and dances by the cast of the Mission Play and equine and sporting events.

In honor of its one hundred and thirty-fourth anniversary Mission San Fernando, much visited at all times, extended special hospitality on the same day, Tuesday, September 8. Old timers of the Valley acted as hosts and were assisted by Boy Scouts, who served as guides. From Santa Barbara to San Bernardino and San Diego, Missions and





"A Spanish wedding . . . in the dear old Plaza Church . . ." Thursday, September 10.

Asistencias held open house and a special program was put on at one of the old Verdugo Adobes in Glendale.

That evening the celebrated Banda de Policia of Mexico City and the equally celebrated Los Angeles Philharmonic Orchestra provided a joint concert at the Hollywood Bowl to which was added a gorgeous ballet, superbly costumed. Upward of 20,000 people witnessed this colorful event. The noted band came from the capital of Mexico at the special invitation of La Fiesta Association and played on numerous occasions. That evening also, as well as every evening and afternoon throughout La Fiesta, open house was held at Casa Adobe, the lovely old California hacienda of Southwest Museum under the direction of Mrs. Florence Dodson Schoneman. More than 6000 visitors were entertained there during the ten days of La Fiesta.

## DAY OF THE NATIVE BORN

To many, Admission Day was the day of days. Los Angeles had been chosen by the Native Sons and Native Daughters of the Golden West for their official observance of the eighty-first anniversary of California's entrance into the Union. They came by thousands from all parts of the State and especially from San Francisco. It seemed as if the Bay Region had descended upon us en masse and it was apparent that for good looks and for wholesome good nature they were prize winners. While all but one were in Spanish or carnival array with colors galore, that one was easily the center of attraction. A chubby figure in a black cutaway, who—silk tile in hand, and beaming and bowing to right and left—heroically "hoofed" it at the head of his own Parlor. Again it was—his Excellency, the Governor.

A big feature of the parade "California the Golden," which represented 58 counties, was that of the 21 hand-drawn carretas, upon which were mounted colorful banners depicting each a Mission, an entry contributed by San Francisco. A clever idea that, giving the paraders something to do, and they were a snappy, happy-looking and busy bunch who marched with verve and an irresistible swing.

There were also in this tremendously long line, prairie schooners, U. S. troops, bull-teams and a U. S. Senator, Indian papooses and the Mayor of San Francisco, floats without end from far and near—each stressing its own big idea. There were covered wagons and covered-wagon babies, rank after rank of husky sailors, stage coaches, juvenile groups beyond computation drawing carretas laden with flowers and fruits; pack-trains and gold-seekers, U. S. Marines, Indians representing 18 tribes, veterans of many wars, Parlor after Parlor of native born—their bands and their drum-corps and their drill-teams. It was all educational and inspiring—a most amazing parade.

More than 5000 participated in the Admission Day ball at the Biltmore that night, making it the largest and most brilliant affair ever staged by the Native Sons and Native Daughters. Three large ballrooms were used for the beautifully costumed dancers. Spectacular pomp and circumstance



Representing the placing of the star for California, thirty-first state, in the American flag, a floral float typified the theme of California's 81st Admission Day Anniversary.

reached high-tide when the President of La Fiesta Association escorted the Queen of La Fiesta to her throne and made a short speech in her honor. All this had been preceded by a formal dinner for the notables of the visiting Parlors.

#### A SPANISH WEDDING

Thursday's highlight was the marriage of a modern young couple of Spanish blood in the dear old Plaza Church by an *ancient* Spanish ceremony. The wedding party was then taken in old-time horse-drawn vehicles to Chavez Ravine where was dedicated El Camino de Los Angeles, a new highway for the use of horse-drawn vehicles and equestrians. This will extend from near the Plaza via Castelar Street through Chavez Ravine and Elysian Park to Griffith Park. The wedding and dedication were picturesque affairs and as a matter of course were followed by an old time Spanish barbecue. At night "Los Rúbios," an opera based upon early California life, was given its pre-





"... gloriously wrought and gloriously lighted—float after float . . ." was La Fiesta's climax feature—the Pageant of Jewels.

miere in Griffith Park Greek Theatre to a capacity audience. It was sung in English to the accompaniment of the Los Angeles Playground Symphony Orchestra.

### ELECTRICAL SPLENDOR

Hollywood had its "splendiferous" fling Friday evening, September 11, when the "Pageant of Jewels," a huge electrical parade given under the auspices of the Association of Motion Picture Producers jammed its way through waiting and watchful thousands gathered outside the Stadium and 55 minutes overdue because of these tremendous throngs, entered the huge oval, packed to capacity with 110,000 eager seat holders, who had begun surging in at 6:30. It was to this vast multitude that President Hoover's telegram of congratulations was read. Only once before in America was there ever a larger audience gathered at once place to witness an event.

Despite the long wait, not a dull moment had ensued. The gathering throng was in itself thrilling, and to this was





Light, dazzlingly symbolized in feminine beauty and electrical brilliance, from Sierra's height to Los Angeles. One of the scores of scintillating floats thousands thronged to see.

added acrobatic riding by the international horsemen, an exhibition polo game and stunts both delightful and amusing. The entrance of the Wampus "Baby Stars" in a huge electrically illuminated "nest" out of which a mechanical stork drew them forth one by one for introduction, was a unique and colorful affair, and the great procession—gloriously wrought and gloriously lighted — float after float, stunned the audience into an almost inarticulate maze. Never was there a more splendid electrical spectacle anywhere at any time.\*

The florally bedecked cars in which rode prominent motion picture stars exhibited a sameness—charming and delightful, however, but each of the great glittering iridescent floats, a "pageant of jewels" in itself, carried a thought and a message of its own. To this was added, of course, the

\*The floats were designed by Mr. and Mrs. J. A. Biggam and electrical effects were created by Frank N. Murphy.

silvery-throated blare of bands, the crash of brazen cymbals, the roll of countless drums, the strumming and beat of planes overhead and the endless and appreciative roar of spectators once they had regained the use of their vocal organs.

The last float, entering at 11:25, felt its way slowly around the already overcrowded arena, and then there came as a triumphant climax a short, simple but splendidly enacted ceremony. A great silvery-bodied blimp soared aloft and made a circuit of the stadium, bearing suspended a silken American flag with a score of huge searchlights turned upon it, while in the field below, her great voice amplified to the utmost, Madame Ernestine Schumann-Heink sang the "Star Spangled Banner" to the accompaniment of ten massed bands of 1000 pieces. It all was a thrill never to be forgotten.

#### THE AIR MEET

As was perhaps natural and fitting after more than a week spent in glorifying the Past, the public, nearing the close of La Fiesta, indulged in activities strictly down to the minute. Out at the Municipal Airport 40,000 still enthusiastic celebrators roared, screamed, ducked and thrilled as Army and Navy planes, in the most amazing fashion, vied in hair-raising stunts. Marvelously under control, giant bombers and sparrow-like pursuit planes raced, wheeled, dived in unison and climbed again into the cerulean blue.

Commercial planes then took the stage, pulling acrobatic stunts galore and indulging in unbelievable tests of speed. Of the 150 planes on the program, one flown by a woman—excelling in swiftness in the seven events—won over five men. On Sunday a similar program drew 50,000 out on the last day of La Fiesta. No accident had occurred to mar the pleasure of either day.

#### ALL HAIL LA FIESTA!

Thus closed the ten-day celebration of the one hundred and fiftieth anniversary of the founding of Los Angeles. On the speeding wings of airplanes it rode into history. Its success had surpassed the fondest dreams of those who conceived and sponsored it and who labored so un-

selfishly and unceasingly for it. Its success at least embarrassed those more-or-less cheerful prophets who were fond of referring to La Fiesta as "La Fiasco" and who promised that the ten days would be given over to an orgy of gambling, drinking and crime. Highway robbery, theft, rapine and sudden death were freely predicted in all too frequent radio broadcasts,—all of which was to be blamed on the heads of the Historians who had sprung the unwelcome idea upon an unprepared, unsuspecting and helpless public.

Of course none of these dire prophecies came true. Lawlessness and crime held no more than their usual sway from September 4 to 13. Fiesta news during that period relegated them to an inside page, which was something. And as for those who encouraged the haggard, hard-working committees by postponing their ticket purchases until the late afternoon of September 3, they are among those who say that from now on La Fiesta should be a yearly event.

La Fiesta "paid out." The expenses averaged \$50,000 for each of the ten days. Opened without a dollar of the half million dollar budget on the credit side, the books closed, as before mentioned, with all bills receipted. In between, more than once, sums in five figures were borrowed from a bank on the personal notes of members of the Executive Committee.

Nearly 600,000 persons attended events for which admission was charged. However, there were more events given without admission charge than with. Police estimate that 300,000 witnessed the Pageant of Jewels outside the stadium. Undoubtedly as many saw the Grand Historical Parade on September 4 from the streets prior to its reaching the Stadium.

Material benefits were many. Transportation leaders estimate that there were 300,000 visitors to the city who brought \$3,000,000 of new money with them. La Fiesta Association preliminary to and during the celebration gave employment to 18,000 people. More than \$290,000 was paid in wages, of which \$42,000 was for musicians alone. Fiesta publicity clippings from all parts of the world fill



Hail La Fiesta! Olympic Stadium entrance in festive attire for Los Angeles' 150th birthday.

a newspaper-sized scrapbook of 1100 pages. Radio broadcasts, local and national, totaled 164½ hours. Newspapers and newspaper syndicates took 1600 pictures of events. Newsreels were shown to millions in motion picture theaters throughout the world. An eastern paper commenting editorially on La Fiesta said "Depression in Los Angeles—Los Angeles laughs it off!" The year 1931 may have been the wrong time to hold a birthday party but it was the right time to receive publicity. And Los Angeles received it. If the space received *could* have been purchased, it with air time and other contributed publicity media, would have cost fully two million dollars.

A statement by the President of La Fiesta Association late in 1930 gives the underlying reason for the success of the observance of the sesquicentennial and why now all are proud and glad that it was held. He said: "Los Angeles should celebrate its birthday whether or not it attracts a single visitor or a single dollar thereby. The spiritual benefits to our own people far outweigh any possible material benefits. When one considers that fully half of our population lived in other cities five years ago, it is essential that we

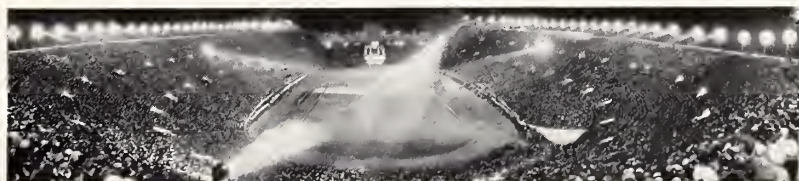


acquaint them with the history of the new city of their adoption. The real greatness of Los Angeles depends upon this for when we know history we make history. The example of the pioneers has pointed the way to every accomplishment of this generation."

Certainly this rather than a commercial motive animated the Historical Society of Southern California, the Native Sons and Native Daughters of the Golden West and the City Planning Association when they in 1926 urged that plans be made looking forward to 1931. These groups knew that Los Angeles was "as old as the Republic" and they appreciated the value of making this fact common knowledge not only here among that half of the population which had just stepped off the train but also back there in the states where they had boarded the train. They perceived that a new respect for and a deeper loyalty to Los Angeles would result. "It is the ineffable presence of the Past in the living Present which produces the Personality of a city," and the historically minded realized that only a lack of knowledge on the part of the American people of the heroic Past of their fifth largest city kept its Personality from reflecting the true nobility of its Soul!



"On speeding wings of airplanes  
La Fiesta rode into history."



One hundred and ten thousand spectators . . . glitter of lights . . . music . . .  
"a thrill never to be forgotten."

## STATEMENT OF PRINCIPLES

## LA FIESTA ASSOCIATION, LTD.

*WHEREAS*

By action of his honor, John C. Porter, Mayor of Los Angeles, a committee of citizens has been appointed to arrange for a proper and fitting celebration of the 150th Anniversary of the founding of the City of Los Angeles

*AND WHEREAS*

This committee by proper legal action is now incorporated as La Fiesta Association, Ltd., a non-profit California corporation, with duly elected Board of Directors and Officers

*AND WHEREAS*

This great historic celebration is to commemorate the colorful and romantic history of California, particularly of this city, and to glorify the heroic sacrifices and inspired courage of the early pioneers who laid the foundations upon which the splendid achievements of this city have been built

*AND WHEREAS*

In the long record of this city's growth and development, every race, nationality, and creed have participated, and have each contributed a great share in the up-building of this community

*AND WHEREAS*

The primary purpose of this celebration is to exemplify the unity of spirit in this community and to emphasize the love and loyalty of all of its citizens for its past and present—and their confident hopes for its future—hopes which can only be realized through the constant growth of a greater spirit of civic patriotism and unity of purpose

*BE IT THEREFORE RESOLVED*

That the Board of Directors of La Fiesta Association hereby set themselves on record that it is their desire to so conduct this celebration that every member of this community may be able to participate wholeheartedly, with the understanding that the celebration is a commemoration of the entire growth and development of this city irrespective of race, nationality or creed—and that this Association is non-sectarian, non-political, and non-partisan.

## CALENDAR OF EVENTS LEADING TO LA FIESTA DE LOS ANGELES, 1931

- Nov. 20, 1930:* Group of citizens called by Mayor John C. Porter to his office form One Hundred and Fiftieth Birthday Organization Committee with Isidore B. Dockweiler as chairman and Bruce Findlay of Chamber of Commerce as temporary secretary.
- Nov. 24, 1930:* Organization Committee dinner guests of James R. Martin, member of committee, at Biltmore, for general discussion of plans for celebration.
- Dec. 1, 1930:* Organization Committee meets to begin selection of names for large General Committee.
- Dec. 5, 1930:* Organization Committee continues selection of General Committee. Laurance L. Hill named publicity chairman.
- Dec. 8, 1930:* First formal press announcement made of plan to celebrate one hundred and fiftieth anniversary of founding of Los Angeles.
- Jan. 2, 1931:* Harry L. Harper, who secured indorsement of Chamber of Commerce for celebration plans, added to Organization Committee.
- Jan. 22, 1931:* Research discloses four historical anniversaries of almost equal interest follow city's birthday all within week's time.
- Jan. 28, 1931:* Tentative program for week's celebration based on succession of historical anniversaries, as outlined by Marion Parks, adopted in principle.
- Feb. 7:* Chairmen of large number of tentative committees hold first meeting. John G. Mott reports all noted horsemen of Southern California already contacted for Sept. 4 celebration. Herman C. Lichtenberger and Grace S. Stoermer report Native Sons and Native Daughters of Golden West have agreed informally to come to Los Angeles for Admission Day.
- Feb. 18:* Organization Committee adopts name of "La Fiesta de Los Angeles, One Hundred and Fiftieth Birthday" Committee. County Counsel and City Attorney consulted as to legality of rendering of financial assistance by county and city governments. Waldo T. Tupper chosen as Managing Director of La Fiesta with E. C. Porter as Assistant Director and Victor Clark as assistant to the Director.
- Feb. 25:* La Fiesta Committee votes to incorporate and to enlarge its tentative celebration program.
- March 5:* Official headquarters opened in Security Building at Fifth and Spring Streets. Red, green and yellow, colors of former Fiestas, re-adopted.
- March 16:* Official Program announced in press.
- March 23:* La Fiesta Committee legally incorporated as La Fiesta Association, Ltd.

- March 26:* City Council votes \$75,000 to Fiesta expenses after hearing John G. Mott and Harry L. Harper, representing La Fiesta Association.
- April 1:* First meeting of Board of Directors of incorporated body. Isidore B. Dockweiler elected President; Grace S. Stoermer, Secretary, and John G. Mott, Chairman of Executive Committee.
- April 7:* Meeting at Alexandria Hotel with heads of various business groups to secure advance subscriptions to Founder Memberships preparatory to meeting of General Committee.
- April 8:* Publicity Committee chooses staff of professional writers headed by Jack Stratton.
- April 14:* Los Angeles Ad Club devotes special luncheon program to La Fiesta.
- April 16:* Meeting of General Committee at Sala De Oro, Biltmore Hotel, to formally launch sale of Founder Memberships. Attendance 1500. Addresses, music and tableaux depicting founding of Los Angeles.
- April 20:* Board of Supervisors votes \$25,000 of county funds to help finance Fiesta.
- April 29:* "Declaration of Principles" of La Fiesta Association as "non-sectarian, non-political and non-partisan" is published. Work of personally contacting Parlors of Native Sons and Native Daughters of the Golden West throughout entire state in furtherance of Admission Day plans, is started.
- May 6:* General meeting of 35 committee chairmen at Biltmore.
- May 8:* Meeting of presidents and secretaries of all civic club and business organizations throughout Southern California with Fiesta Directors at Hotel Alexandria dinner. Fiesta, dancing contest at Olvera Street. Latter appeared in newsreels all over the world. Los Angeles Lions Club holds La Fiesta meeting.
- May 9:* Mayor John C. Porter leaves for Europe with invitation to former King of Spain to attend Fiesta as City's guest. Declares September 4 a legal holiday before departure.
- May 12:* Fiesta officials call on Secretary-of-the-Navy Adams on Battleship Texas at Harbor and ask for Navy coöperation during La Fiesta.
- May 18:* Los Angeles chosen for official observance of Admission Day by Grand Parlor of Native Sons of Golden West. Gold discovery on Olvera Street widely publicized.
- May 21:* Los Angeles Realty Board gives La Fiesta luncheon program.
- May 22:* La Fiesta theme of annual Pioneer Dinner at Women's Athletic Club.
- May 27:* Banda de Policia of Mexico City, official Mexican government band, invited to participate in La Fiesta.
- June 4:* Los Angeles High School students under direction of Roger Sterrett present pageant of city's founding and growth.



*June 9:* La Fiesta flag, as designed by Roy Silent for a committee headed by Mrs. L. B. MacGowan, presented to City and raised at City Hall. Arthur M. Ellis, Chairman of Historical Reference Committee, master-of-ceremonies. Flag was adopted by City Council as official city flag.

*June 15:* Dance pageant of founding of Los Angeles presented by Los Angeles Ebell Club. Mrs. H. L. Bentley, Chairman.

*July 9:* Rudy Vallee sings La Fiesta song over national broadcast with Graham McNamee announcing. "Dons and 'Donnas' of La Fiesta," organization of several thousand young people to promote advance sale of tickets, hold ceremonies at City Hall and at Pershing Square, initiating construction of city's Birthday Cake and again at Sala de Oro at Biltmore in evening. Goodyear Blimp flies over city advertising La Fiesta.

*July 10:* Los Angeles Rotary has La Fiesta program.

*July 14:* School children re-enact signing of Treaty of Cahuenga at Campo de Cahuenga.

*July 21:* La Fiesta Association underwrites Motion Picture Electrical Pageant.

*July 22:* Los Angeles Breakfast Club gives special Fiesta program.

*July 28:* Official Fiesta coat of arms, as designed by Juan D. Larranaga, adopted.

*July 29:* Los Angeles Kiwanis has La Fiesta program.

*Aug. 1:* La Fiesta theme of annual Hollywood Old Settlers Picnic. Junior Chamber of Commerce starts air tour of state with 47 planes advertising La Fiesta.

*Aug. 4:* Special American Legion luncheon for La Fiesta.

*Aug. 6:* Governor announces willingness to declare 6 legal holidays, September 4 to 9 to aid Fiesta.

*Aug. 11:* National Broadcasting Company offers to broadcast principal Fiesta events without cost.

*Aug. 27:* Fiesta officials guests of honor at Santa Barbara Old Spanish Days Fiesta.

*Aug. 28:* City Hall ceremonies inaugurate flood-lighting of gorgeous street decorations with artist Larranaga's huge paintings of scenes and characters from local history suspended at intersections. Letter-writing contest closed and prizes awarded.

*Sept. 3:* Rain.

*Sept. 4:* La Fiesta opens.

*Note:* In addition to the notable events listed above, Fiesta programs were presented by practically every woman's club, service club, and many church organizations throughout Los Angeles County, and in San Diego, San Buenaventura and Santa Barbara, as well. Merchants co-operated generously, and several leading stores presented Fiesta programs both for employees and for the public.

## CALENDAR OF EVENTS—LA FIESTA DE LOS ANGELES, 1931

*September 4:*

8:00 a. m., Salutes by guns, church bells and factory whistles; 9:30, Formal opening ceremonies at City Hall; 11:30, Re-enactment Founding of City at Plaza; 1:30 p. m., Grand Historical Parade and Coronation of Queen, Olympic Stadium; 10:00, Coronation Ball, Biltmore Hotel Sala de Oro; Afternoon, Reception Casa de Adobe.

*September 5:*

1:00 p. m., Transportation Parade, downtown Los Angeles; Afternoon and evening, Receptions by Battle Fleet in Harbor, at Casa de Adobe, and Japanese Section; 8:30 p. m., Harbor, fireworks displays.

*September 6:*

11:15 a. m., Sacred Concert, Olympic Stadium; 12 m., Pontifical Mass, Olympic Stadium, 7:00 p. m., Vesper Service, Hollywood Bowl, auspices Protestant churches of Los Angeles; Afternoon and evening, Receptions and entertainment Casa de Adobe and Japanese Section.

*September 7:*

2:00 p. m., Rodeo and Congress of Rough Riders, Stadium; Afternoon and evening, Reception Casa de Adobe.

*September 8:*

Mission Day. Special ceremonies at Mission San Gabriel and reception at Mission San Fernando; 8:30 p. m., Musical Fiesta featuring Banda de Policia of Mexico City, Hollywood Bowl.

*September 9:*

Admission Day. 10:30 a. m., Parade auspices Native Sons and Daughters of the Golden West, "California the Golden" reviewed in Stadium; 9:00 p. m., Admission Day Ball, Biltmore Hotel Sala de Oro.

*September 10:*

10:00 a. m., Aquatic events at all beaches from Long Beach to Santa Monica; 10:30, Band Concert, Old Plaza; 11:00, Spanish Wedding, Old Plaza Church, followed by Grand Cavalcade and formal dedication of El Camino de Los Angeles with barbecue and sports at Chavez Ravine; 8:15 p. m., "Los Rubios," California Opera, Greek Theater; Afternoon, Reception Casa de Adobe; Evening, Elks Band and Drill Team, Venice Ballroom, followed by costume ball, and fireworks displays at all beaches, Long Beach to Santa Monica.

*September 11:*

6:30 p. m., California Artists Dinner and Ball, Breakfast Club; 9:00, "Pageant of Jewels," Motion Picture Electrical Parade, preceded by special events, Olympic Stadium.

*September 12:*

10:00 a. m., Air Manuevers over Los Angeles by Army, Navy and National Guard Planes; 1:00 p. m., Air Races, Los Angeles Municipal Airport, preceded by display, "Epic of Transportation."

*September 13:*

Repetition of Air Fiesta program; At San Diego, Rededication of reconstructed San Diego Mission.

*General Events throughout La Fiesta:*

El Paseo de Los Angeles (Olvera Street) open daily with special music and dancing in evenings; Concerts by Official Fiesta Orchestra in Pershing Square daily; Street dancing in Olive Street between Fifth and Sixth; Transportation History Exhibit, Southern Pacific Railroad Yards, Alameda and Macy streets, daily 10:00 a. m. to 10:00 p. m.

*Radio Broadcasts during La Fiesta, courtesy Radio Committee and Stations:*

TRANSCONTINENTAL: National Broadcasting Company — September 4, 11:30 a. m., from Plaza; September 8, 8:30 p. m., from Hollywood Bowl; September 11, 7:00 p. m., from Olympic Stadium.

COLUMBIA-DON LEE BROADCASTING SYSTEM: Grand Historical Parade and other events at Olympic Stadium and Biltmore Hotel, September 4 to 11.

## PERSONALITIES, LA FIESTA DE LOS ANGELES, 1931

## OFFICERS AND DIRECTORS

ISIDORE B. DOCKWEILER.....	President, Member Executive Committee
ORRA E. MONNETTE.....	First Vice-President, Member Executive Committee
HARRY L. HARPER.....	Second Vice-President, Member Executive Committee
JOHN G. MOTT.....	Third Vice-President, Chairman Executive Committee
GRACE S. STOERMER .....	Secretary, Member Executive Committee
MARION PARKS .....	Assistant Secretary
BEN R. MEYER .....	Treasurer
JAMES R. MARTIN .....	Member Executive Committee
G. D. ROBERTSON .....	Member Executive Committee
D. W. PONTIUS .....	Member Executive Committee
MRS. DEAN MASON .....	Member Executive Committee
MRS. LOUISA GUASTI .....	Member Executive Committee

N. P. ALEXANDER	LAURANCE L. HILL
MRS. ALLAN C. BALCH	PRESTON HOTCHKISS
RUSSELL H. BALLARD	J. A. H. KERR
E. MANCHESTER BODDY	MRS. LILLIE BRIGGS MACGOWAN
FRANK A. BOUELE	JOHN STEVEN MCGROARTY
JOHN G. BULLOCK	EDWIN A. MESERVE
MRS. CLARA B. BURDETTE	E. C. MITCHELL
HARRY CHANDLER	MARCO R. NEWMARK
JOHN T. COOPER	H. W. O'MELVENY
MRS. A. BENNETT COOKE	HAROLD WILLIAM ROBERTS
JAMES E. DAVIS	MRS. FLORENCE DODSON SCHONEMAN
EDWARD A. DICKSON	MAX W. SOCHA
ARTHUR M. ELLIS	LEO V. YOUNGWORTH

BRUCE A. FINDLAY

## CHAIRMEN OF MAJOR COMMITTEES

ISIDORE B. DOCKWEILER .....	General Program
JAMES R. MARTIN .....	Finance
LAURANCE L. HILL .....	Publicity and Advertising
HARRY L. HARPER .....	Decorations
CARL HAVERLIN .....	Radio
HAROLD WILLIAM ROBERTS .....	Music
MRS. CHRISTINE STERLING .....	Historical Sites
ARTHUR M. ELLIS .....	Historical Reference
GRACE S. STOERMER .....	Native Daughters of the Golden West
HERMAN C. LICHTENBERGER .....	Native Sons of the Golden West
M. C. LEVEE .....	Motion Picture Participation
ORRA E. MONNETTE .....	Membership and Reception of Notables
JOHN G. MOTT .....	Historical Parade
D. W. PONTIUS .....	Transportation Parade
J. A. McNAUGHTON .....	World's Congress of Rough Riders and Rodeo
BISHOP JOHN J. CANTWELL .....	Pontifical Mass
DR. JAMES H. LASH .....	Interdenominational Vesper Service
GLENN M. TINDALL ....	California Opera, Executive Secretary Musical Fiesta
COL. RICHARD BARNITZ .....	Air Fiesta
WILLIAM MAY GARLAND .....	Queen's Ball
SENATOR R. F. DEL VALLE .....	Honorary Advisory Council
MRS. LEILAND ATHERTON IRISH .....	Letter-writing Contest
MRS. BOYLE WORKMAN .....	Woman's Clubs Participation
MRS. QUEEN W. BOARDMAN .....	Flowers
CAPTAIN A. H. WOODBINE .....	Army and Navy Co-operation
RUSSELL H. WAGNER .....	American Legion Co-operation
ROY E. STECKEL .....	Vigilance, Safety and Traffic
O. N. SMITH .....	Transportation
EDWIN A. MESERVE .....	Invitations
H. C. FRYMAN .....	Hotel
RUSSELL MCD. TAYLOR .....	Insurance

## MANAGING DIRECTOR AND AIDES

WALDO T. TUPPER .....	Managing Director
E. C. PORTER .....	Assistant
VICTOR M. CLARK .....	Assistant



## THE QUEEN

MRS. ROBERT FRANK GROSS (ELIZABETH HICKS)—Mrs. Hicks was born in Los Angeles at Eleventh and Main streets; granddaughter of O. W. Childs, Sr., who came to California in 1850, from Vermont.

## LADIES IN WAITING TO THE QUEEN

MRS. CLYDE BURR—Daughter of Mrs. Frank Hicks; granddaughter of Mrs. Ozro W. Childs.

MISS KATHERINE ARMSTRONG—Daughter of Mr. and Mrs. E. S. Armstrong; granddaughter of Mr. and Mrs. Jackson A. Graves.

MRS. LAWRENCE HOWARD—Daughter of Judge Charles and Mrs. Wellborn; granddaughter of Judge Owen Wellborn; great-granddaughter of Mr. and Mrs. Chapley B. Wellborn.

MISS ESTELLA CARRILLO DEL VALLE—Daughter of Ulpiano del Valle; granddaughter of Sra. Estella Carrillo de Dowling; great-granddaughter of Don Pedro Carrillo and Doña Josefa Bandini de Carrillo.

MRS. LIONEL E. OGDEN—Daughter of Mr. and Mrs. Hamilton Cotton; granddaughter of Mrs. Victoria Carson; great-granddaughter of Don Manuel Dominguez.

MRS. ROBERT BUNDY—Daughter of Mrs. Julia Winston Flowers; granddaughter of Mrs. Margaret Bandini de Winston; great-granddaughter of Doña Arcadia Bandini.

SETA. JUANITA GARFÍAS—Great-granddaughter of Don Manuel Gárfias and Doña Luisa Avila de Gárfias; great-great-granddaughter of Don Francisco Avila and Doña Encarnacion Sepúlveda de Avila.

MRS. PERCY W. SEALS—Daughter of Mr. and Mrs. James Rimpau; great-granddaughter of Doña Encarnacion Avila.

MISS JACQUELINE SMITH—Daughter of Mr. and Mrs. Bertnard Smith; granddaughter of Mrs. Hugh Livingston McNeil; great-granddaughter of Mrs. Sarah B. Slauson.

MISS BARBARA MOTT—Daughter of Mr. and Mrs. John G. Mott; granddaughter of Mr. and Mrs. John A. Fairchild and of Thomas Mott.

MRS. JAMES SCARBOROUGH—Daughter of Mr. and Mrs. Boyle Workman; granddaughter of Judge and Mrs. R. N. Widney; great-granddaughter of Andrew Boyle.

MISS MARY HUNSAKER—Daughter of Mr. and Mrs. D. M. Hunsaker; granddaughter of Hon. Wm. J. Hunsaker; great-granddaughter of Nicholas Hunsaker.

MISS EDITH SHANKLAND—Daughter of Mr. and Mrs. Fowler Shankland; granddaughter of James H. Shankland.

- MISS ELIZABETH BIXBY—Daughter of Mr. and Mrs. Fred H. Bixby; granddaughter of John Bixby; great-granddaughter of Simon Bixby.
- MISS HELEN MOORE—Daughter of Dr. and Mrs. E. C. Moore; granddaughter of W. R. Rowland.
- MISS MADELINE FORTHMAN—Daughter of Mrs. Nora Forthman; granddaughter of John A. Forthman.
- MRS. HELEN DUQUE PHILLIPS—Daughter of Thomas L. Duque and Mrs. Henry Lethler.
- MRS. HENRY DE ROULET—Daughter of Mr. and Mrs. W. H. Fisher; granddaughter of Mr. and Mrs. Jackson Hill.
- MRS. JOHN COBB MACFARLAND—Daughter of Hancock Banning; granddaughter of General Phineas Banning.
- MRS. HOWARD H. WELLS—Daughter of Edward P. Johnson and Mrs. Florence Perry Johnson; granddaughter of William Hays Perry; great-granddaughter of George J. Dalton.
- MRS. WM. J. YOUNG—Daughter of Mr. and Mrs. Isidore Dockweiler; granddaughter of Henry Dockweiler.
- MISS MARGARET GRANT—Daughter of Mr. and Mrs. Daniel Grant; granddaughter of Richard Dillon.
- MRS. MARGARET GAFFEY MEL—Daughter of Mr. and Mrs. John T. Gaffey; granddaughter of Don Juan Bandini and Doña Esperanza Sepúlveda de Bandini.
- MRS. WALTER BRUNSWIG—Daughter of Mr. and Mrs. Wesley Clark; granddaughter of Doctor and Mrs. Wm. McNabb; great-granddaughter of Charles Russell.
- MRS. ROBERT MEYLER—Daughter of Mr. and Mrs. Albert Carlos Jones; granddaughter of Dr. and Mrs. W. H. Pendleton.
- MRS. SVEN LOKRANTZ—Daughter of Mr. and Mrs. John Bandini Winston; granddaughter of Col. and Mrs. Cave Johnson Coutts; great-granddaughter of Don Juan Bandini.
- MISS ANITA WRIGHT—Daughter of Mrs. Arthur Wright; granddaughter of Don José Antonio Estudillo; great-granddaughter of Don José Antonio Estudillo and Doña Victoria Dominguez de Estudillo.
- MRS. WELLS MORRIS—Daughter of Mr. and Mrs. Frank J. Thomas; granddaughter of Judge Charles Silent.
- MISS MARTHA ANN HOOK—Daughter of Mr. and Mrs. Wm. S. Hook, Jr.; granddaughter of Mrs. Wm. S. Hook.

## OTHER FIESTA NOTES AND PERSONALITIES

Max Meyberg, founder of Los Angeles' first Fiesta, 1894, was an honored guest at majority of La Fiesta events.

Mrs. Christine Sterling, founder of Olvera Street, headed committees for re-enactment of founding, Spanish marriage and dedication of El Camino Real, in which Joseph Scott and Carl Wirsching were luminaries.

Captain William Banning drove his stagecoach in person in parades.

Los Angeles is greatly indebted to Santa Barbara and San Francisco for generous co-operation, the former for participation of many citizens, notably its "Rancheros Visitadores" and "Old Spanish Days" leaders including the Camarillos, John J. Mitchell, Dwight Murphy, Sam J. Stanwood, many others, with their *caballadas* of splendid horses; the latter for participation of Mayor Angelo J. Rossi and large company or Native Sons and Daughters.

Los Angeles' Chinese Chamber of Commerce and residents sustained tradition by providing lion with escort for parade in lieu of the ancient dragon.

Velino M. Presa conducted the Mexican Banda de Policia.

Jose Arias conducted Official La Fiesta Orchestra.

Marshals and Aides of Grand Historical Parade "Under Four Flags," September 4, were: Division I—John G. Mott, Governor James Rolph, Jr., Adolfo Camarillo, Charles Donlon, Frank Camarillo; Div. II—Fred Bixby, Andreas Lugo, Sr., Andreas Lugo, Jr., Vicente Lugo, Miguel Estudillo; Div. III—Douglas Fairbanks, Antonio Moreno, Harry Carey, Richard Barthelmess, Leo Carrillo; Div. IV—General Walter P. Story, Erwin W. Widney, Kenneth Rios, Manuel Duarte, Leslie O'Day.

Pontifical Mass, September 6, was celebrated by Most Rev. Pietro Fumasoni-Biondi, Apostolic Delegate to the United States. Sermon by Most Rev. Edward J. Hanna, Archbishop of San Francisco.

Vesper Service, September 6, Dr. Harold H. Griffis, President Church Federation of Los Angeles, presiding; Dr. James Hamilton Lash, Chairman; Rev. Robert Freeman, sermon.

John Steven McGroarty headed committee for Mission San Gabriel observance, September 8.

Admission Day Parade, September 9, was headed by Grand Presidents N. S. and N. D. G. W., Dr. Frank I. Gonzales and Evelyn I. Carlson; Grand Marshal N. S., Horace J. Leavitt of Weaverville, and Grand Marshal N. D., Irma Laird of Alturas; and Division Marshals, Col. Halsey E. Yates, Frank Dewar, Jack L. Robinson, Harmon D. Skillin, Cecil D. Bentley, Oscar A. Foster, John E. Wagner, Sam J. Stanwood, J. J. Doyle, Leo Carrillo, Lee Sturges.

Tally-ho riding was given an alluring revival by the Friday Morning Club as a parade feature.

Harold Lloyd was Grand Marshal of the "Pageant of Jewels." Much credit for success of same is due to Fred W. Beetson, M. C. Levee, Frank N. Murphy, who composed the committee.

Impossibility of giving credit to each person deserving it, appalls the regretful historian, but establishes conviction that La Fiesta de Los Angeles, 1931, was veritably a community birthday party with its success founded in the contributions and enthusiastic assistance of countless individuals.

## FOUNDER MEMBERS OF LA FIESTA DE LOS ANGELES 1931

Margaret F. Adams, Merritt H. Adamson, Rhoda R. Adamson, Adohr Creamery Company, Adohr Stock Farms, F. J. Airey, Jesse B. Alexander, N. P. Alexander, Alexandria Hotel Company, Allen Hotel Supply Company, Joseph Revie Allan, T. V. Allen Company, Fred L. Alles, Allis-Chalmers Mtg. Company, Allison & Allison Architects, Ambassador Hotel Corporation, Mrs. Edna G. Andrews, Earl C. Anthony, G. E. Arbogast, Associated Apparel Mfrs. of L. A. Limited, E. S. Armstrong, Asso. Produce Dealers & Brokers of Los Angeles, Associated Telephone Company Limited, Aubrey E. Austin, John G. Austin.

B. & G. Sandwich Shop, David T. Babcock, James E. Babcock, Byron J. Badham, Edna Bicknell Bagg, Norman A. Bailie, Geo. W. C. Baker, Mrs. A. C. Balch, A. C. Balch, Baltimore Hotel, Bank of America, William Banning, W. Jarvis Barlow M. D., Julius C. Barthel, Mrs. A. G. Bartlett, Mrs. Jacob Baruch, Harry J. Bauer, Alfred J. Bayer, W. W. Beckett, Bedell Company, Behrendt-Levy-Rosen Co. Ltd., Bekins Van & Storage Company, N. Raymond Bell, L. E. Behymer, Geo. Belsey Co. Ltd., Belyea Truck Company, Emily W. Benedict, William J. Bennett, Brice L. Bennett, Bent Brothers, Julia R. Bergin, Mrs. Nannie Bicknell, Mr. and Mrs. Herb. M. Bigelow, Birkel Music Company, The Biltmore Mtg. Company, R. P. & W. T. Bishop, Fred H. Bixby, Llewellyn Bixby, Blake Moffitt & Towne, Paul Block, Blue Diamond Corporation Ltd., Queen Boardman, Henry G. Bodkin Atty. at Law, The Bolton Printing Company Inc., P. H. Booth, Mrs. Walter Bordwell, J. G. Boswell, Frank A. Bouelle, Mrs. Otto F. Brant, Braun Corporation Ltd., F. W. Braun, E. W. Britt, Broadway Florist, Brock and Company, A. C. Brode, Chas. Brown, George L. Brown, Harrington Brown, W. A. Brown Inc., Brunswick Drug Company, A. W. Buchanan, Dr. J. H. Bullard, John G. Bullock, Carl A. Bundy, Mrs. Clara B. Burdette, Carlton F. Burke, H. J. Burkhard, Robert L. Burns, John Arthur Burton, Mrs. Albert H. Busch, Business & Professional Women's Club of L. A., Butler-Schultze Company.

California Bank, California Hardware Company, California History and Landmarks Club, California Lingerie Company, California Milk Producers Assn., California Milling Company, California Rotogravure Company, California Women of the Golden West, Mrs. Al. Calkins, W. Ross Campbell Company, Canada Dry Western Sales Inc., Louis J. Canepa, Most Rev. John J. Cantwell, Capitol Milling Company, Earl R. Carpenter, J. E. Carr, Mary Bicknell Cates, Catholic Woman's Club, Mrs. Frank Addison Cattern, Joseph Caunt, Harry Chandler, Chandler-Wright & Ward, Al. A. Comey, Charles C. Chapman, Martha M. Chapoton, Lucius K. Chase, Childs Company, L. J. Christopher, Mrs. Frances A. Churchill, Pete Ciabbarri, Citizen Print Shop Inc., Citizens Nat'l Tr. & Sav. Bank, City of Glendale, City of Pasadena, Louis T. Clark, John A. & Katherine T. Clark, Clark's Dollar Stores, Lucy H. Clark, Victor M. Clark, William Andrews Clark Jr., Marcia W. Clawson, Clayburgh Brothers Inc., Clevelin Realty Corporation, Walter B. Cline, Woodworth Club, Coast Packing Company, George I. Cochran, Clarence E. Coe, Coffee Products of America Inc. Ltd., H. T. Coffin, Coldwell-Cornwall & Banker, Z. T. Cole, Margaret M. Coleman, B. V. Collins, Commercial Discount Company, Commercial Fireproof Building Company, Commercial News Press, Miss Catherine M. Connell, M. J. Connell Inc., Consolidated Film Industries Inc., Consolidated Hotels Inc., Consolidated Produce Co. Ltd., Consolidated Rock Products Company, Consolidated Steel Corporation Ltd., Consolidated Title Securities Company, Consolidated Trimming Company, Mrs. Catherine Nisa Conterno, Thomas F. Cooke, William M. Cook, John T. Cooper, Cooper's Ltd., J. C. Copley, Andrew James Copp, Mr. J. W. Costello, Miss Mildred Costello, John P. Coyne, S. W. Crabill, Chas. W. Cradick, Geo. B. Cramer, John S. Cravens, Crown Laundry & Cleaning Company, W. L. Stevens, Albert Crutcher, Cudahy Packing Company, Frank Curran, The H. W. Cutler Company, Mr. George H. Cutts.

W. H. Daum, Frank W. Davey, Rev. George Davidson, Ferman E. Davis, Howard W. Davis, Elmo Dehail, G. del Amo, Maria de Los Reyes D. De Francis, Serena Oreña de Koch, Thomas R. Dempsey, Diamond Electrical Mfg. Co. Ltd., Dillingham Printing Company Inc., Dr. Edward T. Dillon, Richard J. Dillon, L. E. Dixon Company, Isidore B. Dockweiler, Mr. & Mrs. Edw. L. Doheny, Frank P. Doherty, Roy L. Donley, J. J. Doran,



D. M. Dorman, Downie Brothers Inc., J. J. Doyle, Fanny Wilcox Drake, Ducommun Corporation, Al. M. Dunn, Bernal H. Dyas.

Chaffee Earl, Ebell Club of Los Angeles, Harry M. Eichelberger, Mrs. O. G. Ehlers, Isidore Eisner, Electric Corporation, Electrical Products Corporation, Arthur M. Ellis, Miss M. M. Etchemendy, Euterpe Opera Reading Club of Los Angeles.

Famous Department Store, David R. Faries, Farmers & Merchants Nat'l Bank, A. E. Feltskog, Figueroa Hotel, Bruce A. Findlay, F. C. Finkle, Dr. Ernest C. Fishbaugh, Mrs. Walter Harrison Fisher, Sarah H. Fleischmann, C. N. Flint, Thomas F. Ford, L. O. Foreman, Mrs. Rosanna Forthmann, Fox West Coast Theatres, Lawrence L. Frank, Mrs. Cecil Frankel and Mrs. H. T. Steck, James J. Freeman, Robert N. Frick, Friday Morning Club, D. H. Fry, W. P. Fuller & Company.

C. Ganahl Lumber Company, The Christian Ganahl Company, W. M. Garland, General Petroleum Corp. of California, Willard H. George, German American Savings Bank, Eloisa M. de Gibbs, J. R. Giddings, Gillespie Furniture Company, King C. Gillette (Mr. & Mrs.), R. C. Gillis, Gilmore Oil Company, Nicola Giulii Inc., Globe Grain & Milling Company, Golden State Company Limited, Goldinger Silk Company, Goodan-Jenkins Furniture Company, Grand Central Public Market Inc., Daniel G. Grant, Kenneth E. Grant, Mrs. Lewis A. Grant, Graves Banning & Company, William Graves, Marion R. Gray Company, Great Atlantic & Pacific Tea Company, Great Western Sea Food Company, Greer-Robbins Company, George G. Gregory, John H. Griffin, Griffith Company, Mrs. Mary A. C. Griffith, George W. Grimes, R. F. Gross, Mrs. Louisa Guasti, Albert Gude.

Haas-Baruch & Company, Walter F. Hass, J. J. Haggarty Stores, Mrs. H. M. Halde-man & Mr. & Mrs. H. F. Haldeman, Earl I. Hall, Tracy Hall, David A. Hamburger, W. J. Hamlin, Mrs. Frances Hampton, W. M. Hammond, G. Allan Hancock, Mrs. Genevieve Mullen Hancock, Byron C. Hanna, Richard L. Hargreaves, Harry L. Harper, Harris & Frank, Morris Harris, Hart Bros. Company, Adolph Hartmann, Arnold D. Haskell, P. E. Hatch, Hauser Packing Company, Thomas Haverly Company, H. D. Hawk, William H. Hay, Maurice S. Hellman, H. F. Hendrickson, A. E. Henning, Herbert's Cafe, The Higgins Estate, Highland Park Ebell Club, John C. Hill, Laurance L. Hill, Historical Society of Southern California, George D. Hoffman, Chas. A. Holland, Dr. Walter M. Holleran, W. I. Hollingsworth, Hollywood Knickerbocker, Holmby Corporation, W. L. Honnold, Hotel Clark, Hotel Hayward, Hotel Informant, Hotel Ritz, Hotel St. Paul, Hotel Savoy, Hotel Stowell, Howard Auto Company of Los Angeles, Oscar R. Howard, Mr. and Mrs. W. D. Howard, Howe Brothers, F. D. Howell, Danial O. Hoye, Mrs. A. Sherman Hoyt, Ralph R. Huesman, Rupert Hughes, Harry L. Hugunin, William J. Hunsaker, Willis G. Hunt, Huntington Hotel Company, Dr. & Mrs. Raymond Winfield Huntsberger, Mrs. Laura Chauvin Hutchison, E. F. Hutton & Company, C. S. Hutson & Company, The Hyvis Oil Refining Company, James M. Hyde.

E. Snapper Ingram, E. A. Irish, Louis Isaac, Max Isaacs, Italian Chamber of Commerce, Italian Vineyard Company, Herbert D. Ivey.

Miss Minnie Joughin, Carl I. Jacobson, Harold Janss, Edwin Janss, Harry G. Johansing, Johnson-Carvell & Murphy, Mrs. E. P. Johnson, L. H. Johnson, O. T. Johnson Corporation, Elmer S. Jones, Mattison B. Jones, Andrew Joughin.

H. W. Keller, Kelman Electric & Manufacturing Company, A. N. Kemp, Kerckhoff-Cuzner Mill & Lumber Co., Mrs. Louise E. Kerckhoff, C. B. Kerr, A. R. Killingsworth, Mrs. Nora E. Kirtley, Isi Klingenstein, Knudson Creamery Company, A. H. Koebig, J. O. Koepfli, Koke-Slaudt Company, Frederick J. Koster, G. J. Kuhrts.

William Lacy, R. H. Lacy, Lang Transportation Company & So. Calif. Construction Co. Ltd., H. W. Lane, J. B. Lankershim, John I. Lankershim, La Palma Cafeteria, Guendolen V. Laughlin, La Vida Mineral Water Company, The Leighton Industries Inc., S. P. Lev, Al Levy's, Evan Lewis, George E. Lewis, Lichtenberger-Ferguson Company, S. Lifpitz, Chas. W. List, Listenwalter & Gough, Mr. and Mrs. D. E. Llewellyn, Reese Llewellyn, Ralph B. Lloyd, Patrick M. Longan, Mary W. Longstreet, W. D. Longyear, Lord & Thomas & Logan, Los Angeles Biltmore, Los Angeles Chamber of Commerce, Los

Angeles Clearing House Association, Los Angeles Council of Jewish Women, Los Angeles Daily Journal, Los Angeles Gas & Electric Corporation, Los Angeles Institute No. 73 Y. L. I., Los Angeles Realty Board, Los Angeles Soap Company, Los Angeles Steamship Company, Los Angeles Transfer Company, Loyola University at Los Angeles, A. O. Luer, Morgan Lupher, Leonard S. Lyon, Lux Soap Company.

C. M. MacAllister, J. Wiseman Macdonald, Lillie M. MacGowan, Macco-Robertson Ltd., Malcolm McNaughten, J. V. McNeil Company Inc., J. Don Mahaffey, Mary Elizabeth Mahar, Mailliard & Schmiedell, Austin O. Martin, Harry Lee Martin, Theodore Martin, Virgil A. Martin, Miss Regina Martz, Mrs. Dean Mason, Mr. C. H. Matthiessen Jr., Mathews Paint Company, E. W. Matton, Maximes, Mayflower Hotel, James G. McAllister, McCahe-Fewell Company, F. W. McCartney, Walter G. McCarty Corp., John McCormack and Mrs. John McCormack, Charles Lincoln McFaul, Mollie M. McGowan, James S. McKnight, H. W. McLeod, Merchants Fireproof Building Company, Lieut. Gov. Frank Merriam, Merrill Osteopathic Sanitarium, F. H. Merrill, Edwin A. Meserve, Metropolitan Garage Ltd., Max Meyberg, Ben R. Meyer, Frank A. Miller, John B. Miller Jr. Co. Ltd., Russell Miller & Company, E. C. Mitchell, J. J. Mitchell, Lloyd D. Mitchell Inc., Orra Eugene Monnette, Chas. C. Montgomery, Mrs. Francis S. Montgomery, Minor Moore, Mrs. Mary Young Moore L. L. D., Watt L. Moreland, Saul Morris, John G. Mott, Mrs. John G. Mott, R. H. Moulton, Lloyd W. Moultrie, Harvey S. & Della S. Mudd, William Mulholland, Mullen & Bluett, Miss Rose Marie Mullen, Mrs. R. Mullendar, Multicolor Ltd., Dan Murphy, Dwight Murphy, Mrs. D. A. Murray.

Mr. and Mrs. Roy E. Naftzger, Fred R. Nagel, G. E. Nagel, National Bank of Commerce, National Title Insurance Company, Charles F. Nelson M. D., Nelson-Price Tire Company, The Newcombs, J. J. Newell, M. A. Newmark and Company, Niles Pease Investment Co., Blaine Noice.

Oakley Paint Mfg. Co., P. P. O'Brien, Kathryn O'Connor, M. F. O'Dea, The Olcovich Shoe Company, Omega Shoe Polish Company, Donald O'Melveny, H. W. O'Melveny, Richard O'Neil Jr., Thos. O'Neill, Opera Reading Club of Hollywood, W. W. Orcutt, Dario Oreña, U. G. Orendorff, F. B. Ortman, Matthew Edward Oswald, Arthur O. Overell, Eugene Overton, Owl Drug Company, Otto K. Oleson.

Pacific Clay Products, Pacific Coast Coca Cola Bottling Co., Pacific Electric Ry., Pacific Electric Women's Club, Pacific Finance Corporation, Pacific Greyhound Lines Inc., Pacific Indemnity Company, Pacific Mutual Company, James R. Page, G. Pagliano, Edwin O. Palmer M. D., Paris Inn Cafe, Claude I. Parker Atty. at Law, Ivon D. Parker, Marion Parks, Pasadena Post, J. H. Patrick, I. Graham Pattison, Aldrich R. Peck, Lorenzo Pelanconi, Marie Julia Pellissier, Geo. S. Pelton, Clifton Peters, Valentine Peyton Corp., Frank X. Pfaffinger, J. W. Phelps, Phiffer's Dresses, Norman L. Philp, Mr. and Mrs. Andrew J. Pickrell, Pierce Brothers and Company, E. A. Pierce & Company, Pig'n Whistle Corporation, Ben Platt, Eugene R. Plummer, Edwards Chappell Porter, Mayor John C. Porter, Harrison Post, Emile Posso, George C. Pratt, Miss Alma Dorothy Priester.

John R. Quinn.

Ralph's Grocery, Adolph Ramish Inc., William Edward Ramsey, Chas. Randall, Mrs. Michael Francis Regan, Retail Dry Goods Merchants Association, Retail Merchants Credit Assn., Retail Shoe Dealers Association, E. W. Reynolds Company, F. C. Ripley, Adolfo G. and Armando W. Rivera, Mr. and Mrs. Judson Rives, Robertson Company, George D. Robertson, J. L. Robertson, Rochester Manufacturing Company, John A. Roebing's Sons Company of California, Governor James Rolph Jr., W. S. Rosecrans, Chas. Rothstein, R. A. Rowan & Company, Mrs. William R. Rowland, Edwin S. Rowley, A. B. Ruddock, Rule & Sons Inc., Frank Ryan & Company.

Dr. George C. Sabichi, William W. Sabichi, Safeway Stores Inc., Win J. Sanborn, J. F. Sartori, Rose P. Satterfield, Schaber Cafeteria Company, Hon. Judge B. Rey Schauer, Ludwig Schiff, Eddie Schmidt Inc., Hon. Judge Ruben S. Schmidt, P. F. Schumacher, Schwabacher Frey Company, Mr. and Mrs. R. J. Schweppe, Joseph Scott, Mrs. Fannie May Scoville, Seaboard National Bank, Sears Roebuck Company, Security-First

National Bank, Miss Tranquilina Sepulveda, Frank L. Shaw, Shell Oil Company, H. E. Sherman Jr., Miss Lucy Sherman, M. H. Sherman, Sarah B. Shettler, Ludlow Shannard, Mrs. J. de Barth Shorb, Meyer Siegel, A. Sieroty, William H. Simon, A. E. Slaughter, A. N. Slavick, Mr. and Mrs. Leonard B. Slosson, George Leslie Smith, Lewis H. Smith, F. H. Solomon, Sontag Chain Stores Company Ltd., Southern California Edison Company Ltd., Southern Counties Gas Company, Southern California Gas Company, Southern California Hotelmen's Association, Southern California Retail Druggists, The Southern California Supply Company, Southern California Telephone Company, S. M. Spaulding, Dr. F. A. Speik, William R. Staats Company, Star Hotel Ltd., Commander John E. Staley, Standard Oil Company, H. W. Stanton, Starr Piano Company, Stationers Corporation, Stephens & Stephens, Raymond W. Stephens, Dwight W. Stephenson, Sterling-American Laundry Inc., Christine Sterling, The Sterling Press, Jacob Stern & Sons Inc., F. F. Stetson, Arthur Bush Stevens, Grace S. Stoermer, Mrs. Letha Lewis Storrow, Walter P. Story, N. W. Stowell, Stratton Salt Company, Style Garment Company Ltd., Sun Lumber Co., Swift & Company, Mrs. Louese M. Switzer.

Taix French Restaurant, Tanner Motor Livery, Tanner Motor Tours, Russell Mc. D. Taylor, Waller Taylor, C. C. Teague, Mrs. Frona Teller, Terminal Refrigerating Company, The Texas Company, Hugh A. Thatcher, Theme Hosiery Company Inc., Catesby Thom, Thomas Mortgage Co., Edward L. Thrasher, Louise & Arthur Tiearney, J. Herbert Tietzen, Title Guarantee & Trust Company, Title Insurance & Trust Company, William I. Traeger Sheriff, Waldo T. Tupper.

Union Bank & Trust Co., Union Hardware & Metal Company, Union Oil Company of California, United Linen Supply Company, United Parcel Service, United Printing Co.

W. L. Valentine, Chas. Van Valkenburg, Rudy Vallee, Van de Kamp Dutch Bakeries, Van Fleet-Durkee Inc., Veir Brothers Company, Vernon Fixture & Cabinet Company, Vine Street Hotel & Investment Co., Vista Mar Monte Hotel, Vitachrome Inc., Chas. Von Der Ahe, Rufus B. von KleinSmid.

H. R. Wagner, H. H. Walker, Irving M. Walker, P. J. Walker Co., George C. Ward, Warman Steel Casting Co. Ltd., James G. Warren, Harry W. Watson, Mrs. George Neville Warwick, Mrs. Patrick J. Watson, Gurdon W. Wattles, Weber Showcase & Fixture Company Inc., Ernest L. Webster, Fred Weddington, Olin Wellborn III, Erwin P. Werner, Western Auto Supply Company, Western Dairy Products Inc., Western Improvement Company, Western Lithograph Company, Western Pipe & Steel Company, Westinghouse Electric Supply Company, Henry Guenther Weyse, Thomas P. White, White Cotton Hotel Company, The Whiting Company, Perry Whiting, W. P. Whitsett, Roy F. Wilcox, Thomas F. Williams, Madelin F. Wills, Douglas Wilson, E. Clement Wilson, Wilson Land Company, E. E. Winchester, Mr. and Mrs. P. G. Winnett, Mrs. Alice P. & Miss A. V. Witmer, W. S. Witmer, Wolfer Printing Company, Women's Athletic Club, Women's Hotel Company, Women's University Club, W. R. Woodard Company, Meade Woodson, Henry W. Wright, Herbert G. Wylie.

Yellow Cab Company, Yokohoma Specie Bank Ltd., Garnett Young & Company, Milton K. Young, Mrs. Mary C. Young.

Hector Nelson Zahn, Zellerbach Paper Company, George Zobelein.

## FELIPE DE NEVE AND LOS ANGELES

PASSAGE of time has proven the founding of the City of Los Angeles the outstanding accomplishment of Felipe de Neve for California among those which have had effect down to the present time.

Yet ironically, the spectacularly rapid growth of this city has itself obscured the memory of the man to whom it owes its existence. For almost a century and a half little more than his name was known in Los Angeles, and that only to a comparatively few of the historically-minded, most of whom mispronounced it.

It is claimed that the first civic recognition of Don Felipe de Neve (Fehleeepeh day Nehvay) was given with dedication of the pool in the center of the Plaza to his memory early in the 'seventies, during settlement of the question of water rights involving the Plaza area.

The community's lapse of memory became complete after that until through the work of the Department of California History and Landmarks of the California Federation of Women's Clubs under chairmanship of Mrs. A. S. C. Forbes an incipient appreciation of Don Felipe de Neve was aroused in the community more than four decades later.

Subsequently Orra E. Monnette, as President of the Los Angeles Library Board, through addresses and the writing of a monograph embracing the known facts as to the life of Neve, secured on September 4, 1929, the city's first official and permanent recognition of Felipe de Neve with dedication of a Branch of the Public Library situated in Lafayette Park in his honor. A decade previously Cabrillo Chapter, D. A. R., had dedicated a sun dial in this park to the Founder's memory.

On this foundation, as significance of the city's history began to grow on its people, and sentiment for the 150th anniversary observance found public expression, the name of Felipe de Neve became recognized by an increasingly large portion of the population. Before the end of 1931 erection of an idealization of the young Neve in bronze, in the Plaza, was accomplished by Californiana Parlor, Native Daughters of the Golden West.

Dedication of the new Seventh Street viaduct in the name of Felipe de Neve is about to be secured. This effort also is headed by Mrs. Forbes and the California History and Landmarks Department of the Federation of Women's Clubs.

Doubtless these and similar efforts will eventually bear fuller fruit. Perhaps the name of Neve may be learned in future by citizens as they travel on some central thoroughfare called "Avenue Felipe de Neve." Such a tribute should be paid by his city. That it will be is not too much for historians to ask and to hope for.

Certainly it may confidently be hoped that as time goes on Felipe de Neve will grow increasingly significant in the minds of Angelinos, and in so far as historians are concerned, that a greater amount of authentic data regarding his life than is now available may be found, to enable them to tell in full, his story.

In the following article, Mr. Bynum has brought together a chronological account of Neve's activities in California from authentic documentary sources.



# GOVERNOR DON FELIPE DE NEVE

A chronological note of Felipe de Neve and his Governorship of the Californias.

By LINDLEY BYNUM



FELIPE DE NEVE arrived in Mexico in 1764 or 1765. In a letter written at Monterey June 1777, he said that he had not seen his family in Seville since the former date.<sup>1</sup> There are notes of his having been at Patzcuaro and Uruapán in 1776 on a recruiting mission; in the one place being beset by a mob and in the other his visit being accompanied by riots.<sup>2</sup> From 1766 to 1774, he was Major of a regiment of cavalry at Querétaro and for seven years of this period he administered the colleges of Zacatecas.<sup>3</sup> Whatever his duties were he must have discharged them well for, in a letter from Viceroy Bucareli to Julian Arriaga, dated December 27, 1774, he is commended and announced as the acting governor of the Californias.<sup>4</sup> He took office at Loreto, March 4, 1775.

Affairs of both Lower and Upper California were badly involved. On the peninsula, Governor Barri had given offense to the Dominicans and had to be removed, creating a vacancy to be filled by de Neve. The northern province was in no better condition. Rivera y Moncada, governor of Alta California, was quarreling with the Franciscans and was dilatory in matters pertaining to the development of the country under his jurisdiction. Neve, following Barri in the south, was beginning to have difficulties with the missionaries when, on April 1776 an order was issued to change the seat of government of the two Californias from Loreto to Monterey.

Such a change was not immediately effected. Orders were sent de Neve in July. A letter of July 8 from Galvez to Bucareli urges haste.<sup>5</sup> There now follows a correspondence between Bucarely and de Neve regarding the needs of the upper province. On December 25, the Viceroy issued his final instructions to de Neve in a letter of 27 paragraphs.

<sup>1</sup> Bancroft, *History of California*, Vol. I, p. 310.

<sup>2</sup> Priestley, *Jose de Galvez*, p. 227.

<sup>3</sup> Bancroft, *History of California*, Vol. I, p. 310.

<sup>4</sup> Chapman, *Catalogue of Materials in the Archivo General de Indias for the History of the Pacific Coast*, p. 369.

<sup>5</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 423.

Important among these instructions was the suggestions that he examine the country with a view to founding pueblos.

The new governor came overland to inspect the existing establishments and to acquaint himself with the Territory. Upon his arrival and the receipt of information from the presidio and missions farther north, he sent five reports to the Viceroy, dated February 18, 25, and 26. These reports, one of which is here translated, tell of the condition of the foundations and list articles of clothing and equipment needed at each presidio. He also recommends an increase of soldiers to strengthen the Spanish position with respect to the native population.

In April, Neve went north to inspect the Presidio and mission of San Francisco and the mission of Santa Clara.<sup>6</sup> In June he issued several more reports. One of these recounts the recent happenings of Alta California, another states the need of three establishments along the Santa Barbara channel and makes recommendations for their founding. A third report is of some length and gives a careful description of all the water courses, springs and arroyos along the Camino Real. In it he recommends the site for the city of Los Angeles:

The habitable spots which border the Camino Real from San Diego to Monterey with sufficient proportion of waters for developing cultivation are the river Santa Ana at 28 leagues from San Diego, has abundant water and it is not difficult to draw it out as it proves, at seven leagues is the river San Gabriel with much water and lands for large planting, and to raise water not proven very difficult. One league distant from the Mission of this name, which does not use its waters because they obtain abundant and sufficient water for lands from the various springs which flow at the foot of the mountains.

At 3 leagues from the Mission is the river of Porsincula [sic] with much water easy of access for both banks and beautiful lands in which we can make use of all.<sup>7</sup>

<sup>6</sup> Palou, *Noticias de la Nueva California*, Vol. IV, p. 201. Palou, *Historical Memoirs of New California*. Trans. by H. E. Bolton, Vol. IV, p. 163.

<sup>7</sup> Mexico, *Archivo General*. Tomo 121.

Later, in the same report, is the following:

Attentive to all and to the urgency there is to encourage all the labor possible, in these new establishments, I did not observe in these [lands] more than four places of which I can recommend to advantage, and these are the rivers of Santa Ana, San Gabriel, the Porsincula, and Guadalupe, the first three at short distances of the Mission of San Gabriel, the last near that of Santa Clara; I did not observe any other places so that if your Excellency will order recruited forty or sixty men of the fields and experienced farmers in order to people the mentioned places, or better divide them into two, which will be the river of Santa Clara and that of Porsincula.

De Neve did not, however, confine his activities to the writing of reports. They were needed to formulate policies and to arouse the necessary action in Mexico City but during the time between letters he utilized the materials at hand for the strengthening of the establishments and for their future growth. In November, acting without orders, he founded the city of San José de Guadalupe. For settlers he used 15 families from the presidios of Monterey and San Francisco, comprising discharged soldiers and idle people from the Anza expedition of 1776. He reported this action on April 15, 1778 and referred to his letter of the preceding June in which he had recommended both the site of San José and of the future Los Angeles. In May he tendered his resignation.

During the remainder of the year, further progress was made. On August 10 Neve wrote that a wall around the presidio of Monterey had been completed the previous May. It was of rock 537 yards in length, 12 feet high and four feet thick. The brush structures had been replaced by 10 adobe houses, 21 by 24 feet and a barracks 136 by 16 feet nearing completion. A wall of adobe was being built at San Francisco but the rains of the early months of 1779 destroyed it. At San Diego, stone was gathered for a projected wall but was not immediately used.

In the letter of August 10, referred to above, de Neve stated that the missionaries were hindering the new establishment. He was now given the rank of Colonel and in Oc-

tober withdrew his resignation. December 30 he replied to a letter from Croix, asking for information regarding necessary changes in the existing regulations. This report, one of four dated December 29, 30, and 31, forms the basis for his reglamento which was to appear the following June. In it are criticisms and suggestions resulting from his many careful inspections and inventories. In it he treats of such things as soldiers' pay, equipment, the founding of missions and a presidio along the Santa Barbara channel, and the founding of new pueblos. These reports close the year.

De Neve's efforts do not diminish during the year 1779. On March 31 he reports a need for more domestic animals at the presidios, laborers, blacksmiths, and farmers. There are 6 reports dated April 3, giving a statement of forces and asking an increase for the presidios. Additional missionaries and effects are requested for the proposed channel establishments. One report, mentioning the proposed foundation of the pueblo on the Porciúncula, and asking that an assistant be appointed as inspector, is appended.

On June 1st, appears the reglamento or regulation which was to be the governing instrument during the remaining period of Spanish rule. These laws he sent to Mexico, putting them into effect provisionally, subject to the approval of the Comandante General. They were approved by him and sent to Spain where they received the sanction of Gálvez and the King who evidently accepted them without alteration or revision. They were printed in Mexico in 1784.

During the remainder of 1779 and part of 1780 occurred the trouble between de Neve and Junípero Serra over the latter's right to confirm. This right which was exercised by the Bishops had been, because of the great distance separating California from these dignitaries, granted to the Father President for a period of ten years. This special dispensation had been granted by the Pope and approved by the Council of the Indies. Upon Serra's exercising of this function, de Neve, as the representative of the Crown in California, asked to see the papers granting this special powers. Serra replied that they had been returned to Mexico, whereupon the governor



ordered him to cease his efforts until satisfactory evidence had been produced. There now followed months of waiting and of correspondence between Serra, Neve, Croix and the College of San Fernando in Mexico, at the end of which, the proper documents were produced and the governor satisfied.

For the rest of 1779 there are six reports, dated July 18, 19, which list the armament of the three presidios and the clothing, food and arms necessary for the presidios and the soldiers and settlers of the proposed channel foundations. A report of October says that the Manila galleon has failed to stop.

In December, Croix issued instructions to Rivera for the recruiting of settlers in Sinaloa and Sonora to found the presidio and missions of Santa Barbara and adjacent points and the proposed pueblo of Los Angeles. Thus was finally started the work upon which the governor had dwelt insistently from the time of his arrival in Alta California. The recruiting of the soldiers and pobladores, their transportation to California and subsequent founding of Los Angeles is treated at length elsewhere in this publication.

De Neve's efforts did not end, however, with the founding of the city. The year 1780 had seen much improvement in the Territory. A church had been completed at San Diego and San Francisco was acquiring buildings. The pueblo of San José was prospering and the missions had in some instances produced a surplus. The Yuma massacre occurred in July 1781, wiping out the establishments along the Colorado River as well as the soldier escort of the settlers, who had lingered to rest the animals. This event caused Neve to postpone the channel foundations but in March 1782 he issued instructions for the Comandante of Santa Barbara and with a party of soldiers and accompanied by Father Serra he started north. At the end of the first day's march he was reached by a courier with news which caused him to return to San Gabriel to confer with Fages who had arrived from Mexico. He was, therefore, not present at the founding of mission San Buenaventura on March 30, but returned to found the presidio of Santa Barbara, April 21.

On August 21, the governor, in company with Fages, left San Gabriel for the Colorado River to administer a tardy reprisal for the uprising of a year previous. In September, before they reached their destination, they were met by a messenger who bore the announcement that de Neve had been appointed Inspector General of the Frontier Provinces and Fages, the Governor of California. Accordingly, Fages returned to Monterey and de Neve left to take up his new duties, passing out of the province he had worked earnestly for since his arrival in 1777.

He received the Cross of the Order of San Carlos and was made a Brigadier General. In 1783 he succeeded Croix as Comandante General of the Frontier Provinces. He died November 3, 1784.

A large, stylized handwritten signature in dark ink. The name "Felipe de Neve" is written in a cursive script. The "F" is very large and loops around the "e" in "Felipe". The "de" is written in a smaller, more compact cursive. The "Neve" is written with a large, sweeping "N" and a "v" that loops back under the "e". The signature ends with a large, decorative flourish.

# FOUR REPORTS BY NEVE, 1777-1779<sup>1</sup>

Translated by LINDLEY BYNUM

## BUILDINGS

No. 82 //78

*Most Excellent Señor:*

SEÑOR.

I account to you that on my arrival at these new establishments, I found the mission of San Diego already rebuilt and the foundation of San Juan Capistrano concluded in the same place in which it was started, in both having guarded the implements of the censor; covering them with earth. Also I found built the fort of San Francisco and adjacent the mission of the same name, the former immediately at the entrance of the port, and the second at a distance from the fort of five quarters of a league next to the lagoon of Our Lady of the Sorrows, one and another sites were occupied the 27 of June, and convenient to the mission there is plenty of water, firewood and stone for building with lands proportionable for cornfields, and with the advantage of a spring situated near at hand with water not difficult to draw out, which acquired, can succeed in benefiting with irrigation a large sown field.

The second mission which was called Our Lady of Santa Clara was located the 4th day of last January, at 15 leagues distance to the southwestward from the fort on the bank of the River of Our Lady of Guadalupe. It has according to my information, much land for sowing on both sides of the River irrigated and moist, and very easy to bring the water, although the mission and the tilled lands are exposed (according to the apprehensions of the R. R. P. P.) to the inundations which may be occasioned of which they have no experience following the year with the greatest scarcity of water which may be experienced, the gentiles who inhabit this land are very numerous; as soon as I am free, and as soon as the scouting parties of this presidio return, I leave to examine those missions and fort, of which I will inform you with more particularity: moreover I have instructed the Lieutenant Don Joseph Joaquin de Moraga to arrange what is convenient to wall in the fort, to conform to the provisions of the royal reglamento of presidios; which already is partially started and will continue until finished, in this one, because like the other it is composed of barracks or huts without protection except the small house of the Commander and the store house which are of adobe otherwise they should have already collapsed had they not been propped up during the past year as previously happened before to the

<sup>1</sup> Provincias Internas Tom. 121. Archivo General de Mexico. Translated from transcripts loaned by Henry R. Wagner.

chapel, for which a small hut serves during the day, and to expedite the whole work it is necessary to employ the troop with the few servants of the presidio, which fact I make known to you hoping your benevolence may grant to these companies the remuneration which is of your superior pleasure.

Our Lord protect your excellent person many years. Monterey, February 25, 1777.

Excellent Señor

Phelipe de Neve (Rubric).

*Most Excellent Señor Bailio Don Antonio  
Bucareli y Ursua.*

## TROOPS

**I**N WHICH account is given to His Excellency of the state in which are found the Companies of the three presidios of California Septentrional as to Animals, Riding Equipment, Armaments and Mounted Troops, with statement of the number of mules and Horses which are deemed requisite, and a Relation of the supplies of Clothing, Accoutrements and Arms which are needed.

No. 83.<sup>1</sup>

//59

**M**OST Excellent Señor.

Señor: The third of the present month I arrived at this Presidio, not having been able to accomplish this with greater promptitude because of the great distance, and the preservation of the horses which transported me.

At my passing by the Presidio of San Diego I examined the condition of the troops of the garrison, as they exercised at my passage, of the horses and soldiers employed as the guard of the mission, as well as the company of this Presidio, with one thing and another were found in a most deplorable state, the clothes, as well as the armament and horses; first because they were seen not to conform to uniformity, indiscriminately short over-jackets [and] waistcoats of calico of varied colors were used, rarely are those who have a hat and sleeves remaining and [the clothes of] many have so greatly deteriorated that they are almost indecent.

The armament besides being of unequal caliber from that prescribed is too disordered for safety. The swords (with the exception of those which in the last year were sent to San Diego) are

<sup>1</sup> Provincias Internas Tom. 121 Archivo General.



completely useless, because of their poor quality, short or dull, there being various men who have none likewise the lances, almost all the soldiers being found stripped of the necessities for their mounts which in addition are very old, few of which do not lack some of the parts of this equipment.

The cavalry which the troop of these presidios has consists of 70 mules and 37 horses, that of San Diego distributed in 43 stalls of their own garrison (excluding the 25 recruits of reserve who are mounted) 86 mules and 41 horses, that of Monterey. Divided into 45 stalls of those composing the garrison, including 20 who protect the escorts of the three missions of San Luis, San Antonio, and Carmel. 31 mules and 57 horses, that of San Francisco divided into 34 stalls of those who make up their company exclusive of the Lieutenant in which number of horsemen might be considered a fifth part that are useless.

In this relation I would call to your attention the accompanying two reports, one concerning the clothing and articles of equipment which are necessary for the companies of each Presidio according to the state in which they now are, and the other of the armament, powder, and balls corresponding to each one in this manner for their respective armament as for that which should exist for future needs, so that being worthy of the approval of yourself you may order to remit on the first occasion the articles of clothing, equipment, armament and munitions which will be sent to each one of the referred Presidios.

Likewise I ought to state to you that notwithstanding how many arms these companies actually possess, (excepting the twenty soldiers of that of San Francisco) they are the property of the troop having been charged their value, it is convenient that they be gathered together and deposited in the warehouses in order by this method to avoid the great inconvenience at which they are sold to the pagans, who anxiously ask especially for sword blades, fragments of these, points of sharp lances and every kind of cutting instrument. Cutters with which I saw many natives in the Santa Barbara channel armed, being worthy of notice the nicety with which they burnish, polish, and make a sharp thrust of a piece of sword. And if this should be to your satisfaction the new equipment could be distributed without charging it to the soldier who alone would remain responsible for its repair and who is required to return it when he is either on leave or dead.

Regarding the horses which at this time the three companies have, (excluding officers) 147, and the riding animals and mules that exist, 322 altogether, the approximately eighty mules and 26 horses which should come from Loreto makes 438 which is equal to three horses for a stall, lacking three animals, without counting those which

of this number are understood to be depreciated on account of age and incapacity with which it is not possible that service can be done without considerable delay as one who experiences to suffer fatigue, those soldiers who find themselves in better state for their journeys with borrowing from one another, leave those who remain in the Presidio almost unmounted; with which consideration and that of the herds of this presidio and that of San Diego, they find themselves so deteriorated that in order to help them, with 52 loads of corn from the frontier of Velicatá, and mission of San Luis it has been forced upon me to avail myself of 12 mules from the mission of San Diego and 23 from the herd of the Presidio of San Francisco, not having been able to take in such emergency more than 17 animals from the two remaining; on account of which in order to put the troops of these presidios in a state of service, counting on the shipment of these beasts being late and a diminution of those on hand which might occur I rule there are needed 200 mules and 300 horses, whose transport only could be accomplished by land following the route of Don Juan Bautista de Anza, without the loss of horses and the increased delay of years which their shipping would cause, and the prolonged march coming from Loreto. All of this I represent to you in fulfilment of my obligation.

Our Father guard your excellent person happy years. Monterey 26 of February 1777.

Most Excellent Señor,

Phelipe de Neve (Rubric)

Most Excellent Generous Señor Don Antonio Bucareli y Ursua.

### REGLAMENTO

**I**N WHICH Account is given of the urgency there will be of naming an Aide who will exercise in the five presidios of Californias the same functions as those of the Inspector in the presidios of the frontier, in the event that the provisions proposed for the new Reglamento are approved.

No. 71

**M**Y GOOD Señor, I proceed to inform you that thus in order to carry out the establishment of the presidio and the missions which are to be situated on the channel of Santa Barbara and the pueblo which is to be founded bordering the river of Porsincula [*sic*] as you have decided, as likewise now to establish the new rule and reglamento which I have proposed, for the presidios of this peninsula, standardizing in all its adaptable parts its government to that specified in the Royal Reglamento of presidios,

being indispensable (for this plan to be approved) or that the governor be named inspector for these, or that these functions be exercised by the governor, given the great extension of the province in which are his presidios, it is impossible that anyone would be able to accomplish this without the aid of an assistant, and least [of all] I who have to formulate and establish these new plans, called from these attentions, when my weakened head causes me to suffer these partial application and material work with which I was able to carry out those matters which were intrusted to me at another time, and finding myself at present in a place where I have no one whom I could intrust with the copying of a letter.

In attention to this matter I have addressed you entreating that should the proposed rules be approved for the change of Reglamento in this peninsula, that you deign to name an assistant who will exercise in these presidios the functions which are those of inspector in [the presidios] on the frontier, this post should be conferred on a Lieutenant of acknowledged intelligence and good conduct with the salary which your grace may be pleased to grant him.

Our Father guard you many years. Monterrey and April 3, 1779.

I kiss the hand of your excellency.

Your attentive and trusted servant,

Phelipe de Neve (Rubric)

Señor Comandante General Cavallero de Croix.

### TROOPS AND FOOTING

**A**CCOUNT is given of the Arms, Powder, balls and Loads of cannon which are needed to complete the equipment and stores of the Companies; and two Memoranda of the Clothes, Foodstuffs and effects ruled necessary to Supply the troops which are to Guard the Channel, the Pobladores and their families, and in the next year expected to arrive to this Province, and that it will be opportune to conduct by sea a Reconnaissance of the Channel for the purpose of marking the safest shelter for the landings.

Provincias Internas Tom. 121. Archivo General.

No. 92 //48

**M**Y DEAR SIR, I convey to your hands the enclosed report, which states the arms, powder, and balls necessary to complete the companies of these three Presidios and their stores; the powder and balls and loads of cannon are necessary, as likewise, the stores belonging to the troop which is to garrison the channel of

Santa Barbara, two cannons of 4 for this presidio and cartuches which for the present supply it.

Likewise considering the necessities of the troop, the settlers and their families on their arrival, that they may be helped with clothing, which has been destroyed during the long voyage, in order that they may not experience the need of the various effects and food necessary, I have judged it necessary to direct to you the accompanying two memorials, in order that having it handy your excellency may condescend to take steps to remit the supplies which they contain, from Mexico and San Blas in the next year with the vessel which conveys the pay of the presidio of San Diego, to deliver it to Lieutenant Don Joseph Francisco de Ortega in case that at their arrival here, the channel is not occupied since they all ought to be transported there, with the two cannons which you will be able to supply from the Department of San Blas.

In case this is carried out in this way the commander of the boat will find in the said San Diego, all the instructions that I may rule and can be useful in carrying out this commission and it will be very opportune for me to bring the order to inspect the coast of the channel, to mark the shelter or bay which in relation to the presidio, will allow the vessels to cast anchor and unload food and effects which they may in the future contain.

Our Lord protect your Excellency many years. Monterey, July 19, 1779.

I kiss the hand of your Excellency your most  
Attentive and faithful servant,

Phelipe de Neve (Rubric).

*Señor Comandante General Cavallero de Croix.*



# "SE FUNDARON UN PUEBLO DE ESPANOLES"

(A Village of Spaniards Was Founded)<sup>1</sup>

By THOMAS WORKMAN TEMPLE II

## DEDICATION

*This is dedicated to my ancestors, Don Mañuel Ygnacio de Lugo, and his wife, Doña María Gertrudis Limon y Sanchez de Lugo, Españoles, and natives of La Villa de Sinaloa, Mexico, who rallying about the Royal Standard with Capitan Rivera y Moncada, enlisted in the service of God and country. With the eagerness and vision of youth, they looked beyond the Western horizon, and with their first-born joined the Expedition of 1781, to bring assistance to "los Nuevos Establecimientos de Monterey." With sixteen other recruit families destined for the proposed Presidio of Santa Barbara, they escorted the "Pobladores" to San Gabriel Mission, where all arrived August 18, 1781. After twenty years of faithful service at Santa Barbara, Don Manuel brought his family to the new Pueblo de Los Angeles. In writing the story of its founding I have been inspired by the sacrifice and efforts of one who took his place among the pioneers of that eventful era.*

THOMAS WORKMAN TEMPLE II.

*Mision de San Gabriel Arcangel,  
Día de la Indulgencia de Nuestra Señora  
la Reyna de los Angeles de Porciúncula,  
Domingo Agosto 2, 1931.*



MONG the many beautiful titles to be found in the Litany of Our Lady, as recited in early California, is the imposing and sonorous name of "Nuestra Señora la Reyna de los Angeles," Our Lady the Queen of the Angels. A chapel in far-off Assisi named "La Porciúncula" and dedicated to this heavenly Queen, was dear to the

<sup>1</sup> "A Village of Spaniards Was Founded." *Relacion Histórica de la Vida y Apostólicas Tareas del Venerable Padre Fray Junípero Serra*. Francisco Paláu, Mexico 1787.

heart of Francis, founder of the Apostolic Order of Missionaries which bears his name. Here was the cradle of his Order; here he received the great "indulgencia de la Porciúncula"<sup>2</sup> in 1221, than which there is no greater feast in the Franciscan calendar; here too, was born that apostolic zeal, which burning in the hearts of his followers, was to bring the light of faith, some 550 years later, to the benighted land of California.

On August 1, 1769, Fray Juan Crespi, able chronicler of Portolá's expedition in quest of Viscayno's "Famoso Puerto de Monterrey," celebrated this feast of "Nuestra Señora la Reyna de los Angeles de Porciúncula," in far-off California. Next day the party camped by a river which he named "Rio de la Porciúncula." He noted in his diary in no uncertain terms the beauty of the valley and the advantages offered for a large settlement. The future site for the "Pueblo de Nuestra Señora la Reyna de los Angeles del Rio Porciúncula," had been designated.

The history of the Pueblo which takes its name from the stream thus christened by Crespi, and which twelve years later, was to rise near the site of Portolá's camp, dates from that same late summer's day.

If the first expedition in quest of the illusive Puerto de Monterrey so celebrated by Viscayno, was a failure in Portolá's estimation, it proved but an added incentive to the seraphic Serra to bring the Cross of Christ to the thousands of "gentilidad"<sup>3</sup> on the way. Later the expedition provided unexpected success, inasmuch as the glorious harbor of St. Francis had been found, and, of greater consequence now than then, the future site of the Pueblo of Los Angeles had been noted.

This city therefore in name and in tradition is deeply rooted in the past, and belies the modernity and sophistication of today. Founded September 4, 1781, on the banks of the River Porciúncula, in the sixth year of Governor Phelipe de Neve's rule over the infant Province of "La California Sep-

<sup>2</sup> *Indulgencia de la Porciúncula*: Any one having received the Sacraments of Penance and Holy Eucharist (this day, August 2) gains a plenary indulgence, i.e. remission of all temporal punishment.

<sup>3</sup> *Gentilidad*: heathendom, heathen or gentiles.

tentrional,"<sup>4</sup> and by Order of King Carlos III, it has had a singular history.

Strange to say, contemporary references to its founding are rare indeed. Available records are very few; later accounts differ as to the number of its founders, the route taken from Sinaloa to Alta California, and the date of its founding. Descriptions of the actual founding ceremony are equally varied. The Spanish Archives, at Seville and Madrid, Spain; the Mexican Archives, in Mexico City; the Bancroft Collection at Berkeley, California; and Mission records, have been searched in vain for a definite report of what went on that early September day, on the banks of the Porciúncula, when the second pueblo of Alta California was ushered into existence.

Aggression from the north had forced Spain at last to occupy "la California Septentrional," and though the effort did not seem very convincing at first, it did serve to ward off the intruder. The Russian bear had long feasted his eyes on this rich morsel, a part of Spain's New Indies by right of discovery, although abandoned for nearly 170 years.

The frontiers of Spain had changed with the years, as had also her policies. The dominant force behind her great program of expansion up to the latter 18th century, had served but to fill her Royal coffers with silver, and plant the Cross of Christ among the Heathen. Now encroachment from without forced her to change this policy to one of defense. Frequent raids were slowly but surely splitting that vast stretch of continent claimed so long by Spain. France and England more than once furnished the occasion for new Presidios and settlements on the Gulf, and in New Mexico. The Sea of Tartary had buffeted many a Russian ship returning from Alaska, richly laden with its cargo of furs. The flags of England and the Dutch had waved close to Viscayno's "Famous Port of Monterrey." In Mexico City, José de Gálvez, the new Visitador-General and the Comandante-General Teodoro de Croix, advised their King Don Carlos III of the impending danger. Carlos awoke to the task, and with a mighty thrust he flung

---

<sup>4</sup> *La California Septentrional*: Upper or Alta California.

the frontiers of New Spain as far as the Rio de San Francisco, today called the Sacramento.

The "Sagrada Expedition"<sup>s</sup> of 1769 was the answer to this foreign intrusion, but the settlements were in just as much danger of conquest five years after Serra had founded San Diego Mission (on July 16, 1769), and Portolá had raised the royal standard at Monterey. California was isolated, and dependent for its supplies upon tardy caravels from San Blas and straying pack trains from the dusty peninsula below.

Sonora as a Spanish outpost centuries older than California, had much food-stuff, horses, cattle, and soldiers, to offer. Captain Juan Bautista de Anza had opened communication between the two provinces via the Colorado in 1774. That same year Fernando de Rivera y Moncada had been made Comandante of the Presidio of Monterey, and in Sinaloa had recruited soldiers and families, among the first to come to California, for his new command.

The great colonizing expedition of 1776 had arrived in command of Anza, and San Francisco had been founded. But although passage through the treacherous Yuma district had thus been shown feasible, the Province was still dependent upon the annual *Memorias* or shipments of supplies for Mission and Presidio, from San Blas. California had to be made to shift for herself.

Phelipe de Neve y Perea, under whose administration the Pueblo of Los Angeles was founded, had been made Governor of the Californias in March of 1775. While still at the capital, then Loreto, he had suggested the experiment of sowing grain in the *Frontera* (frontier), thus to supply the barren peninsula under his care, and be enabled to market the surplus produce in the new establishments of Monterey. This plan does not seem to have met with much success, but it was an attempt to make the Province self-subsisting, a vein that runs through the whole of his famous *Reglamento*, penned four years later.

When the Governor and his capital were moved to Monterey early in 1777, he closely examined the ground on his trip north for likely sites for agricultural communities. Two

<sup>s</sup> "Holy Expedition."



spots on the way seemed eminently fitted for this purpose, one on the banks of the Río de la Porciúncula, the other near the headwaters of the Río de San Josef de Guadalupe. The only practical way of using to advantage the opportunities thus offered was by the founding of pueblos or villages near these sources of water, where irrigation would supplement the rainy season, and reclaim the pristine fields.

The Governor communicated these and other facts to the Viceroy on June 3, 1777, from Monterey. In his communication he carefully describes the Santa Bárbara Channel region, with its thousands of natives, for whom Serra was so solicitous, and suggests ways and means of controlling and converting them. By the peculiar nature and situation of their country these tribes might prove dangerous, and interfere with communication by land between north and south. The twenty-one *rancherías* or Indian settlements on the Channel, inhabited by people much more intelligent than the average of California natives, could well prove a thorn in the side of the Spaniards, for they held a strategic position here, much the same as that which made the Yuma nation loom so important on the Colorado horizon, where they controlled the California-Sonora road. Anza was no more anxious to establish good relations with Chief Palma and his people there, than was Neve to secure a successful "reduction" of the Canaleño<sup>6</sup> tribes. And the zeal of the Zacatecano missionaries to bring the cross to the Yumas, was no greater than the solicitude of Serra for the Indians of the Channel.

Without waiting for a reply, although possibly having received further instructions from Mexico, Neve decided to make the first beginnings of an agricultural settlement in the Province. Taking nine soldiers from the Monterey and San Francisco companies, and five settlers from the Anza expedition, with their families making sixty-six persons in all, he ordered Lieutenant Josef Joaquin Moraga to escort them from the Presidio of San Francisco to a site on the bank of the Guadalupe. Here was founded on November 29th, 1777, the first "Pueblo de Gente de Razon,"<sup>7</sup> the town of San José.

<sup>6</sup> *Canaleño*: Indians of the Channel or *Canal*; Channel tribes.

<sup>7</sup> *Gente de razon*: white or "civilized" people, literally "people of reason."

Provisional though the establishment of this community was, yet we have positive data on the names and number of its founders, date of its founding, and the man who founded it. That Los Angeles, a pueblo erected by Royal order, in virtue of specific instructions to that end, should be without an actual reference from the hand of Neve as to its founding, seems strange indeed. In a letter of April 15, 1778,<sup>8</sup> the Governor informs the Comandante-General as follows, "I have taken fourteen residents who with their families comprise sixty-six individuals, with whom I founded the Pueblo of San Josef de Gálvez, on the 29th day of November last, near the head of the Guadalupe River, distant 26 leagues from this Presidio, of Monterey, 16 from that of San Francisco, and three-quarters of a league from the Santa Clara Mission."

We know that Moraga actually escorted the settlers to San José. Neve in the above letter states that he himself founded the Pueblo, which may merely mean that it was established under his administration. Palóu says in the "*Vida*,"<sup>9</sup> that the settlers themselves founded the Pueblo, during the first days of November, "*formaron su Pueblo, dando principio a el los primeros días de Noviembre.*" This from Palóu may well serve to explain the drawn-out process of pueblo foundation, the settlers having started to "form" their pueblo during the first days of November, had completed the necessary requirements by November 29th, when it was officially founded. We shall have recourse to this explanation when dealing with Los Angeles.

Neve's *Reglamento* dated June 1, 1779, was a necessary improvement on Echeveste's Regulation of 1773. At Croix's request the former had drafted an instrument of high significance in the administration of a province now ten years old. The Comandante-General approved it in September of that year, and it was to bear the King's approval, under hand of Josef de Gálvez, on October 24, 1781.<sup>10</sup> California was to be raised to the level of the Provincias Internas de Occidente, and made to shift for itself. Colonization was a very important item in the new Regulation. With the idea of making this

<sup>8</sup> Prov. Rec. Vol. 1, p. 10.

<sup>9</sup> Ref. Cit. Clavijeros Edition—Chapter XLVII, p. 210.

<sup>10</sup> The Reglamento was provisionally put into effect at the beginning of 1781.

vast country more than 200 leagues in length, useful to the Crown, the creation of "Pueblos de Gente de Razon" was an immediate necessity. The encouraging of agriculture, breeding of cattle and horses, and the populating of those fertile valleys with Spaniards, would supply food and soldiers for the presidios, so that the risk and uncertainty of transportation by water might ultimately be avoided.

The *Reglamento* called for the occupation of the long abandoned and important Santa Bárbara Channel region. A presidio and three missions were to be established, forming a necessary link in the chain that already numbered eight missionary establishments and three military outposts. It approved the foundation of two pueblos, one provisionally established, the other to be known as Nuestra Señora de los Angeles, on the Porciúncula River. The Presidio and the Mission of Santa Bárbara to be situated in the center of the Channel, were to be flanked on the northern extremity by the Mission of la Purísima Concepción, and on the south by the long delayed establishment of San Buenaventura.<sup>11</sup> A newly increased force of four lieutenants, four alfereces (ensigns or sub-lieutenants), six sergeants, sixteen corporals, one hundred seventy-two soldiers, one surgeon, and five master-mechanics with an annual salary allotment of \$53,453.00 was allowed for the protection of four presidios, 11 missions and two pueblos. San Buenaventura and Purísima were to be allotted a sergeant and fourteen men; a corporal and five men for the *escoltas* or guards of the other missions; four soldiers including a corporal at each of the pueblos for two years, and the rest to be assigned to the presidial companies.

The *Reglamento* called for Spanish pueblos in the new Province, a policy hardly in accord with the missionary idea, but very necessary in a Province so sparsely settled with *Gente de Razon*. If, as colonists, Spaniards were to be allowed to form separate communities, politically independent, and apart from the missions, to trade with the neophytes and as so frequently happened, to exploit them, there was danger for the system so ably championed by Serra and his successors.

Settlers were to be recruited in Sonora and Sinaloa; to be

<sup>11</sup> San Buenaventura was to have been the third mission founded.

granted each a house lot and tract of land for cultivation; to be supplied with the necessary live-stock, implements and seed, for which they must satisfy the Royal Exchequer within five years from the products of the soil; each was to receive an annual sum of \$116.50 the first two years, and \$60.00 the next three years, sums including rations, payment in clothing and other necessities at cost prices; to use in common government land for pasturage, wood and water; and finally to be tax free for said period of five years. These inducements were offered only to those colonists who left their native country, but as to lands, other colonists such as discharged soldiers, might enjoy similar advantages.

In satisfaction of this government aid, colonists were merely required to sell to the presidios exclusively, the surplus production of their lands at fair prices to be fixed by the government in accordance with market rates in the southern Provinces. Military service was to be imposed only in case of emergency. The four square leagues of land which comprised the pueblo limits must contain their lands, which were not to be alienated nor encumbered by mortgage. Houses, irrigating ditches, and other necessary structures were to be erected, implements kept in repair and their livestock not decreased by slaughter except in such manner as would insure its increase. The Pueblo must construct dams, irrigating canals, roads and streets, proper municipal buildings and a church; the produce of its lands to be used to defray its particular expenses.

The man entrusted with the recruiting of men and families for the Province, was none other than Don Fernando Javier Rivera y Moncada, at the time Lieutenant Governor of Lower California, with more than ten years experience in the California field. He had led the first land expedition of Gálvez' "Expedición Santa," from the Mission of Santa María, northermost outpost of Spain in the peninsula of Lower California to the rendezvous of the four detachments at San Diego. With Crespí at his side and a little band of pioneers, he blazed a trail through 200 miles of wilderness, harrassed by mountain and Indian both, till the happy day that the refreshing waters of San Diego Bay stretched before them with the *San Carlos*, and *San Antonio*, riding at anchor. He had



accomplished the first step in the reconnaissance of the "Famoso Puerto de Monterrey."

He it was who had stood sponsor for the first Indian child baptized at San Diego Mission, giving his proud name to the first offering of those "gentiles." Yet these same savages were to rise up six years later, and smite as it were, the hand that had poured the waters of everlasting life upon them. Little did Rivera realize that one day he was to lose his own life in deadly combat with the Yumas, distant relatives of the frightened child he then held in his arms.

As Comandante of the Californias in 1774, succeeding Pedro Fages and his Catalans, Captain Rivera y Moncada had recruited soldiers and families in Sinaloa for his new command. Fifty-one persons in all responded to his call, among them the first white women and children to come by land to California, who had been escorted by Lieutenant Josef Francisco de Ortega from the Mission of San Fernando de Vellicatá, and arrived at San Diego in September of 1774.

Recruiting to Rivera was therefore not a new task, so when he received orders from Croix at Neve's request, he left his capital of Loreto in 1779, and crossed the gulf to Guaymas, well prepared to send new blood to California. He arrived at Arispe, Sonora, capital of the Provincias Internas, in December of said year, and on the 27th received full instructions from the Comandante General, in a letter which acquainted him with his commission.<sup>12</sup> He was warned not to exaggerate the inducements offered, especially as to wages, and to explain the exact terms of each contract, to soldier and settler alike. A settler was to receive ten dollars monthly, and regular rations for the absolute term of three years starting on the date of enlistment and subject to no discount. This does not agree with the *Reglamento* which offered as we have seen, \$116.50 for the first two years and \$60.00 for the next three; nor was the pay to begin till the granting of one of the lots in the Pueblo. In addition the colonist was to receive two cows, two oxen, three mares, two horses, a mule, two ewes, two she-goats, and the necessary implements and tools, which together with the clothing and mounts, must be

<sup>12</sup> See letter and *Instrucción*, pp. 140 and 189 this volume.

gradually repaid from the excess produce of the land and the increase in livestock. "Soldiers, since they enjoy permanent and larger salaries, and are governed by different regulations must satisfy by prudent discounts, the amounts furnished them and their families," it was provided.

From the Instruction we learn that the subaltern officers for California's newly increased force had already been chosen and commissioned, with but one exception, this latter to be appointed by Neve. Three sergeants, two corporals, and twenty soldiers had been selected from the volunteer companies of the Sonora presidios, to serve out their time in California, service to start on February 1st 1780, when they were to assemble at San Miguel de Horcasitas. The officers, sergeants and corporals were to aid Rivera in the recruit and gathering of mounts, and the necessary expenses were to be covered by drawing on the Los Alamos branch of the Royal Treasury.

Twenty-four settlers and fifty-nine soldiers were needed for California, and Rivera was to canvass the Provinces of Ostimuri, Sinaloa, and go beyond the Provincias Internas, as far as Guadalajara if need be. For if all the recruits came from the territory under the Comandancia-General, what with the great number taken by Anza to California in 1775, and another exodus about to start, there would not be sufficient people for the necessary repopulation of Sonora. This difficulty was equally appreciated by California, for the two provinces should join hands and establish permanent communication, by means of the proposed establishments in the Gila-Colorado district. If it were more practical to recruit families from these "países internos,"<sup>13</sup> for said establishments and those of California, it was equally certain that there would not be sufficient people for both enterprises, and the necessity of calling upon outlying districts to furnish them was clearly evident.

Twenty-five of the new recruits were to fill the places of the twenty-five volunteers, so that only thirty-four men were destined for California service. The settlers must be men of the soil, tillers of the field, accompanied by their families;

<sup>13</sup> *Países internos*: interior Provinces, as Sonora and Sinaloa.

healthy and robust, of upright character and likely to set good example to the heathen, in the midst of whom they were to found their Pueblo. All must bind themselves to ten years' service. They were to include a mason, a carpenter and a blacksmith; and as afterwards appears, even a tailor joined the company. Unmarried female relatives were encouraged to come, to mate with those veterans already in California, who did not take the dusky Indian maidens seriously enough to bring them to the Mission altars.

Los Alamos, Sonora, a rich mining town near the Fuerte River, was to be the rendezvous of the whole company. Those recruited from Guadalajara, if any, were to cross over to Loreto from San Blas. From Alamos, the recruits were to be transported either via the Colorado, with the 961 horses and mules yet to be purchased, or by sea as might be thought best. Recruits and settlers were to be furnished with daily rations from date of enlistment, at 2 *reales* per diem, and their transportation paid at a *real* and a half per league, to Los Alamos.

On February 10, 1780<sup>14</sup> Croix sent Neve a copy of these instructions with the information that Rivera had already raised the royal standard, that the recruits would probably come in three divisions and that the land expedition would start in September or October, if all went well. Copies of the general's letters to the Viceroy were also enclosed from one of which it appears that the plan to get Sonora volunteers had failed so that all the new men must go to California.

Orders were issued to the merchants of Los Alamos and Rosário, to restock their stores if necessary, with Querétaro cloth, serge, baize, cotton shirting and even silk. Gun-smiths were notified that a new presidio was in the making, Rosário saddles from the "House of Don Prudencio" *fustero*,<sup>15</sup> and purveyor to the King's army, were issued to soldier and settler alike. The women too had their own type of saddle and fine mule bridles. *Cueras* or leather jackets were distributed to the *soldados*, along with blue jackets, resplendant with epaulettes and bright yellow buttons. The *poblador's* costume was less ornate, and lacked the devices that made his "compadre"

<sup>14</sup> Prov. St. Paps. MS. Vol. II, p. 89-99.

<sup>15</sup> *Fustero*: saddle-maker.

recruit, a soldier in name if not as yet one in fact.

Suitable saddle animals were to be had in Sonora. Here was a chance for the *hacendados* or farmers to sell the King some of their new stock. Alcaldes gave orders for them to display and sell their very best. Pack mules began to kick up dust, and soon trains began to pour into Los Alamos, as Rivera continued his march southward.

After giving the Comandante-General an itemized account of expenses for the trip of recruitment, and having allotted duties to the three officers to help him, Rivera left Horcasitas, the first week of February 1780, after enlisting two soldiers. He was soon within sight of the whitened towers of Los Alamos, where he commissioned Alferez Manuel Garcia Ruiz to distribute supplies and rations to the enlisted men. At la Villa del Fuerte, founded in 1550 by one of the Conquistadores, three more soldiers joined the increasing ranks and were instructed to make for Alamos. Farther south Rivera came to la Villa de Sinaloa, whose bells had called to prayer many of the faithful who now were building an empire beside the waters of San Francisco Bay, and whose chimes surely would linger long in the ears of those now about to depart. Here the first *poblador* of Los Angeles enlisted on May 30, 1780, and he like those after him was outfitted from shoes to hair ribbons. Culiacán, 400 years old, also furnished its quota of adventurers.

By August 1, 1780, Rivera had recruited forty-five soldiers and but seven settlers. A trip to Guadalajara seemed imperative. But coming farther south to Rosário, he had so nearly completed the whole number that he decided to forego the trip beyond the Provincias Internas. According to the dates of enlistment of the *pobladores* he was at Rosário until late in November. Not long afterwards he returned to Alamos, where he commissioned other officers for the gathering up of livestock in northern Sonora.

Here at Alamos were assembled men, women and children from all parts of Sonora and Sinaloa, of various and sundry states in life, and whose color was as varied as their places of origin. Some could boast of having been born along the Apache frontier, and recount the stirring adventures of that



desert country. To the Pueblo recruit they must have been blood-curdling indeed, but all were of stout hearts, thus to leave fireside and friends behind, to seek their fortunes beyond the horizon of the West. Mothers clasped their little ones closer as they perhaps overheard the men talking about the Yuma and Apache nations. But they doubtless took heart on learning that the fall before, Fray Garcés, beloved of the Indians, and three other Zacatecanos, had settled in the Gila-Colorado district, and that sixteen soldiers and recruits had arrived there safely with their families.

Rivera succeeded in getting the required number of soldiers—59 in all—but only 14 settlers and these not of the best, had answered his call for volunteers. To only 13 of the latter did he dispense supplies, for Rafael Mesa, who enlisted at Villa de Sinaloa on June 12, 1780, deserted before drawing a *real's* worth of rations, and another deserter, Miguel Villa, left the service only after being outfitted in part at least. Neither of them accompanied the settlers and their party when they left Los Alamos that first week of February 1781.

The next problem was the separating of this large company into two groups. In a letter of December 18, 1780,<sup>16</sup> Croix had explained to Neve that one party under Lieutenant Diego Gonzales, escorted by Alferez Ramon Laso de la Vega, would cross over from Guaymas to Loreto, thence by water to the Bay of San Luis Gonzaga, and overland to San Diego and San Gabriel. The other detachment in command of Rivera including 42 soldiers and their families, was to march overland via the Colorado, escorted above Tucson by 65 soldiers from the Sonora Presidios under Lieutenant Andrés Arias Caballero. From the Colorado this escort was to be sent back, with exception of such men as Rivera would think necessary for the journey to San Gabriel, under Alferez Cayetano Limon.

This actually worked out as follows: the first group including the settlers who numbered 46 persons in all, under command of Alferez José de Zúñiga, newly appointed for California service, left Alamos February 2, 1781. They were escorted by 17 soldiers and their families under Alferez Ramon Laso de la Vega, also newly commissioned. Rivera after seeing

<sup>16</sup> Prov. St. Pap. Vol. II, pp. 117-125.

the first detachment off busied himself with final preparations for the trip north. By the first week of April he had left Alamos, 30 of the 42 soldiers with him bringing their families. Lieutenant Gonzales who had been transferred from the other party, and Alferez José Darío Argüello accompanied him. There is no written record of this expedition, which was equally as important a colonization venture as Anza's effort, for if Rivera did keep a diary along the way, it was destroyed along with other accounts when he met his death on the Colorado just three months later. The crossing of that perilous region was just as dangerous if not more so in Rivera's time, than when Anza first parleyed with the Yuma chief Palma for safe passage in 1774.

According to Croix's communication to Neve of December 18, 1780, Rivera was to have been escorted from Tucson by a formidable array of soldiery. He doubtless followed the old road north to Guaymas, Pitic, Horcasitas, where much of the stock was assembled. Then in the footsteps of Anza through Santa Ana, Imuris, Tubac; and by easy stages to afford much-needed rest to the families and save the livestock for the desert crossing still to the west. Alferez Cayetano Limon, a veteran of more than 25 years experience on the frontier, joined him at San Carlos de Buenavista.

Neve as early as May 16, 1781,<sup>17</sup> at San Gabriel, had written Croix that he was sending Sergeant Juan Josef Robles of the Monterey Company with twelve soldiers to meet Rivera on the Colorado. Five or six soldiers actually accompanied Robles and on the banks of the great river, met Rivera early in June, with a formidable pack train of almost a thousand head of cattle, horses and mules. Rivera found there two settlements, combinations of presidio and mission, poorly adapted to the needs of a situation fraught with peril. Garcés early had advocated the planting of missions in that region. Chief Palma, the friend of Anza, had begged that his people, having sworn allegiance to God and King, should be favored with permanent missionary establishments. The coming of the great San Francisco colony in 1775, with its numerous packs of goods and provisions but served to encourage the Yumas to

<sup>17</sup> Prov. Rec. Vol. II, p. 82.

hopes along these lines. Palma, or in Indian, Cofot, had appeared before the Viceroy, been baptized in the Cathedral of Mexico City, and returned hopeful of aid and recognition.

What a disappointment for these people then, to see the niggardly foundations at San Pedro y San Pablo and at La Concepción, which a handful of soldiers and four priests were trying so hard to keep going. The colonists had even encroached upon the lands of the Yumas and insulted their chiefs, and feeling ran high. Palma was at his wits' end to keep his people from striking, and himself bitterly disappointed.

Such was the state of affairs when Rivera appeared on the eastern banks of the Colorado in June. The coming of another great expedition California-bound, whose herds grazed on their choicest lands, fanned the flames of revolt among the Yumas against the sad looking establishments allotted them. Seeing that the livestock was greatly in need of rest, Rivera remained behind with five of his recruits and the men under Robles; after despatching the Sonora escort, he sent the California-bound company forward. It was escorted by Limon and nine of his men. Before this expedition left the banks of the river, a Yuma father and mother entrusted their little girl but four years old to one of the soldiers and his wife, to be brought to San Gabriel for baptism.<sup>18</sup> Why the child was not offered to the beloved Fray Garcés is not known. Perhaps the parents knowing of the impending attack against the settlements, and fearing failure, surrendered her eagerly to the white men. The party arrived at San Gabriel July 14th, and great must have been the rejoicing that welcomed it.

Neve who had been at San Gabriel since early May, had been busy looking over the site for the proposed pueblo, and no doubt had a definite idea of its location before the settlers arrived. Under date of July 14th,<sup>19</sup> he wrote to Croix of the arrival of the first detachment, under Gonzales and Argüello, escorted by Limon, with 35 recruits, 30 of them bringing their families. He also declares that the 62 pack animals of the expedition were in such a pitiful state, that it would be impossible to transport the families, 750 fanegas of grain, and

<sup>18</sup> Baptismal Register, Mission San Gabriel, Vol. I, p. 62, Entry No. 739.

<sup>19</sup> Prov. Rec. Vol. II, pp. 87-88.

other supplies to the Channel, before the coming of the rainy season, "which lasts from November till February, and even then it takes the roads a good month to become passable for pack trains"; so that he had decided to postpone the Channel foundations until the following spring.

Meanwhile in Mexico the rest of the party had left Alamos February 2, 1781, and moved slowly along the well travelled road north, much as the railroad does today, past Navajoa, and down<sup>20</sup> to the mouth of the Mayo River. Getting their first view of the blue waters of Santa Barbara Bay, the disemboquement of the broad Río, the travellers awaited the first *lanchas* to transport them across the Sea of Cortés, to Loreto, California Baja. This they reached the first week in March, and there were given a rousing welcome by Comandante Joaquin Cañete, and the newly appointed Alferez Josef Maria Estrada.

After recuperating from the strenuous sea trip, Laso de la Vega and his 17 soldier families embarked anew for the Bahía de San Luis Gonzaga, where they landed on April 24th. They repaired to the Mission of Santa Maria, where they rested before the long and arduous overland journey northward to San Diego. Zúñiga and his *pobladores* soon followed. But smallpox had been contracted and had overcome some of the party, and he lost two members. Antonio Miranda Rodriguez, the "chino" of the group and his eleven year old girl, Juana Maria were left behind, perhaps victims of the dread *viruelas*.

Neve while still at Monterey, had issued orders on March 24, 1781,<sup>21</sup> to Alferez Josef Velasquez, whom he had commissioned, and recently transferred from Loreto to San Diego, regarding the transportation and escort of families from the *Frontera* or Frontier to San Diego. Velasquez, a veteran of 1769 who knew the country well, met Zúñiga at Vellicatá, and despatching the company north with a few of his men awaited the arrival of Vega. All were enroute to San Diego by May 16th, when Neve communicated these facts to Croix, and they arrived there after a heart-breaking journey over land and sea, six months on the way, the first week in August.

<sup>20</sup> See map accompanying article.

<sup>21</sup> Prov. St. Pap. Ben. Mil., Vol. II, pp. 142-6.



For some of the recruits this was to be their future home, as they were to enlist in the San Diego Company to replace the seven veterans assigned to the Santa Bárbara Company, now in the process of formation.

Zúñiga and the rest of the recruits and the settlers for Los Angeles were soon on their way again. But this time they traveled through a promised land indeed, no frowning mountains looked down upon them, nor did parched deserts bring memories of the weary *jornadas* of the south. With Vega and 13 soldiers, Zúñiga arrived with the *pobladores* at San Gabriel Mission August 18, 1781. There was much rejoicing as members of one party would exchange greeting with the other. Neve doubtless had much to discuss with the newly arrived officers, for Rivera and his party had not yet come from the Colorado.

Zúñiga, fearful that the smallpox from which a number of settlers and recruits had but lately recovered, might spread, quarantined his charges a league south of the Mission. Temporary shacks of poles and mud were clustered about the adobe walls of the Mission, and gave shelter to the families of the soldiers, while the settlers were similarly housed pending the foundation of their pueblo.

We left Rivera with a small guard on the eastern bank of the Colorado, resting the great herd of stock, and noted the growing unrest of the Yumas. The Spaniards by bringing these Indians into the fold as only the shrewd Anza and the inspired Garcés could do, had been granted safe passage to California. Palma had kept faith with the brave Capitán Don Juan, by keeping intact the supplies entrusted him, on that first expedition. In the uprising of the hostile tribes against San Diego in 1775, we are led to believe that Palma and his people refused to join in that campaign of blood, which nearly cost Spain her foothold in California.

But Palma was losing the respect of his people by suffering in silence the insults of the Spaniards and their unfulfilled promises, and on Tuesday, July 17th, he and his warriors finally struck with as much savagery as had the Diegueños. The settlement of San Pedro y San Pablo was the first to fall, Fathers Juan Diaz, and Josef Matias Moreno, Sargento Juan

Josef de la Vega, most of his escort including Corporal Josef Miguel Palomino were slain. The Yumas captured five men and all the women, and retired, leaving the charred remains of the building behind them.

At about the same time, La Concepción some eight miles down the river, was sacked. Alferez Santiago Islas, and the corporal Pascual Rivera were killed but Garcés and Father Juan Barreneche were spared.

Next morning the savages attacked Rivera and his men, who had hastily thrown up entrenchments. They made a gallant stand, but the odds were too great and all fell before the onslaught of the Yumas. A singular loss to the service of the King, for a very forceful and popular man had met his death. Rivera's ministrations to the wants of a young province cannot be overestimated, and although his actions at times are hard to explain, he left a lasting impression upon the history of those early years.

That same afternoon the savages returned to la Concepción, destroyed the buildings and although Fray Garcés and his companion escaped for a short time they were killed the following day. Forty-six Spaniards had fallen to quench the Yuma's thirst for blood, among them three whose names had loomed large on that western horizon,—Garcés, than whom no bearer of the cross had been more welcome among the savage tribes for 10 years or more; Fray Díaz, also much at home in the wilderness, and well remembered at San Gabriel in California, and el Capitan Rivera.

The Yuma massacre was local in its origin and in its immediate effects. The tribes around Misión San Gabriel were not warlike nor did they appreciate the grudge that Palma's men nurtured against the Spaniards. They were also of a different nation, and there is nothing in the records to show that the revolt on the Colorado spread or threatened to extend to California. However Father Zephyrin Englehardt O. F. M., historian of the California Missions, has held that this affair had much to do with the postponement of the founding of the Pueblo of Los Angeles which he asserts.

Neve after welcoming the settlers to San Gabriel on August 18th, drafted his "Instrucción para la Fundación de los

Angeles,"<sup>22</sup> eight days later. There is no complete copy of this valuable document extant, nor do we know positively whether the date September 4th, commonly accepted as the day of founding, appeared therein.

Soon after it was written, news of the Yuma massacre reached the Mission. Limon after escorting the Santa Bárbara colony to San Gabriel, had started back to the Colorado. He was informed of the disaster on the way, but ignoring this warning, he left two of his men with the pack animals, and with the seven others approached la Concepción. The charred remains of the buildings and the bodies strewn about the place told of a futile struggle. On the 21st of August his own party was attacked, and he and his son were wounded, perhaps even by the same Yuma who on that occasion was seen wearing the uniform of the slain Rivera. The two men left behind had been ambushed. Limon with the survivors hurried back with the terrible news, arriving at San Gabriel shortly after Neve had issued his Instrucción of August 18th. This incident may have postponed the founding of the Pueblo. I think not.

That documentary material bearing on an event so important to us of today should be so scant, is to be wondered at; this seems all the more strange when we realize what a thorough planner Neve was. *Vide his Reglamento*. But as yet no record has come to light from his pen of what went on that day. Contemporary references are few. Among the most important is Neve's letter to Croix, dated at San Gabriel October 29, 1781. H. H. Bancroft in his work on California, Vol. I, pg. 343, note 21, merely quotes half the extract of this letter, copied by his research workers from the Spanish Archives. The reference is to Prov. Rec., MS., II. 89-90. Bancroft recounts that Lieutenant José de Zúñiga arrived at the Mission of San Gabriel on August 18th, with the settlers and recruits, and "they were obliged to encamp in quarantine for a time, at a distance of a league from the Mission, some of the children having recently recovered from the smallpox." But he leaves out the most important part of the letter, and details here published for the first time, bearing directly on the founding, for Neve goes on to say that "from this camp

<sup>22</sup> See p. 154 this volume.

of quarantine, the settlers have moved to those lands, where the Pueblo de los Angeles is in the process of being established." He does not mention when they moved nor whether he accompanied them to the site. Other documents may clear this point up. "The *Zanja Madre*, or main water ditch for diverting the waters of the Porciúncula for irrigating purposes, had already been constructed, and the settlers were still working on their houses. Also the corrals for the cattle and horses had been completed, but these animals had not as yet been distributed, in order that the *pobladores* with greater zeal and energy, might devote their time to the completing of the Pueblo. After the accomplishment of which task, they were to start to cultivate their lands for the sowing of grain."

Neve does not say that the Pueblo had been founded, but that it was in the process of being founded. Palóu tells of the Pueblo of San Josef in his "*Vida*," that the colonists started to "form" their pueblo in the first days of November. Neve in a letter to Croix says that he founded it on November 29th. This letter I take as very important, second only to the *Padrón*<sup>23</sup> of the Pueblo, dated at San Gabriel November 19th, 1781; and the only document extant which definitely states that the Pueblo was founded on September 4th. We do not know who the author of this important Census was. The manuscript copy of the original, which is to be found in the Bancroft Library and which it was my happy privilege to bring to light, is not signed. At the time of its taking, in the third week of November, the settlers were already domiciled and living in palisaded huts, roofed with mud. The horses and cattle mentioned in the letter supra, had been distributed along with a plowshare, a hoe and an axe.

Taking these documents together, and trying to reconcile them, we may say that September 4th was the date of the settler's removal from their quarantine camp to the site of the Pueblo. Neve does not mention one way or the other whether he accompanied them on that day. Certainly building lots must have been granted the colonists before they moved, for these were to be drawn by lot, as were also the *suertes* or planting fields. There was necessity of allocating these fami-

<sup>23</sup> Prov. Pap. Misc. and Colon. Vol. 1, pp. 104-5.



lies, that they might begin the erection of their homes, corrals, etc. It is my opinion that soon after the Lower California contingent arrived on August 18th they were shown the site by Neve himself, and busied themselves in clearing away the brush and *chamizo*, from about the crude plaza. There may have been some semblances of shelters already erected when they abandoned their first camp. Palóu in his "*Noticias*," tells us that as soon as the settlers arrived, four of the families lent a hand at establishing the Pueblo on the banks of the Porciúncula. They of course could only visit the site that Neve had selected for this purpose, so that he may have taken them to that place on September 4th, or earlier.

Another source pointing to an early September date, and the only original documents so far discovered, are the accounts rendered the *pobladores*, the first of which is dated at San Gabriel September 13, 1781.<sup>24</sup> These designate the settlers as already residents of the Pueblo. The original accounts in Rivera's possession had been destroyed at his death, so that new ones had to be made here. Zúñiga who had escorted the *pobladores* from Alamos, and no doubt dispensed provisions and clothing to them, is the author of these documents. They are signed by him and countersigned by Neve. Only five of them were found in the Museo de la Nación, in Mexico City, under *Provincias Internas*, Tomo 199. The dates range from September 13th to the 20th, so September 4th as the date of the founding as appears in the *Padrón* is very strongly supported.

These three documents, Neve's letter of October 29th, the *Padrón* of November 19th, and the accounts of September 13th et seq. point definitely to the early September date. The *Instrucción* if we had it, might be found to include the same date. Imagine our disappointment when searching for it at the Bancroft Library, to discover that it had been cleverly snipped with a scissors from the priceless tome! Bancroft, who had access to the original, states that the date of founding was September 4th, and cites the *Padrón* as authority. Hittel strangely enough gives September 1st as the correct date. In this I think he is mistaken. For before either of these men published their monumental works on California, there ap-

<sup>24</sup> See p. 121 this volume.

peared the "Centennial History of Los Angeles," in 1876. It was written by J. J. Warner, Benjamin Hayes and Dr. J. P. Widney, and they mention having had certified copies of documents, from the office of the Surveyor-General at San Francisco, which established the date as September 4th. Among them must have been a copy of the *Padrón*, as well as a traced copy, as they state, of Neve's order for the founding, for where else would they have found the date, and the names of the settlers? If the *Instrucción* had included this date it seems certain that Bancroft as well as Warner who wrote the first section of the Centennial History, would have mentioned that fact.

This process of founding a pueblo seems to have been a long drawn out affair. If the colonists moved on September 4th, they had to finish building their habitations and other necessary structures before they would be allowed the use of animals, or be permitted to enter their fields for sowing. All was not ready therefore until the third week in November when the *Padrón* was taken. Similar circumstances may well have obtained in the case of San Josef, if Palóu is not making another error in the "*Vida*," in his statement that the settlers started to "form" their pueblo in the first days of November, as above cited.

Another contemporary reference to the Pueblo's establishment given in Palóu's "*Vida*,"<sup>25</sup> is staunchly supported by Fr. Zephyrin Englehardt. The biographer of the Seraphic Serra gives but a brief reference to the founding. He says that Neve "assigned the site and lands to the settlers and there, escorted by a corporal and three soldiers, they founded their Pueblo *a últimos del Año de '81*." Englehardt insists that this means in the last days of December of 1781, and mentions the Yuma massacre as a reason for suspending operations until that late day. But this cannot be the proper interpretation of the phrase, in view of the documents already reviewed. The phrase may mean "last months of the year," and this is clearly borne out by the *Padrón* of November 19th, compiled when all was complete. The December date is plainly out of the question. José Francisco Ortega made a review of the Pueblo in-

<sup>25</sup> Chapter LI, p. 245.

habitants on December 2, 1781,<sup>26</sup> at which time all were drawing rations and pay, and firmly established in their new home.

The French traveler Mofras, who visited Los Angeles in 1841, bears out Englehardt's contention, stating that "the settlement of Our Lady of the Angels was founded towards the end of December 1781—." There is no authority cited for this statement and I think that the French traveller was misinformed, or possibly his source of information was the above-mentioned work of Palóu.

The "*Reparticion de Solares y Suertes*," evidencing the formal transfer of title to the colonists of their land was dated September 4, 1786. As this formality was ordered to be executed at the expiration of five years after the founding, when according to the *Reglamento*, government aid was to cease and advances were to be repaid, the document may well have significant bearing on the date of founding. Governor Pedro Fages had commissioned Alferez Josef Darío Argüello of the Santa Bárbara Company to proceed to Los Angeles and put the settlers in formal possession of their property according to Section XIV of the Regulation. Argüello fulfilled this commission on September 4th, and appointed the Corporal of the Pueblo *escolta*, Josef Vicente Feliz, and private Roque Jacinto de Cota, also of the guard, as legal witnesses.<sup>27</sup> Each of the nine settlers were summoned in succession and in the presence of all was granted first his house lot, then his four fields, and finally his branding iron. If, as seems entirely logical, September 4 was chosen for these confirmations as being exactly five years to the day after the founding, this document would amply confirm the early September date.

Thus, in summation, we have evidence that clearly points to September 4th as the day of the founding of Los Angeles, if we take it that the settlers on that day made the actual beginnings of the establishment of their Pueblo. Their accounts as early as September 13th, describe them as residents of Los Angeles, and these original documents are not to be disregarded. Then the manuscript extract of the *Padrón* definitely gives September 4th as the founding day, although the com-

<sup>26</sup> Review of December 2, 1781—St. Pap. Misc. and Colon. Vol. I, p. 105.

<sup>27</sup> See p. 150 this volume.

pletion of all requisites for foundation was not accomplished until the middle of November. Bancroft and Warner both cite this *Padrón* as authority for their designation of the September 4th date. Neve's letter of October 29th although not stating when the settlers moved to the site, does help to clear up the involved process of Pueblo foundation as understood at that time. The coincidence of an exact five year period between founding and granting of formal possession of lands to the settlers may also serve to bolster the evidence in favor of an early date.

On the other hand we have Palóu's brief and casual reference, which may well be translated so as to take in even as early a date as September, and certainly be made to include the November date. The December date given by Mofras, as we have seen, appears rather far-fetched, in view of the evidence to the contrary.

We have no record that Neve sent an expedition against the Yumas until the following spring. He must have realized the more immediate necessity for the Pueblo, and the futility of punitive measures on the Colorado. On the first of September he despatched Limon and his escort with letters to Croix via the peninsula below. According to his own *Reglamento* there was need of allocating and establishing the colonists at their pueblo as soon as possible, thus to start making California independent of the Royal Treasury. He had resolved to found a community designed to supply food and men for his army and guarantee the stability of a province which until his time was but precariously held by three presidios which furnished *escoltas* for eight missions widely scattered over a 500-mile sector.

The site for the Pueblo had been noted by Fray Juan Crespí on that first expedition to Monterey in 1769. With Portolá and his band of pioneers the padre had camped at a place near the river which he was to christen Porciúncula, on August 2, 1769, and had waxed enthusiastic about the beauty of the valley, and the many advantages offered for a large settlement. Neve on January 20, 1781, had written Croix that the territory between San Diego and the Channel had been well examined, and that the only likely site was that on the Río Porciúncula,



despite its being 30 leagues distant from the proposed Presidio of Santa Bárbara.

Accounts of the actual founding ceremony by later writers have not been free from the excursions into romance which always seem to be inspired by such a dramatic situation as that which ushered the Pueblo de los Angeles into existence. With little regard for historical fact or probability they have not hesitated to even over-estimate the histrionic possibilities of such a scene, and have painted a picture as fanciful and sentimental as it is out of proportion to the facts as found. The following account is one of the less imaginative, yet leaves much to be desired from the point of view of an objective, rational treatment.

"We can affirm without fear of contradiction that there is no city in this vast country of ours which has had such a glorious and solemn founding. . . . At once volunteer Spanish settlers were sought in Mexico. These with their families were granted liberal concessions in the way of property and privileges. All these settlers headed by Don José Zúñiga, Lieutenant, gathered at San Gabriel. The Governor himself was then the guest of the Fathers of this Mission.

"From San Gabriel, the mother and guardian of the Pueblo, the solemn procession started on September 4, 1781. The governor himself led the imposing line. The soldiers following next bore aloft the banner of Spain, the motherland. Then in close procession marched the priests, preceded by a band of Indian acolytes, carrying the Cross the emblem of our redemption and the banner of Our Lady. . . .

"When the procession arrived at the site previously determined for the Plaza of the Pueblo, the touching and solemn ceremony of the founding began. The priests with the significant and appropriate prayers and rites of the Sacred Liturgy, blessed the favored spot which was destined to support a great and a flourishing city. Doubtless these saintly Fathers, while imparting their paternal blessing, foresaw the growth and prosperity of future generations. Following this preliminary, the Governor addressed the people in well-chosen words, thanking the zealous missionaries for their faithfulness, recognizing the untiring efforts of the Fathers, speaking of the future

possibilities, encouraging the citizens to activity, and last but not least of all, giving special gratitude to God for His many providences and imploring continued blessings. The town was then christened Pueblo de Nuestra Señora de Los Angeles de Porciúncula."

The author of this account claims to have gathered his notes from "old manuscripts and records," accurately compiled after diligent research. However he mentions no other sources than Bancroft's History (which he seems to have rather poorly digested), and the Mission registers at San Gabriel and the Church of Our Lady of the Angels. Records bearing on the founding of the Pueblo are not to be found at San Gabriel today. If any such existed even before the author's time, they would no doubt have been noted by Bancroft's agent, Savage, who copied from the Registers and manuscripts at the Mission in 1877. The registers themselves are silent on this important event, although they contain many interesting details about the soldiers and settlers.

We do not know with certainty whether Neve accompanied the colonists on the day they moved from their quarantine camp, which date we have set as September 4th, 1781. Palóu tells us that he assigned to them the site and the lands, in much the same language that he uses in describing the founding of San Josef. The extant correspondence of the Governor is mute on this point, he merely writing to Croix on Oct. 29th, as noted, that "they moved over to occupy the lands where the Pueblo is in the process of being established."

I doubt very much whether any priests accompanied the settlers. Religious ceremonies were not ordinarily attendant on the founding of pueblos. At San Josef de Guadalupe, first pueblo to be founded in California, no priest was in attendance, although the Mission of Santa Clara, whence the settlers started, was but three-fourths of a league distant. The same may be said of the Villa de Branciforte, founded in 1797, and but a short distance from Santa Cruz Mission. Father Zephyrin is very strong on this point and I think rightly so. It was not customary to have religious in attendance, however necessary may have been their presence and blessings at the

founding of Missions and Misión-Presidios, as at San Carlos de Monterey and at Santa Bárbara.

Two priests were usually to be found at each mission. Fathers Antonio Cruzado and Miguel Sanchez had served faithfully at San Gabriel for nearly 10 years. But only under very extraordinary circumstances were both of them at once ever expected to leave their post. One instance of such an extraordinary occasion that comes to mind, is that when Fr. José Señan removed sacred vessels, vestments and even statues from the Mission of San Buenaventura into the mountains, when the Privateer Bouchard was threatening these coasts, in November of 1818. It seems fanciful in comparison therefore, that either Sanchez or Cruzado should have left his duties at the Mission to become player in the, to them, little drama of founding a pueblo, when that was not the customary procedure. Moreover, the pueblo system of colonization introduced by Neve was *contra* the missionary policy of the Padres, and while this would not have prevented their taking part in the ceremony if customary or required, it is not likely that they would have sought to be present.

More imaginative writers in describing the founding have even included the saying of a Mass at the favored spot, which, they relate, was reached in the early afternoon. Mass is never said after one o'clock P. M., and even had the settlers arrived at the site before noon, the Divine Sacrifice had already been celebrated at the Mission that morning before their departure.

\* The Pueblo *escolta* consisted of Corporal Josef Vicente Feliz, veteran of Anza's expedition of 1776, whose wife was she who had died that first night out of Tubac, while bringing to light a "fine boy." He was to become the Father of the Pueblo, guiding its first feeble steps, caring for its wants, and governing its early destinies. The three soldiers under him were, Roque Jacinto de Cota, his brother Antonio de Cota, veteran of 1769, and Francisco Salvador Lugo, who brought his family to California in 1774, and was father of the patriarchal Don Antonio Maria Lugo. This escort did accompany the settlers, and was to be quartered at the Pueblo for at least two years.

The Yuma Campaign as noted, had been postponed until the Spring, so that in September many veterans and recruits were available at the Mission San Gabriel. Whatever fear of native uprisings that may have been felt must have been dispelled by the number of armed forces present. So there seems to have been no excuse for postponing the founding of the pueblo beyond the nine days after the Instruction for its establishment was drafted by Neve at San Gabriel, as therein ordered.

It should not be difficult to reconstruct the scene of the founding if we but treat the matter in a practical, dispassionate manner, bearing in mind the forces brought to bear upon the event, and the circumstances under which it occurred. The many weary leagues of travel over land and sea, must have wrought havoc with the spirit, endurance and appearance of the settlers. After looking forward to the sheltering walls of the Mission at San Gabriel, they had been quarantined a league away, outcasts as it were. But perhaps all were assuredly free of the "*viruelas*" and could attend mass on that eventful Tuesday of September 4th. No doubt the mothers gave thanks for their safe arrival, the recovery of their children from the loathsome disease, and all invoked the intercession of their Patrona, Maria Santísima de Porciúncula, in whose name they were about to found their Pueblo. Sanchez, or his brother Franciscan Cruzado must have exhorted them from the pulpit to set good example to neophyte and heathen alike.

No doubt they also reminded the colonists that "la Misión del Arcangel San Gabriel," was their fond mother and spiritual guide; and must have asked their prayers for the repose of those hapless victims now in eternal sleep beside the turbulent waters of the Colorado.

Having gathered together again their domestic belongings, settlers and soldier escort proceed from the Mission on horseback. Perhaps even a *carreta* from the mission was loaned for the occasion. The same saddles that had been issued in Sonora to men and women alike, were again creaking under them, with the added weight of children, some carried up in front, the older ones hanging on behind, or lagging at the rear,



helping to whip the pack-mules into line. No animals other than these however, helped stir up the dusty camino, for Neve insisted on the completion of the Pueblo before distributing the stock, which was still corraled near the Mission.

No better description of the route followed has as yet appeared than that found in Phil Townsend Hanna's scholarly and sensible account of the founding of the Pueblo of Our Lady. He says, "Leaving the Mission, the party followed the old camino still known as Mission Road, crossing diagonally through the present city of Alhambra, proceeding north of the Midwick Country Club, skirting the southern border of Lincoln Park, thence on Aliso street, fording the Los Angeles River in the vicinity of the Aliso street bridge, and on to the site of the Plaza; following, in brief, the easiest trail between the two points, a trail discovered and followed by the wild beasts for endless ages before." I may add that the Indians of the Yabit<sup>28</sup> rancheria, adjacent to the site of the Pueblo, according to the Mission registers, must have also made of it a well-worn path to the Mission.

The sun had begun to cast long shadows before the necessary three leagues or more had been covered. Curious and friendly Indians had perhaps watched their every move; as they climbed the steep banks of the Porciúncula, and started to gather about the crude *plazuela*, the children, now recalcitrant as the mules, perhaps still lingering near the stream. Building lots and planting fields had already been drawn by lot at the Mission, and the Corporal had but to designate this or that location to each colonist. Whatever ceremony was attendant on this putting of the *poblador* in possession must have been simple and unostentatious. Wood and water were near at hand, and if temporary huts and a guard house had not already been commenced, the men now set to work eagerly, to afford shelter for their families.

There is less confusion as evening draws on, and the mothers prepare the *cena*, while the men tend the campfires, happy in the thought that they have this day "*dado principio a su pueblo*"—given a beginning to their Pueblo. Such is the simple story of the foundation of a community, which one

<sup>28</sup> Referred to as "Yang-na" by later historians.

hundred and fifty years later takes its place among the great cities of the world. The drama of it all is not in the fanfare and "panoply of pomp and liturgy" that writers have attributed, but rather that having had such an humble beginning Royally ordained though it may have been, it has today surpassed the wildest dreams of the most farsighted of its founders.

Crespí who named the river after "Our Lady Queen of the Angels," so beloved of St. Francis, did not see the Pueblo founded. Nor did Rivera, who painted in vivid language the beauties of the valley to soldiers and settlers alike, witness these humble beginnings.

We of today cannot help but be impressed by the significance of the founding one hundred and fifty years ago of a community which today has become so vast a monument to the untiring efforts and sacrifice of those few who gathered about that dusty plaza in the name of the King, and under the patronage of Nuestra Señora la Reyna de los Angeles, Maria Santísima de Porciúncula, September 4, 1781.

#### IN APPRECIATION

The task of reconstructing the scene of the founding of the Pueblo would have been insurmountable had it not been for the co-operation of many willing hearts and hands. I gratefully acknowledge the advice, inspiration, and unselfish interest of the following who furnished documents and suggestions: Dr. Herbert E. Bolton, Joseph J. Hill, and the staff of the Bancroft Library; Miss Laura Cooley, Los Angeles Public Library; Laurance L. Hill, Henry R. Wagner, Dr. Perry Worden, Lindley Bynum, Phil Townsend Hanna, Mrs. A. S. C. Forbes, Miss Marion Parks, Father St. John O'Sullivan, Fr. Zephyrin Englehardt O. F. M., and the Reverend Fathers of the Missions of San Diego, San Gabriel, and the Church of Our Lady of the Angels, who allowed me to copy from the Mission and Cathedral registers.

# SOLDIERS AND SETTLERS OF THE EXPEDITION OF 1781

By THOMAS WORKMAN TEMPLE II



SOME of the members of this famous expedition were the founders and first settlers of the City of Los Angeles, it becomes a matter of historical importance to know who and what they were, whence they came and the imprint they left upon the land of their adoption. True not all of them were Spaniards, but they sprang from hardy stock, and the blood of true Pioneers coursed thru their veins. For it took not only the spirit of adventure, but stout hearts as well, to leave their friends and firesides in those sleepy valleys of Sonora and Sinaloa, and test their fortunes "en la California Septentrional," where under the "Seven Stars," they were to found a Pueblo, today one of the metropolises of the world. The complete list is now given for the first time, and the particulars concerning the families were taken from the Mission Registers at San Gabriel, San Buenaventura and Santa Barbara, and from the manuscript copies in the Bancroft Library of the Spanish archives of California, destroyed by the fire of 1906. In giving the members of the families we enumerate only the children accompanying the expedition. Many more were born in California.

During the rather uneventful early history of the Pueblo, Vicente Felix, Corporal of the Guard, was the outstanding personality and guiding spirit. Lara, Mesa (Antonio), and Quintero had been declared unfit on their arrival with the rest of the settlers, but not until March 21, 1782, were they officially expelled from the young settlement, forfeiting their lands, stock and other government aid. When the expedition to found the Presidio of Santa Bárbara left San Gabriel, on the following day, Lara and Quintero joined the party and settled at the Presidio. Of Mesa no other trace has been found in the Mission records.

When Ortega reported on conditions to the Governor in December of that year, there were but 8 pobladores, Antonio Miranda Rodriguez still being absent in Loreto. Another poblador, Rafael Mesa seems to have been apprehended after deserting in Sonora, and brought to California. Ortega having received papers of his enlistment as a settler, December 2, 1782, forbade his joining the Santa Bárbara Company, then still in the making.

In 1783, Fages had to exclude the poblador Antonio Miranda Rodriguez, *supra*. The Santa Barbara Presidio furnished two of the pueblo *escolta*, San Diego furnishing the other two members. Ygnácio Rochin was the new guard in 1784, Francisco Lugo, also of the Santa Bárbara Presidio, still being on duty. That same year Josef Francisco Sinoba, a soldier of the first expedition, who had joined the San Francisco company in 1776, asked to be brought into the pueblo as a settler. March 12, 1785 he was taken in, being granted lots, implements and stock, without however enjoying rations and pay. Juan Josef Dominguez, also a veteran of 1769, was a *vecino* or neighbor of the Pueblo in 1785, having been granted the San Pedro Rancho by Fages. Other *vecinos* who figure prominently in the records were Manuel Perez Nieto, and Josef Maria Verdugo also veterans of 1769.

When it came time to confirm title to the settlers, in September of 1786, only eight of the original group remained.

#### POBLADORES OF EL PUEBLO DE LOS ANGELES

(1) ANTONIO CLEMENTE FELIZ VILLAVICENCIO, 30, native of Chiguagua [Chihuahua], the first poblador to answer the call; he enlisted at Villa Sinaloa, Sonora, *May 30, 1780*. His wife was MARIA DE LOS SANTOS SEFERINA, 26, a native of El Real de Batopila, in the Archbishopric of Durango. They brought an adopted daughter, MARIA ANTONIA JOSEFA PIÑUELAS, 8, native of La Villa de Sinaloa, child of Francisco Piñuelas, deceased, and María Alcaraz, of said Villa. She married Vicente Quijada, a soldier of the expedition, and widower of Juana Mendoza, on January 20, 1785 at San Gabriel Mission. In the census of the Pueblo for 1785, he is designated as a "*labrador*" or laborer and five years later as a "*vaquero*."

(2) ANTONIO MESA, 38, native of Los Alamos, Sonora. He enlisted at Villa Sinaloa *June 4, 1780*; his wife was MARIA



ANA GERTRUDIS LOPEZ, 27, born at same place. Their children were ANTONIO MARIA, 8, and MARIA PAULA, 10. This was one of the families expelled from the Pueblo some six months after its founding (21 Mar. 1782), and I find no further trace of them.

(3) RAFAEL MESA, native of Los Alamos, who enlisted June 12, 1780, but deserted on October 10th of the same year. He did not come with the expedition, but seems to have been apprehended and brought to California later. He claimed to have enlisted as a soldier, but Lieutenant Ortega excluded him from the Santa Barbara Company, on the grounds of his having deserted as a poblador, (on December 2, 1781). There is no evidence that he remained in California, and was a brother of Antonio, *supra*.

(4) JOSEF FERNANDO DE VELASCO Y LARA, 50, a native of the Port of Cadiz, Spain, and his wife, MARIA ANTONIA CAMPOS, 23, native of la Villa de Sinaloa. He served as a *padrino* or godfather, for the Indian neophytes confirmed by Fr. Junípero Serra at San Gabriel, on March 22nd and 25th of 1782.

This was, incidentally, Serra's first visit to the young Pueblo. He spent the night of the 18th at the village, which he endearingly called "La Porciúncula."

Lara enlisted at la Villa de Sinaloa June 24, 1780. On March 21, 1782 he was expelled from the Pueblo; and joined the expedition to establish the Presidio of Santa Barbara on March 26, 1782. He died shortly afterwards there and his widow then married Luis Gonzaga Lugo, a soldier of the Presidio and a veteran of 1769. There were 3 children, JOSEF JULIAN, 4, who married MARIA ANTONIA MORENO, daughter of the pobladores Josef Moreno and Guadalupe Perez, at Santa Barbara; MARIA JUANA DE JESUS, 6, who married NICOLAS FELIPE, son of Josef Xavier Cortes, deceased, and Maria Nicolasa Ramirez, of the same expedition, at Santa Barbara; MARIA FAUSTINA, 2, born at Cozala. She married at Santa Barbara, JOSEF FRANCISCO SOLÓRZANO, a native of Acapulco, a soldier at the Presidio. The only child born in California, JOSEF YGNACIO MATEO, was baptized October 30, 1782, at the Santa Barbara Presidio, the second white child to be so honored.

(5) JOSEF VANEGAS, 28, native of el Real de Bolaños, Durango, and his wife MARIA BONIFACIA MAXIMA AGUILAR, 20, native of el Real del Rosario, Sinaloa, where he enlisted on *August 11, 1780*. One child, COSME DAMIEN, but a year old, accompanied them on the expedition to California. He married María Bernarda Alvarez y Marquez, widow of Josef Máximo Rosas, at San Gabriel on July 8, 1798.

Vanegas was the first Alcalde of the new Pueblo de los Angeles, serving in 1786-8 and 1796. His wife was buried at San Gabriel, January 4, 1801.

(6) PABLO RODRIGUEZ, 25, native of el Real de Santa Rosa, Sinaloa, and his wife, MARIA ROSALIA NORIEGA, 26, native of el Real del Rosario, where he enlisted August 13, 1780. There was one child, MARIA ANTONIA, one year old, who later married JUAN PATRICIO ONTIVEROS, son of Josef Ontiveros and Ana María Carrasco, natives of Chametla, Sinaloa and members of the same expedition, on June 1, 1794, at San Gabriel Mission.

Rodríguez was *mayordomo* of the San Diego Mission, in 1807, after retiring from the Pueblo. His wife died May 8, 1824, and was buried at San Gabriel.

(7) MANUEL CAMERO, 30, native of el Real del Rosario, Sinaloa, and his wife, MARIA THOMASA GARCIA, 24, born at same place, where he enlisted August 19, 1780. They brought no children with them and none seem to have been born to them in California. Camero was a Regidor of the Pueblo in 1789, along with Felipe Santiago García, a veteran of 1774; Josef Francisco Sinoba, who became a settler in 1784, being the Alcalde. Camero was buried at San Gabriel Mission, May 31, 1819.

(8) JOSEF ANTONIO NAVARRO, 42, native of el Real del Rosario, where he enlisted August 21, 1780. His wife, also born at Rosario was, MARIA REGINA DOROTEA GLORIA DE SOTO Y RODRIGUEZ, 47. There were three children; JOSEF MARIA EDUARDO, 10, who died single; JOSEF CLEMENTE, 9, who married María del Carmen Rochín, May 15, 1791, at San Gabriel. She was a daughter of Ygnacio Rochín and Ana María Bojorquez, members of the same expedition, and natives of Los Alamos, Sonora. Clemente was a soldier of the Santa Barbara Presidio, where most of his children were born.

A third child was MARIANA JOSEFA, 4, who accompanied her father to the Presidio of San Francisco, before 1790, and married at the Santa Clara Mission, on October 30, 1791, Juan Josef Higuera, son of Manuel Higuera and Antonia Redondo, pobladores of the Pueblo of San Josef de Guadalupe. Navarro was a "maestro sastre," or tailor by trade, and died at San Francisco September 3, 1793.

María Regina Soto, Spanish, died February 17, 1785 at San Gabriel.<sup>1</sup> She doubtless was the wife of Navarro, above.

(9) JOSEF MORENO, 22, native of Rosario, Sinaloa, where he enlisted September 2, 1780, and his wife, MARIA GUADALUPE GERTRUDIS PEREZ, 19, born at the same place. No children accompanied them, but 8 children were baptized later at San Ga-

<sup>1</sup> The Mission record reads "Ma. Regina Soto española, d 17 Feb. 1785. S. G.

briel. Moreno died May 10, 1806, and was buried at San Gabriel Mission.

(10) JOSEF ANTONIO BASILIO ROSAS, 67, a native of Fresnillo, in the Archbishopric of Durango, and his wife, MARIA MANUELA CALISTRA HERNANDEZ, 43, native of Rosario, where he enlisted, September 6, 1780. They brought 6 grown-up children with them, including Alejandro Rosas, 19, himself a poblador, JOSEF MAXIMO, 15, native of Rosario, who married Maria Antonia, of the Jajamobit ranchería, on January 7, 1785, at San Gabriel. Married Ma. Bernarda Alvarez y Marquez, Feb. 11, 1794. San Diego.

JOSEF CARLOS, 12, who married María Dolores, of the Yabit ranchería, adjacent to the Pueblo, on July 4, 1784, at San Gabriel.

ANTONIO ROSALINO, 7, who married María Petra Máxima Lugo, daughter of Luis Gonzaga Lugo and María Antonia Campos, on May 23, 1802, at Santa Barbara Mission.

JOSEF MARCELINO, 4, who married María Vejar, of the Cahuepet ranchería, at San Gabriel on January 14, 1796.

JUAN ESTEBAN, 2, who married María Josefa Alvarez, daughter of Pedro Alvarez and María Teresa Marquez, on February 22, 1797, at San Diego Mission.

MARIA JOSEFA, 8, who died May 11, 1784, and was buried at San Gabriel.

Rosas died November 15, 1809, and his wife, May 18, 1823.

(11) ALEJANDRO ROSAS, 19, native of Rosario, and his wife, JUANA MARIA RODRIGUEZ, sister of the poblador, Pablo Rodriguez, and 20. He enlisted November 4, 1780, and no children came with them, but two were born here. He died a widower, January 14, 1789.

(12) ANTONIO MIRANDA RODRIGUEZ, 50, native of Sonora, who enlisted at Rosario, November 17, 1780. He accompanied the expedition as far as Loreto, and never came to California, although his building lots, implements and wages were ready for him should he appear. He is designated as absent on the first *Padron* of the Pueblo, November 19, 1781, also on the *Padron* of December 2, 1781, and in those of 1785 and 1790. He was a widower, with one child JUANA MARIA, 11 years old. He was excluded from the Pueblo December 5, 1783.

(13) LUIS QUINTERO, 55, a native of Los Alamos, Sonora, where he enlisted on February 3, 1781, on Rivera's return to Alamos from the south, and evidently the last poblador to sign on the dotted

line. His wife was MARIA PETRA RUBIO, 40, also from Los Alamos.

Quintero also served as a "padrino" or God-father for the Indians confirmed by Fr. Junípero Serra, at San Gabriel on March 22nd and 25th, 1782. He was the third poblador to be expelled from the Pueblo, and like Lara, joined the Santa Barbara expedition, which left San Gabriel March 26, 1782. He lived at the Presidio of Santa Barbara, where many of his children were married. Five children, including an adopted daughter, came with him and his wife. They were:

MARIA GERTRUDIS CASTELO, 16, daughter of Nicolás Castelo and Rita Gertrudis Valenzuela, natives of Los Alamos, who came as an adopted daughter, and married DOMINGO ARUZ, a Catalan Volunteer, on November 12, 1782, at San Buenaventura Mission.

MARIA CONCEPCION, 9, who married JOSEF MIGUEL FLORES Y SANDOVAL, a soldier of the Santa Barbara Presidio, on December 26, 1782, at San Buenaventura.

MARIA TOMASA, 7, who married RAFAEL GONZALES DE LA CRUZ, soldier of Santa Barbara, on December 21, 1785, at San Buenaventura Mission.

MARIA RAFAELA, 6, who died at Santa Barbara Presidio, on July 5, 1783.

JOSEF CLEMENTE, 3, married María Josepha Rodriguez y Parra, November 30, 1799, Santa Barbara.

Another daughter was MARIA CATHARINA, 16, who was married to Joaquín Rodríguez, a soldier of the same expedition. MARIA JOSEFA QUINTERO, 18, who was married to Josef Rosalino Fernandez, of the expedition, and FABIANA SEBASTIANA, 15, married to Eugenio Valdez, soldier of the expedition, were also daughters of Quintero.

Quintero was a tailor by trade, and lived for a long time at Santa Barbara, where he died.

(14) MIGUEL VILLA, of whom nothing is known except that he enlisted in Sonora, and deserted before the expedition got to Loreto. He never came to California, although a soldier with the same name, Juan Josef Villa, native of San Miguel de Horcasitas, was among the soldiers destined for the Presidio of Santa Barbara.

Of the above-mentioned pobladores, all but Miguel Villa, Rafael Mesa, and Antonio Miranda Rodríguez, arrived at San Gabriel August 18, 1781, and became the founders of el Pueblo de Nuestra Señora de los Angeles del Río Porciúncula. All began to draw rations and receive pay on their arrival at San Gabriel.



**SOLDIERS WHO ACCOMPANIED POBLADORES OF LOS ANGELES  
ARRIVING AT SAN GABRIEL MISSION, AUGUST 18, 1781**

(1) JOSEF ANTONIO ONTIVEROS, 37, native of Chametla, in the Jurisdiction of Rosario, Sinaloa, and his wife, ANA MARIA BIRVIESCAS Y CARRASCO, 34, native of Rosario, where he enlisted. Two children:

JUANA DE DIOS, 13, who married Josef Miguel Olivares, native of Guadalajara, Jalisco, on September 9, 1784, at San Buenaventura Mission. Later becoming a widow, she married Juan Matías Olivas, widower and soldier of the 1781 Expedition, on June 24, 1793 at San Gabriel Mission.

JUAN PATRICIO, 9, born at Chametla, like his sister, and married Maria Antonia Rodríguez y Noriega, daughter of the Pobladores Pablo Rodríguez and María Rosalía Noriega, on June 1, 1794 at San Gabriel Mission.

(2) MAXIMO ALANIS Y CASILLAS, 21, native of Chametla, Sinaloa, where he enlisted. His wife was JUANA MARIA MIRANDA, 20, native of Los Alamos, where they were married. No children came with them. He served at San Diego Presidio.

(3) JUSTO LORENZO HERNANDEZ, and his wife, ZIRIACA TRINIDAD DE LEON, both natives of Culiacán, where he enlisted. Three children:

JUAN MARIA JORGE, 5, born at Culiacán, and married Francisca Lorenzana, living at San José in 1841, with two children.

JUANA NEPOMUCENA,

MAXIMA MARIA TRINIDAD,

(4) JUAN MATIAS OLIVAS, 22, native of Rosario, Sinaloa, where he enlisted, and his wife, MARIA DOROTEA ESPINOSA, 23, native of the same place. She died at Santa Barbara, where her husband was a soldier in the Presidio, on September 9, 1789. He married later, Juana de Diós Ontiveros, supra, on June 1, 1794, at San Gabriel Mission. Two children:

MARIA NICOLASA, 2, native of Rosario, who married at Santa Barbara, 11 Nov. 1793, Macedonio Barreras, a soldier of the San Diego Presidio.

JOSEF PABLO, 1, married María Luciana Fernandez y Quintero, January 7, 1800, Santa Barbara.

(5) JUAN ANTONIO IBARRA, 21, native of Mazatlán de los Mulatos, Sinaloa, and his wife, MARIA DE LOS ANGELES VELASQUEZ, 21, native of same place, where he enlisted. One child:

JOSEF ALVINO, 2, who married María Manuela Valen-

zuela, daughter of Pedro Valenzuela y María Dolores Parra, of the said expedition, on September 8, 1805, at San Gabriel.

(6) JOAQUIN RODRIGUEZ, 21, native of Los Alamos, and his wife, MARIA CATARINA QUINTERO Y RUBIO, 16, also of Los Alamos, and daughter of the Pobladores Luis Quintero and María Petra Rúbio. She died at Santa Barbara on October 28, 1798. No children came with them. First child, Joseph Leon was born at el Parage de Agua Mansa on the way to found the San Buenaventura Mission, and was the first child buried at San Buenaventura.

(7) JOSEF POLANCO, 28, native of Cocula, near Guadalajara, Jalisco, and his wife, MARIA MORBERTA DE LEON, 28, native of Rosario, where he enlisted. No children. He became Alcalde of Los Angeles 1812, and was grantee of Rancho El Conejo, in 1803.

(8) JOSEF JULIAN GUERRERO, native of el Pueblo del Nombre de Dios, and his wife, RITA GERTRUDIS SANCHEZ, native of Rosario where he enlisted. He died at San Gabriel, May 9, 1784. No children. Wife died San Diego 22 Nov. 1785.

(9) EUGENIO VALDEZ, 26, native of Los Alamos, where he enlisted, and his wife, FABIANA SEBASTIANA QUINTERO Y RUBIO, 15, also of Los Alamos, and daughter of the pobladores, Luis Quintero and Maria Petra Rúbio. No children came with them.

(10) MANUEL YGNACIO LUGO, 20, native of La Villa de Sinaloa, and his wife, GERTRUDIS LIMON Y SANCHEZ, 30, born at same place, where he enlisted. Manuel was a younger brother of Francisco Salvador Lugo, who came with his family to California in 1774, and was founder of the older branch of that name. They brought one child:

JOSEF MIGUEL, 2, who married María Isabel Fernandez, daughter of Rosalino Fernandez and María Josefa Quintero, of the same Expedition, on February 4, 1799, at Santa Barbara Mission.

(11) ILDEFONSO DOMINGUEZ, native of the Villa de Sinaloa, widower of MARIA YGNACIA GERMAN, of same place. Brought 2 children:

JOSEF MARIA, 16, born at Sinaloa, and married María Marcelina Félix, daughter of Victorino Félix y María Micaela Landera, at Santa Barbara.

MARIA LUISA DEL CARMEN, 14, of Sinaloa, who married Juan Francisco Reyes y Diaz, *soldado de cuera* of Monterey, and soldier of Portolá's expedition, 1769, on Jan. 1, 1782, at San Gabriel Mission.

(12) FELIPE GONZALES, 48, native of Villa de Sinaloa,

and his wife, MARIA FELIPA DE LA CRUZ, native of Nayarit, 38. Enlisted at Sinaloa. One child:

TOMAS, 15, who married María Perseverancia Cortes y Ramirez, daughter of Josef Xavier Cortes and María Nicolasa Ramirez of the said Expedition, on October 13, 1787, at Santa Barbara Mission.

(13) JOSEF MANUEL VALENZUELA, 36, native of Villa de Sinaloa, and his wife MARIA CONCEPCION HIGUERA Y ARMENTA, 20, native of same place, where he enlisted. She died at Santa Barbara July 14, 1799. No children. He married later María Josefa Alvarez, widow of Juan Esteban Rosas, on April 27, 1801, at San Gabriel Mission.

(14) ISIDRO GERMAN, 26, native of Villa de Sinaloa, and his wife, MARIA MANUELA DE OCHOA, 17, of the same place, where he enlisted. No children.

(15) JUAN JOSEF VILLALOBO, 40, native of Villa de Sinaloa, and his wife, MARIA NICOLASA BELTRAN, 35, native of San Miguel de Orcasitas, Sonora. Five children:

MARIA FRANCISCO MAURICIA, 9, native of Sinaloa, who married Josef Bartolo Tapia y Hernandez, son of Felipe Santiago Tapia and María Filomena Hernandez, of the Anza Expedition of 1776, on November 24, 1785, at San Buenaventura Mission.

JUANA JOSEFA, 7, who married Doroteo Feliz y Pinuelas, of the Anza Expedition.

MARIA RITA, 5, who married Josef Maria Monroy y García, on March 7, 1791, at San Gabriel Mission.

MARIA ANTONIA, 3, who married Josef Jacobo Velarde y Contreras, on May 20, 1792, at San Diego Mission.

JOSEF PEDRO, 1,

(16) FRANCISCO XAVIER SEPULVEDA, 39, native of Villa de Sinaloa, and his wife MARIA CANDELARIA DE REDONDO, 35, of the same place, where he enlisted. Six children:

JUAN JOSEF, 17, native of Sinaloa, who married Tomasa Gutierrez y Arballo, on January 10, 1786, at San Juan Capistrano Mission. Tomasa came in the Anza Expedition, with her widowed mother, María Feliciano Arballo, and died soon after 1800. Juan Josef then married Mariana Diaz Lorenzana, on May 20, 1804, at San Diego Mission. He was the ancestor of the older or "Palos Verdes" branch of that family. He died at San Gabriel October 16, 1808.

THERESA, 9, who married Juan de Dios Ballesteros y Cosio, on February 10, 1787, at San Juan Capistrano Mission. They were the founders of the Ballesteros family.

RAFAEL, 15, settler of Los Angeles in 1789.

SEBASTIAN, 13, who married María Luisa Botiller y Cota, on January 31, 1799, at San Gabriel Mission. They moved to San José de Guadalupe, where most of their children were born. She married later, as a widow, Josef Cornélio Rosales, at Santa Clara Mission, on July 27, 1814.

MANUEL, 11, who married María Apolónia Cota y Lugo at Santa Barbara Mission, 17 January, 1796.

FRANCISCO, 6, who married María Ramona Serrano y Silvas, on October 19, 1802, at San Diego Mission. They founded the San Vicente y Santa Monica branch of the Sepúlveda family.

(17) JUAN MARIA ROMERO, 30, native of Loreto, and his wife MARIA LUGARDA SALGADO, 20, of same place. Two children:

MARIA JOSEFA, 4,

JOSEF ANTONIO, child in arms, born at the Presidio of Loreto while the Expedition was on its way to California. He married María Dorotea Alanís y Miranda, daughter of Máximo Alanís y Juana Miranda, of the expedition, on August 4, 1801, San Gabriel.

#### OFFICERS AND SOLDIERS WHO ACCOMPANIED RIVERA, AND ARRIVED AT SAN GABRIEL JULY 14, 1781

(1) JOSEF DARIO ARGUELLO, 28, native of Querétaro, and his wife, MARIA YGNACIA MORAGA, native of the Presidio of Altar, Sonora. She was a niece of Lieutenant Josef Joaquín Moraga, the founder of San Francisco who came with Anza in 1776.

Don Josef enlisted in the Mexico regiment of Dragoons in 1773, joined the Presidial Company of Altar, where he served as private for 6 years, sergeant for 2 years and a half, until he was commissioned Alferez of the company just organized by Rivera for the proposed Presidio of Santa Barbara in 1781. He accompanied Rivera on the march overland, left him on the Colorado, and with Lieutenant Diego Gonzales and the company of soldiers and families, arrived at San Gabriel on July 14, 1781. He remained at San Gabriel until the expedition left to found the Santa Barbara Presidio on March 26, 1782. He went south to San Diego, with the soldiers of the new company destined for the San Diego Presidio, where he witnessed their enlistment.

His first public task of importance was as *comisionado* appointed by Governor Fages to distribute Pueblo lands to the settlers of Los Angeles in August of 1786.<sup>1</sup> The following year he

<sup>1</sup> See p. 150 this volume.



was promoted to Lieutenant of the San Francisco company in February, and took that office in June. He served as Comandante of San Francisco until 1791, and again from April 1796 until July 1806, having occupied that same post at Monterey from 1791-96. In October of 1791 he was present at the dedication of Soledad Mission. He was promoted brevet Captain in October of 1797, commission received February of the following year. He was made Captain of the Santa Barbara company on March 22, 1807, by the King, in consideration of his merits and services.

Arguello was as prominent and important a man as California could boast of in the years of his busy life. On the death of Governor Arrillaga in July 1814, he became acting Governor, being the ranking officer in California. He still remained at Santa Barbara however as Comandante and did not move to Monterey. It was no doubt a matter of great disappointment to Arguello and his friends that he was not made Governor. Instead he was commissioned on December 31, 1814, to govern the barren peninsula of Lower California.

Arguello's children were born in California. The oldest, JOSEF YGNACIO MAXIMO, baptized at San Gabriel June 8, 1782, became the first native Californian to enter the priesthood. He was educated in Mexico, visited California in 1809, when he served at the dedication of the San Buenaventura Mission on September 9th, also saying a mass at San Gabriel.

LUIS ANTONIO the second son became Governor of California. He was born at San Francisco June 21, 1784.

SANTIAGO and GERVASIO became equally prominent, and left many children to carry on the glorious name, allied with many others of prominence, both native Californian and American.

MARIA DE LA CONCEPCION MARCELA, is widely known for her romance with the Russian, Rezanof.

MARIA ISABEL married Josef Mariano Estrada.

Don Josef Arguello passed the last years of his eventful life at Guadalajara, where he resided with his wife, and died early in 1828. His wife was also buried there.

(2) DIEGO GONZALES, Lieutenant of the expedition, and native of Spain. He was in command of the Monterey Presidio from 1781 to 1785, when he was transferred to the San Francisco Company. He brought no family with him, and was sent to the frontier late in 1787. After 1793 he disappears from the rolls, with a record hardly equal to the rank he held.

(3) JUAN YGNACIO VALENCIA, 46, native of el Real Presidio de Santa Rosa de Corodeguachí, alias Fronteras, Sonora, and his wife, MARIA RITA ZAMORA Y GONZALES, 32, na-

tive of la Villa de Sinaloa. She was the widow of Andrés Bermudez, native of the Presidio of Santa Cruz de Sonora, situated between the Presidios of Tubac and Terrenate, on the frontier. Three children came with them:

JOSEF DE LA CRUZ BERMUDEZ, 13, native of the Presidio of Santa Cruz, married María Estéfana Villa y Martinez, on February 5, 1796 at San Gabriel Mission. Later a widower, he married María Armenta, daughter of Joaquín Armenta and Hilária Avila y Urquidez, on August 12, 1823, also at San Gabriel.

JUAN HILARIO BERMUDEZ, 11, native of Presidio of Santa Cruz, married Ana María Lugo, daughter of Manuel Ygnacio Lugo and Gertrudis Sanchez, of the same expedition, on January 27, 1799 at Santa Barbara.

MARIA FRANCISCA VALENCIA, 7, native of Sinaloa, married Miguel Leyba y Salazar, April 30, 1797, Santa Barbara.

(4) JOSEF MANUEL ORCHAGA Y MACHADO, 25, native of El Real de Los Alamos, Sonora, where he enlisted, and his wife, MARIA DEL CARMEN VALENZUELA, 17, also from Los Alamos. She was a sister of Pedro Gabriel and Josef Segundo Valenzuela, soldiers of the same expedition. No children came with them, but 8 were born in California, all reaching majority age married into the following families: Valdez, Poyorena, Aguilar, Reyes, Buelna, Sepúlveda, Palomares, Cota, and Avila. The name as it appears in the early Presidio rosters and even down to 1850, when the first Government Census was taken, was Orchaga. Later it appears exclusively as Machado. This family was grantee of the Ranchos La Ballona and Aguaje del Centinela.

(5) JUAN JOSEF VILLA, 38, native of the Presidio of San Miguel de Orcasitas, whence started Anza and his followers in 1775, and his wife, MARIA PAULA MARTINEZ, 30, born at el Real de Santa Ana, Sonora. Two children came with them:

VICENTE FERRER, born at the Presidio of Tubac in 1775, and married at San Gabriel, María Josefa Sinoba y Bojorquez, daughter of the retired soldier of 1769 and poblador of Los Angeles, Josef Francisco Sinoba, in February 5, 1796. As a widower he later married María Rita Valdez, daughter of Eugénio Valdez and Sebastiana Quintero of said expedition, on February 16, 1808, also at San Gabriel. María Rita Valdez de Villa was claimant of Rancho Rodeo de las Aguas, site of present Beverly Hills.

JOSEF MARIA VILLA, adopted son (?).

Eight other children were born in California, marrying into the Bermudez, Aguilar, Cota, Dominguez, Soto and García families.

(6) JUAN ANDRES HILARIO MONTIEL, 35, native of Los Alamos, Sonora, where he enlisted and his wife, MARIA ROSA

RODRIGUEZ, 38, of the same place. Their daughter MARIA PETRA, 17, was already married to Josef Tadeo Sanchez a soldier of the same expedition. Their other child was:

MARIA CONCEPCION, 14, born at the Presidio of Buena-vista, Sonora, and married Corporal Alejo de la Cruz Sotomayor, of the Santa Barbara company, on August 30, 1782, at San Buenaventura Mission. This was the first marriage of "gente de razon" at said place.

(7) JOSEF TADEO SANCHEZ, 25, native of Los Alamos, and his young wife, MARIA PETRA MONTIEL Y RODRIGUEZ, 17, *supra*. They brought no children with them, but 8 were born here. This generation married into the Higuera, Guevara, Arrellanes, Ortega and Lopez families.

(8) JOSEF ANTONIO BASILIO PARRA, 25, native of Amatlán de las Canas, Sinaloa, and his wife, MARIA ISABEL TALAMANTES, 21, native of Rosario where he enlisted. Parra joined the Santa Barbara company, died soon afterwards and his widow married Toribio Martínez y Guzmán, a soldier of Monterey, at San Buenaventura on September 8, 1784. There were no children.

(9) JOSEF XAVIER CORTES, native of Culiacán, where he evidently died, for although his name appears on the list of recruits made by Ortega at San Gabriel, October 24, 1781, his widow MARIA NICOLASA RAMIREZ, native of el Real de Palo Blanco, near Culiacán, married Guillermo Soto a soldier of the same expedition, at San Gabriel on July 21, 1781. He does not appear on the list of soldiers killed with Rivera on the Colorado, under the above date, and disappears from the Santa Barbara Presidio rolls after July 1, 1782. There were 4 children:

MARIA PERSEVERANCIA, who married first, Tomás Gonzales y Leon, at Santa Barbara October 13, 1787, and second, Luis Gonzaga Lugo, a veteran of 1769, on May 27, 1792, at same place.

MARIA ISABEL RAMONA, 6, who married Josef Antonio Vasquez, *soldado de cuera* of Santa Barbara, May 25, 1789.

NICOLAS FELIPE, 14, native of Culiacán, who married María de Jesus Lara, daughter of the pobladores Josef Lara and María Antonia Campos, at Santa Barbara, May 19, 1792.

MARIA PAULA SEGUNDA, 12, who married Luis Peña, *soldado de cuera*, Santa Barbara, on February 3, 1785, at San Buenaventura.

(10) GUILLERMO SOTO Y LEON, 30, native of el Real de Cozala, Sonora, single. He married at San Gabriel, María Nicolasa Ramirez, widow of Josef Jávier Córtes, *supra*, on July 27, 1781. She died at San Buenaventura, where her husband was soldier of the guard, on January 26, 1786. Soto later married Juana María

Pérez Nieto y Armenta, on November 17, 1787, at San Gabriel. Soto joined the Presidio of Santa Barbara, being a guard at San Buenaventura Mission, then a settler of Los Angeles in 1789, where he became alcalde in 1798 and 1809. One of his daughters, Casilda, was grantee of La Merced Rancho in 1844, and another (María Trinidad) married Ricardo Vejar. His son Josef María became a settler of Los Angeles in 1815.

(11) AGUSTIN DE LEYBA, 41, native of el Pueblo de Tepic, and his wife, MARIA GUADALUPE SALAZAR Y VELARDE, 38, native of San Xavier de Cabazán, Sinaloa. He enlisted at Cozala, where the following children were born:

ROQUE ANASTACIO, 7, who married María de la Ascención Rosas, daughter of the pobladores Alejandro Rosas and Rosa Rodríguez, on January 28, 1799 at San Gabriel.

JOSEF MIGUEL, 5, married María Francisco Valencia, April 30, 1797, Santa Barbara.

JOSEF RUFINO, 2, who married María Francisca Garcia Feb. 19, 1796, Santa Barbara.

JUAN JOSEPH, 9, married Juana Simona Rodríguez 3 May, 1791, Santa Barbara.

(12) JUAN VICTORINO FELIZ, and his wife MARIA MICAELA LANDERA, natives of el Real de Cozala, Sinaloa. He died at Santa Barbara where he was soldier, on July 4, 1783. The children were:

JUANA MARIA, 9, who married Josef Calixto Ayala, native of Cozala, on December 3, 1786. This was the first marriage of *Gente de Razon* to take place in the newly established Mission of Santa Barbara.

JUAN MANUEL SALVADOR, 6,

MARIA MARCELA, 10, who married Josef María Dominguez, at Santa Barbara.

JOSEF YGNACIO, 1, married María Antonia Villa y Martinez, 27 Aug., 1798, Santa Barbara.

(13) JOSEF MIGUEL ESPINOSA, native of Rosario, where he enlisted, single. He married at Santa Clara Mission, Gabriela María Higuera, May 20, 1795. He joined the Monterey Company.

(14) GASPAR LOPEZ, native of el Pueblo de Zabala, in the Archbishopric of Durango, and his wife, MARIA GERTRUDIS GARCIA, native of la Villa de San Sebastian, in the same Archbishopric. Lopez joined the San Diego Company and died there March 2, 1782. A son Josef María Ramon was baptized at San Gabriel September 8, 1781, and became a settler of Los Angeles in



1815. He was the first child of the soldiers of 1781 Expedition to be baptised at San Gabriel.

(15) JOSEF ESTEBAN ROMERO, 30, native of el Real de San Antonio de la Huerta, Sonora, and his wife JUANA GERTRUDIS DELGADO, 23, of same place. Romero joined the Santa Barbara Company. Their child was:

JOSEF GERARDO.

MARIA JOSEFA RODRIGUEZ, daughter of Juan Rodríguez and María Antonia Delgado, deceased, came with them.

(16) JOSEF DEL CARMEN ARAÑA, 23, native of Cozalá, and his wife MARIA MANUELA GUEVARA, 23, of same place. No children came with them and no record of any born in California.

(17) FRANCISCO XAVIER CALBO, 27, native of Cozala, and his wife, MARIA INEZ CAMPOS, 20, also of Cozala. She died at Santa Barbara where her husband was a soldier, August 1, 1783. No children.

(18) FRANCISCO JUAREZ, and his wife TRINIDAD VICENTA DE LEON, natives of Cozala. He died at San Gabriel, March 1, 1782, where the only child, Josef Joaquín, was baptised July 28, 1782. His widow then married Josef Antonio Rodríguez, *soldado de cuera*, at San Gabriel on August 11, 1782, and moved to Monterey.

(19) FRANCISCO XAVIER MEJIAS, and his wife FRANCISCA XAVIER DE ORTEGA, natives of Villa de Sinaloa. To him was entrusted the Indian girl of four, native of the Gila River, as the expedition was leaving the Colorado foundations for California. Her pagan parents probably feared the Yuma massacre, which took place four days before she was baptised at San Gabriel on July 21, 1781. Two adult sons were members of the expedition and came as soldiers, a daughter accompanied her soldier husband also.

MARIA PETRA, 20, who married Ramón Buelna, *soldado de cuera*, San Diego on May 11, 1783, at San Diego.

(20) PEDRO JOSEF MEJIAS, 22, and his wife ANA MARIA ORTEGA, natives of the Villa de Sinaloa, where he enlisted. No children came with them. He joined the San Diego Company.

(21) JUAN NORBERTO MEJIAS, 17, single, native of Villa de Sinaloa, joined the Monterey Company, and was married at San Antonio Mission, to Vividiana Sobredia, *viuda* de Francisco Villagomez, in September of 1784.

JUAN URBANO, 4, confirmed, Santa Barbara, 23 Nov., 1783.

(22) JOSEF MARIA MARTINEZ, single, native of Topago, joined the Monterey Company and married María Josefa Garcia, at Santa Clara Mission, February 7, 1785.

(23) RAMON YBARRA, 18, native of San Antonio Guernay, joined the Monterey Company, and left no family.

(24) JOSEF MARIA GIL SAMANIEGO, 41, and his wife JUANA MARIA DE SOTOMAYOR, 25, natives of Los Alamos, where he enlisted. No children.

(25) JOSEF YGNACIO RODRIGUEZ, 21, native of Matape, Sonora and his wife JUANA PAULA PARRA, 16, native of Los Alamos where he enlisted. One child came with them:

FRANCISCO XAVIER, born at Los Alamos. There were 12 other children born at Santa Barbara, where their father was a soldier. They married into the Dominguez, Arrellanes, Ruiz, Leyba, Ortega, and Rosas families.

(26) VICENTE QUIJADA, 26, and his wife JUANA MARIA ARMENTA Y LANDERA, 26, both natives of Los Alamos. She died at Santa Barbara July 27, 1783. They brought with them:

MARIA ROSA, who married Bernardo Ramirez, native of Tepic, at Santa Barbara.

MARIA GERTRUDIS VALENZUELA, daughter of Francisco and María Rita Quijada, of Los Alamos, came with them. She married at San Gabriel on *August 28, 1781*, Anastácio Félix y Castro, *soldado de cuera*, Santa Barbara.

(27) JOSEF ROSALINO FERNANDEZ, 24, and his wife MARIA JOSEFA QUINTERO, 18, natives of el Fuerte, Sinaloa. Only one child came with them:

MARIA LUCIA, 1. There were 8 other children born in California. Fernandez joined the Santa Barbara Company. María Lucia married Joseph Pablo Olivas, 7 Jan., 1800, Santa Barbara.

(28) EFIGENIO RUIZ, 36, and his wife MARIA ROSA LOPEZ Y SANCHEZ, 28, natives of el Fuerte. He died at Santa Barbara June 13, 1795. Children were:

MARIA URSULA, 10, who married Eugénio Rosalio Villavicencio, *soldado de cuera*, of Monterey at San Buenaventura Mission, July 19, 1786.

JOSEF PEDRO, 7, who married María Ygnácia Lugo y Vianazul, at Santa Barbara on October 7, 1798.

JOSEF HILARIO, 1, who married Júlia Sinoba y Bojorquez.

(29) JOSEF ANTONIO MARIA VELARDE, 40, born on the Piaxtla River, Sinaloa, and his wife MARIA JULIANA QUIJADA, 45, native of Los Alamos, and sister of Vicente Quijada supra. No children.

(30) JUAN YGNACIO MARTINEZ, and his wife MARIA JACINTA MORENO, natives of Los Alamos. He joined the Santa Barbara Company. Their children were:

JUAN JOSEF,

FRANCISCO DIEGO VICENTE,

JUAN JOSEF,

(31) FRUCTUOSO MARIA RUIZ, 21, and his wife MARIA ISABEL ARMENTA Y ACOSTA, 14, both natives of el Fuerte, where he enlisted. No children. She died at Santa Barbara, where her husband was a *soldado de cuera* on June 25, 1792. Ruiz later married Maria Dolores Lugo y Sanchez, at Santa Barbara, on October 9, 1795.

(32) JOSEF MELESIO VALDEZ, 21, and his wife ANA MARIA ALCALA, 18, of el Fuerte. No children.

(33) JOSEF PEDRO LORETO SALAZAR, 45, and his wife MARIA LORETA GREGORIA ESPINOSA, 24, natives of Los Alamos. No children. Salazar died at San Gabriel on July 6, 1788, and his widow then married Sargento Mariano de la Luz Verdugo, on November 26th of the same year. Verdugo had been a soldier of the Portolá expedition of 1769; sergeant at Monterey 1781-7; settled at Los Angeles 1787, being *alcalde* in 1790-3 and 1802. He was grantee of the Portezuelo Rancho in 1795.

(34) JOSEF VICTOR PATIÑO, 31, and his wife MARIA VICTORIA MARTINEZ, 24, of Los Alamos, where he enlisted. No children. He died at Santa Barbara May 22, 1789.

(35) FRANCISCO ONTIVEROS, native of Chametla, in the Jurisdiction of Rosario, where he enlisted. He appears on the list of the Garrison for the Santa Barbara Presidio for October 30, 1781, but does not appear on the list for July 1, 1782. His name then disappears entirely from the records. He was single, and left no family.

(36) SEGUNDO VALENZUELA, and his wife MARIA AGUSTINA ALCANTARA, natives of el Real de Los Alamos. There were 3 children:

JOAQUIN, 10, who died at San Diego, where his father was a soldier, on October 5, 1782.

JOSEF MARIA, 5, also died at San Diego November 10, 1782.

MARIA ANTONIA, 2, who married Juan Josef Alvarado y Castro, a soldier of the Presidio on May 13, 1792. Six others were born in California and married into the Garcia, Soto, and Rodríguez families.

(37) PEDRO GABRIEL VALENZUELA, 23, native of Los Alamos, and his wife MARIA DOLORES PARRA, 20, also of Ala-

mos. They brought no children, but 12 were born here, uniting by marriage with the Varelas, Félix, Rodríguez and Ybarra families.

(38) YGNACIO ROCHIN, 28, native of Los Alamos, and his wife ANA BOJORQUEZ, 30, also of Alamos. He joined the Santa Barbara Company and in 1790 was mayordomo of the San Juan Capistrano Mission. Children:

MARIA DEL CARMEN, 2, who married Josef Clemente Navarro, son of the pobladores Josef Antonio Navarro y María Regina de Soto, on May 15, 1791, at San Gabriel.

(39) JOSEF PRUDENCIO ARANGURE, is named as a recruit, and on the Santa Barbara Presidio rolls for October 24th and 30th, 1781. But his name as well as those of Francisco Ontiveros, Francisco Juarez and Josef Jávier Cortes, disappear from the rolls by July 1, 1782. I have no further record of Arangure and Ontiveros. Cortes and Juarez, were on the death list as shown above.

From a list of recruits drawn up by Lieut. Ortega at San Gabriel on October 24, 1781, we find the names of 5 soldiers of the expedition who were killed on the Colorado with Rivera as follows:

FRANCISCO CASTRO,

ANTONIO PARDO,

MANUEL DIAZ,

JOSEF QUIJAS,

ASCENCIO ALVAREZ, whose wife was Micáela Uribes, and whose son Buenaventura seems to have come in the expedition, joined the Santa Barbara Company and married Juana Valenzuela, at San Gabriel on September 6, 1807.

On the same list, we find that on that date, Prudencio Lopez, Ygnacio Rochin and Isidro German had deserted after reaching California. They returned however and we find them at Santa Barbara Presidio by the following year.



## **PART II**

### **DOCUMENTS PERTAINING TO THE FOUNDING OF LOS ANGELES**





Map prepared through courtesy of Phil Townsend Hanna and "Touring Topics"





## DOCUMENTS PERTAINING TO THE FOUNDING OF LOS ANGELES



DEDICATING this volume to Los Angeles' 150th anniversary, its editors have endeavored to bring together herein all documents at present available pertaining to the founding of that city.

To justly evaluate them, one should bear in mind something of the picturesque history of Spanish-Californian documents in general. A vast amount of records had accumulated in the Province during Spanish and Mexican rule. Following secularization of the Missions, then the American occupation, many of them were lost, destroyed or scattered, some were returned to Mexico, but even so, a large quantity still remained.

In 1851 territorial records of the pre-American period were collected from all municipal governments and assembled in the office of the United States Surveyor-General at San Francisco. Thus were brought together original documents of every description dating from before the establishment of the first mission down to 1847. "All these . . . were bound by the American authorities, but with almost no attempt at chronological or other arrangement . . . [into] between four and five hundred bulky volumes averaging more than 1,000 pages each. . . . Stacked in a dim room in the Surveyor-General's office, . . . they remained for a quarter of a century without any serious attempt being made to reduce the chaotic mass to order.

"Then, in 1876, Hubert Howe Bancroft rented a room adjacent to the Surveyor-General's office, installed desks, etc., hired fifteen Spanish translators and, after a solid year of work and the expenditure of \$18,000 succeeded in making an orderly transcript of the records. . . . The importance of Bancroft's abridgement of the archives was not fully recognized until a generation later when the fire of 1906 destroyed the original collection."

The Bancroft transcriptions referring to the founding of Los Angeles printed herein, are from photostats supplied by

the Bancroft Library at Berkeley. Apparently lost from that collection is the transcript of Felipe de Neve's Order for the founding of the Pueblo de Los Angeles, written at Mission San Gabriel, August 26, 1781, and which definitely assigned the date September 4 for the founding.

The original of this document was among those held in the Surveyor-General's office. A certified traced copy of it was secured by the writers of the Centennial History of Los Angeles, in 1876, but has disappeared long since. Before that a similar copy of a portion of the document was introduced as evidence in Los Angeles District Court Case No. 1344, filed March 11, 1869.

As the first collection of decrees and ordinances prepared for the government of Alta California, the "Reglamento para el Gobierno de la Provincia de Californias" drafted by Felipe de Neve, June 1, 1779, at the Presidio of San Carlos de Monterey is among the most important of California documents. When completed by Neve it was forwarded to Madrid, received the King's approval in 1781, and was returned to Mexico where it was printed in 1784. Less than half a dozen copies are known to be extant in California.

Without doubt future researches in the archives of Mexico and Spain will throw further light on the founding of Los Angeles. Last year Mr. Vernon D. Tate was commissioned jointly by the Historical Society of Southern California and the Automobile Club of Southern California to secure transcripts of documents bearing on this subject in the Archivo General de Mexico.

As a result of this effort the original *Instruccion* to Rivera for the recruit of pobladores and soldiers of the Expedition of 1781, correspondence pertaining to this document and to the *Reglamento*; and the manuscript accounts of supplies issued to the pobladores, were brought to light and are here printed for the first time.

## SUPPLIES FOR THE POBLADORES

Translations by  
THOMAS WORKMAN TEMPLE II

CARRYING out his instructions, Captain Fernando de Rivera y Moncada apparently kept a careful record of moneys expended and supplies purchased for the settlers from the time they started out on the long journey to Los Angeles. Then his memoranda perished with him on the banks of the Colorado, strewn on the sands or cast into some fire out of the pockets of the uniform in which his Yuma slayer strutted—*quien sabe?*

It remained for Alferez José de Zúñiga to replace Rivera's memoranda with the following documents, compiled from memory and with aid of the notebook kept by Alferez Don Manuel Ruiz, sworn to by the *pobladores* and marked with the "visto bueno" or "O. K." of Felipe de Neve.

So picturesque and packed with human interest are these unadorned bookkeeping records that they provide an absorbing revelation of the conditions under which the *pobladores* made ready to come to Los Angeles, the kind of people they were, and the customs of their day.

It will be noted that the statements are prefaced with the explanation "copy of his account starting June 4, 1780, taken from his memorandum book," referring to the notes of Alferez Ruiz; and that a little below appears the record of purchasing the "libreta" itself, under "June 4 — 2 pesos worth of rations and 6 reales for memo book."

The entries which follow after are veritable little vignettes of the *pobladores*, which show their tastes and inclinations, and even tell of incidents in their lives, as in the case of Alejandro Rosas (Account No. 74), who "in the first place admits having taken as a first entry in the Villa de Sinaloa, 25 pesos for the expenses of his marriage." Account No. 72, with the entry "12 reales expenses as *padrino* at wedding ceremony," indicates that Antonio Villavicencio must have stood sponsor on this occasion, which was perhaps the first event to give the newly-assembled *pobladores* a sense of the bonds of fellowship which would draw them closer and closer into a community as they traveled to the frontier of empire.

It will also be noted in the record that this Villavicencio was a Spaniard, and judging by the quality of his purchases, a man of somewhat cultivated tastes.

These documents were brought to light in the Archivo General de Mexico during 1931 by Mr. Vernon D. Tate, and are here published for the first time. Obviously since they number 71 to 75, they constitute only a portion of a series of which the remaining items are yet to be found. Doubtless the memoranda of supplies issued to the *pobladores* were combined with those made up for the recruits, and mentioned by Neve in a letter of October 28 (see p. 144, this volume) as being sent in place of those compiled by Rivera and lost.

In these translations the Society is indebted to Mr. Temple for an unusually painstaking task, as the problem was one not only of translating numerous obscure and obsolete words written with a maze of abbreviations, but also of first transcribing the Spanish from photographs of minute and perplexing manuscript. [Editors.]

#### No. 71\*

**A**NTONIO MESA, negro, 38, native of El Real de los Alamos, married, his wife is Anna Gertrudis Lopez, native of said Real, mulata, 27. Two children, Antonio María, 8, and María Pascuala, 10. He enlisted as a settler for the New Establishments of Monterey, at La Villa de Sinaloa, on June 4, 1780, and is a resident of the City of the Queen of the Angels.

In the first place, he received at the hands of Captain Don Fernando de Rivera, the following on account.

	Ps.	DEBIT Rls.	Grs.
1 saddle with its tree and bows, from the House of Don Prudencio worth 13 pesos, 4 reales . . . .	013	4	..
1 pair of <i>Armas de montar</i> at 20 reales <sup>1</sup> . . . . .	002	4	..
1 set of tools for the saddle, at 12 reales . . . . .	001	4	..
2 bridles and a pair of spurs, at 9 reales each. . .	003	3	..
2 pair of reins and a halter, worth 10 reales. . .	001	2	..
2 Cruppers, at 3 reales . . . . .	000	6	..
1 leather water bag . . . . .	001	..	..
3 pesos for a pair of riding boots . . . . .	003	..	..
2 hats at 18 reales . . . . .	004	4	..

<sup>1</sup> Leather "aprons" or chaps (chaparejos) for riding.

\*Archivo General de la Nacion Provincias Internas Tom. 199.



	Ps.	DEBIT Ris.	Grs.
1¼ varas of coarse linen wrapping for portman- teaus, at 6 reales .....	000	7	6
1¼ varas of Rouen linen cloth, at 6 reales .....	000	7	6
2 pair of women's shoes and a pair of men's shoes, worth .....	001	6	--
1 bed blanket from the House of Cornes, at 4 pesos, 4 reales .....	004	4	--
1 reel of thread for sewing .....	000	1	--
94 daily rations at 2 reales each, from November 1, 1780, until February 2, 1781, when he left completely outfitted from Alamos .....	023	4	--
Copy of his account starting June 4, 1780, taken from his memorandum book, in Alferez Don Manuel Ruiz' hand.			
June 4th, 2 pesos worth of rations and 6 reales for memo book .....	002	6	--
June 5th, 3 pesos for a silk handkerchief ....	003	--	--
" 13th, 2 pesos worth of rations .....	002	--	--
" 14th, for provisions and rations on the march to Los Alamos .....	003	6	--
" 29th, he charged 3 pesos for supplies.....	003	--	--
Item, 10 reales for freight or baggage to el Fuerte	001	2	--
July 8th, 12 reales for fresh meat .....	001	4	--
" 9th, 1½ Almudes of corn at 6 reales....	001	1	--
" " 2 almudes of beans at 3 reales.....	000	3	--
" 15th, 2 almudes of corn worth .....	000	3	--
" " 2 almudes of the same .....	001	4	--
" " 2 reales for cigars .....	000	2	--
" 22nd, 1 almud of corn at 6 reales .....	000	6	--
" " 1 almud of beans at same price .....	000	6	--
" " 2 reales of soap .....	000	2	--
" 24th, 4 reales for medicine .....	000	4	--
" 28th, ½ almud of corn* .....	000	3	--
" 29th, 2 almudes of corn .....	001	4	--
" " 2 reales worth of soap .....	000	2	--
August 5th 2 almudes of corn and beans at 6 reales each .....	001	4	--
August 5th, 1 pair of women's shoes at 6 reales and 2 reales of soap .....	001	--	--
August 5th, 12 reales worth of provisions ....	001	4	--
" 9th, ½ almud of Beans at 3 reales.....	000	3	--
" 12th, 1 almud of beans and 2 reales in silver	001	--	--
" " 6 reales in silver for corn .....	000	6	--
" 17th, 1 almud of corn and beans .....	000	6	--

\*Almud—a dry measure, about 8/10 of a litre.

	Ps.	DEBIT Ris.	Grs.
" 19th, 2 almudes of corn and 2 reales worth of soap .....	001	6	--
" 22nd, ½ almud of corn .....	000	3	--
" " 1 almud of corn at 6 reales .....	000	6	--
" 27th, 2 almudes of corn and beans .....	000	6	--
" " 2 reales in silver .....	000	2	--
September 2nd, 2 almudes of corn and beans, at 6 reales .....	001	4	--
September 2nd, 2 reales in silver .....	000	2	--
" 9th, 2 almudes of corn and beans, and 2 reales in silver .....	001	6	--
" 16th, 14 reales in silver for rations ....	001	6	--
" 23rd, 14 reales in silver for rations....	001	6	--
" 30th, 14 reales in silver for rations ....	001	6	--
October 7th, 14 reales in silver for rations ....	001	6	--
" 14th, 14 reales in silver for rations ....	001	6	--
" 18th, he charged 42 pesos, value of effects supplied in clothing as found in detail in memo book .....	042	--	--
On same day he charged 48 pesos, 4 reales, 8 grs. value of items furnished his wife as per memorandum .....	048	4	8
October 21st, he charged 20 reales worth of rations until the end of said month .....	002	4	--
October 24th, 1 pair of Cordovan shoes, worth 6 reales .....	000	6	--
Having read his account in full, and hav- ing received all items as found therein, he made his mark. Alferez Josef Argüello signed for him.			
To Credit Don Fernando Rivera.....	231	3	3
To this amount should be credited the daily rations in his favor from June 4, 1780 when he en- listed as a settler, until February 2, 1781 when he left Alamos completely outfitted, in the value of .....	061	--	--
Also he is credited with 10 reales, value of trans- portation at his expense from la Villa del Fuerte to los Alamos .....	001	2	--
	062	2	--
Total sum charged against the settler...	169	1	3

This agrees with the account rendered this individual, and his declarations, and the investigations made, by reason of the originals,

which were in the hands of Captain Fernando Rivera y Moncada, having been lost at the time of his death on the Colorado River.

San Gabriel Mission, September 18, 1781.

O. K.

Neve

(Rubric)

José de Zúñiga.

(Rubric)

## No. 72

**A**NTONIO VILLAVICENCIO, Spaniard, 38, native of la Villa de Chihuahua, married. His wife is María de los Santos Severina, native of el Real del Rosario, Indian, 26 years of age. One daughter María Antonio Josefa, mestiza, 8. He enlisted as a settler for the New Establishments of Monterey, at la Villa de Sinaloa, on June 6, 1780, and is a resident of el Pueblo de la Reyna de los Angeles.

	Ps.	DEBIT Rls.	Grs.
In the first place he admits having received 20 pesos which he thinks were paid the late Don Miguel Aviles, a miner from Severifoa .....	020	..	..
Also he received at said Villa, 4 varas of fine Brit-tany linen at 7 reales each, for his wife's chem-ises .....	003	4	..
6½ varas of serge at 12 reales each, for skirts...	009	6	..
1½ varas of glazed linen for lining, at 2½ reales	000	3	9
1¼ [varas] of silk and 4 varas of ribbon at 1 rl. ea.	000	6	6
7 varas of Revecillo [lining] at 1 real each and 12 reales for tailoring .....	002	3	..
8 varas of domestic cotton shirting, at 4 reales...	000	4	..
13 reales expenses as <i>padrino</i> <sup>2</sup> at wedding ceremony	001	5	..
1 pair of silk stockings, worth 3 pesos, 4 reales	003	4	..
2 loads of baggage from Sinaloa to los Alamos at ½ real per league .....	005	..	..
1½ varas of Querétaro cloth for a jacket.....	003	..	..
4 varas of second grade cotton shirting for lining, 3 reales each .....	001	4	..
¼ ounce of silk, & 14 reales for tailoring.....	002	..	6
1½ dozen buttons at 3 reales a dozen.....	000	4	6
2½ varas of woolen cloth, at 2 pesos each, for breeches .....	005	..	..
¼ ounce of silk & a dozen buttons, all for 5½ reales	000	5	6
1 peso, 2 reales of tailoring & 3 varas of cotton shirting for lining, at 3 reales each.....	002	3	..

<sup>2</sup> *Padrino*—a sponsor or "God-father" for bridal couple.

	Ps.	DEBIT Rls.	Grs.
6½ varas of Querétaro cloth, at 2 pesos each for a cape .....	013	--	--
¼ of silk, and the tailoring .....	001	2	6
1½ varas of Castillian baize for linings worth 20 reales each .....	003	6	--
1 black campaign hat, worth 18 reales .....	002	2	--
16 varas of cotton shirting for two changes of clothes, at 4 reales each .....	008	--	--
½ ounce of silk, worth 5 reales .....	000	5	--
1 vara of Brittany linen for handkerchiefs, worth 6 reales .....	000	6	--
2 Puebla cotton drawers worth 5 reales .....	000	5	--
2 pairs of shoes at 5 reales each .....	001	2	--
2 pairs of hose at 4 reales each .....	001	--	--
3 pesos for a pair of boots .....	003	--	--
1½ varas of ribbon at 2 reales each .....	000	3	--
1 bolt of Brittany linen for his wife's chemises, worth 6 pesos .....	006	--	--
1 pair of blue baize skirts, of the lot which Alferez Ruiz distributed at el Real de los Alamos, worth	003	2	6
1 petticoat of Querétaro cloth, of the same lot, worth .....	007	2	6
2 linen jackets of the same lot as distributed....	002	7	--
2 pairs of hose at 4 reales a pair .....	001	--	--
3 pairs of white Puebla cotton skirts, at 15 reales a pair .....	005	6	--
2 pairs of Nimes stockings, at 14 reales each....	003	4	--
2 pairs of women's shoes at 6 reales a pair....	001	4	--
2 rebozos at 11½ reales each .....	002	7	--
1 black campaign hat, worth 18 reales.....	002	2	--
6 varas of ribbon at 1 real each .....	000	6	--
1 bed blanket, worth 4 pesos, 4 reales.....	004	4	--
4 varas of linen for shirts, at 5 reales each....	003	1	--
4 varas of domestic cotton shirting, at 4 reales each	003	--	--
1 small rebozo, worth 1 peso .....	001	--	--
1 ounce of silk, worth 10 reales .....	001	2	--
1½ varas of blue baize, at 6 reales each .....	001	1	--
1 vara of glazed linen, worth 2½ reales .....	000	2	6
2 varas of ribbon .....	000	2	--
2 varas of silk & 6 reales for tailoring the material	001	--	--
1¼ varas of blue Querétaro cloth at 2 pesos each for underskirts .....	002	4	--
2 varas of ribbon, 2 reales worth of silk & 6 reales for tailoring same .....	001	2	--



	Ps.	DEBIT Rls.	Grs.
1 small blanket, worth 9½ reales .....	001	1	..
2 pairs of shoes for the little girl, at 4 reales each	001	..	..
1 saddle from the House of Don Prudencio, at 13 pesos, 4 reales .....	013	4	..
1 pair of leather "chaps" for riding, worth 20 reales .....	002	4	..
1 set of saddle tools, worth 12 reales.....	001	4	..
1 halter worth 3 reales .....	000	3	..
2 pairs of reins, worth 3 reales each .....	000	6	..
2 bridles & a pair of spurs, at 9 reales apiece..	003	3	..
3 pesos for a saddle tree and stirrups.....	003	..	..
2 leather water bags .....	002	..	..
1¼ varas of coarse linen for wrapping .....	000	7	6
3 pairs of shoes at 5 reales a pair.....	001	7	..
1 pair of women's shoes worth 6 reales.....	000	6	..
231 daily rations at 2 reales each, from June 6, 1780 when he enlisted, to February 2, 1781, when he left el Real de los Alamos completely equipped	060	2	..
	<hr/>	<hr/>	<hr/>
	251	5	3

Having read the entries of his account to this individual, he remained satisfied that they were the same as those received, and made his mark. Alferez Don Ramon Laso signed at his request.

To credit Captain Moncada .....	251	5	3
To this sum should be credited 5 pesos, value of 2 loads of baggage, charged against his account, with which he transported himself and family from el Real de Sinaloa to los Alamos....	005	..	..
Also value of 241 daily rations furnished him from June 6, 1780 to February 2, 1781 .....	060	2	..
	<hr/>	<hr/>	<hr/>
	065	2	..
Total sum charged against this settler .....	186	3	3

This conforms with the account rendered this individual and agrees with his testimony and the investigations made by reason of the original accounts, which were in Captain Fernando Moncada's hands, having been destroyed at the time of his death on the Colorado River.

San Gabriel Mission, September 13, 1781.

O. K.

José de Zúñiga.

Neve

(Rubric)

(Rubric)

## No. 73

**J**OSEF VANEGAS, Indian, 28, native of el Real de Bolaños, married, his wife is María Máxima Aguilar, native of el Real del Rosario, Indian, 20. One son Cosmé Damién, a year and 2 months old. He enlisted as a settler for the New Establishments of Monterey, at el Real del Rosario, on August 11, 1780, and is at present a resident of the City of the Queen of the Angels.

	DEBIT		
	Ps.	Rls.	Grs.
In the first place he admits having received from Captain Don Fernando Moncada, at el Real del Rosario, 6½ varas of serge from the Store of Josef Maria Farro, at 12 reales each.....	009	..	..
1½ varas of glazed linen for lining, at 2½ reales ea.	000	3	..
4 varas of ribbon at a real each, and ½ vara of silk	000	6	6
7 varas of lining, at a real each .....	000	7	..
1 piece of common Brittany linen .....	006	..	..
1 ounce of silk, worth 10 reales .....	001	2	..
1 Rosario saddle, worth 10 pesos, 4 reales.....	010	4	..
1 pair of new saddle-bags, worth 3 pesos, 4 reales	003	4	..
1 set of saddle irons, worth 12 reales.....	001	4	..
2 bridles and a pair of spurs at 9 reales apiece	003	3	..
2½ varas of blue woolen cloth, at 20 reales each	007	4	..
3 varas of cotton shirting (second grade), at 3 reales for lining .....	001	2	..
1 quarter of silk and 10 reales for tailoring....	001	4	6
1 dozen metal buttons worth 3 reales.....	000	3	..
6 varas of Querétaro cloth, at 2 pesos each for a cape	012	..	..
1 quarter of silk, hand tailored .....	001	2	..
1½ varas of Querétaro cloth, at 2 pesos each...	003	..	..
4 varas of cotton shirting, second grade, at 3 reales each, for lining .....	001	4	..
1½ dozen buttons for the jacket, at 3 reales a dozen	000	4	6
1 quarter of silk and 14 reales for tailoring....	002	..	6
1 hat worth 18 reales .....	002	2	..
3 pair of hose at 4 reales each .....	001	4	..
16 varas of cotton shirting at 4 reales each for 2 changes of underwear .....	008	..	..
½ bolt (?) of silk worth 5 reales .....	000	5	..
1 vara of fine Brittany linen for handkerchiefs, at 1 peso .....	001	..	..
2 blankets at 2½ reales each .....	000	5	..
2 pair of men's shoes, at 5 reales each .....	001	2	..

Ala 1 Brevia. . . . . 2.1.2. 1.3

# De la Archa ..... 1, 2, 13

1. pñ. a Adrelin en oño para gamina alaming	0 00 600.0
1. var. a Naguas a Bayeta az. elan. 2. de el 4. Roy. 3. de 1. 3. de 2. 6.	
en el 2. de los Alamos en 3. de 1. 2. 3.	
1. falsellin de Paño de Querejaro delor. q. no el 1. 2. 3.	0 00 7. 2. 6.
2. Armadores a 6. de 1. 2. 3. 4. 5. 6. 7. 8. 9. 10.	0 00 2. 1. 7. 0.
2. par. a 6. de 1. 2. 3. 4. 5. 6. 7. 8. 9. 10.	0 00 2. 1. 7. 0.
3. par. a Naguas blancas Tobalar a 15. 2. 3.	0 00 3. 1. 2. 6.
2. Par. de Alamos a 6. de 1. 2. 3. 4. 5. 6. 7. 8. 9. 10.	0 00 1. 1. 2. 6.
2. Par. de Zapator p. a 6. de 1. 2. 3. 4. 5. 6. 7. 8. 9. 10.	0 00 2. 1. 7. 0.
2. Rvoro a 11. 2. 3. 4. 5. 6. 7. 8. 9. 10.	0 00 2. 1. 7. 0.
1. somb. negro a 6. de 1. 2. 3. 4. 5. 6. 7. 8. 9. 10.	0 00 0. 0. 6. 0.
6. v. de 1. 2. 3. 4. 5. 6. 7. 8. 9. 10.	0 00 0. 0. 6. 0.
1. frezada a 6. de 1. 2. 3. 4. 5. 6. 7. 8. 9. 10.	0 00 0. 0. 6. 0.
5. var. de 1. 2. 3. 4. 5. 6. 7. 8. 9. 10.	0 00 0. 0. 6. 0.
6. v. de 1. 2. 3. 4. 5. 6. 7. 8. 9. 10.	0 00 0. 0. 6. 0.
1. Par. de 1. 2. 3. 4. 5. 6. 7. 8. 9. 10.	0 00 0. 0. 6. 0.
1. Onza de 1. 2. 3. 4. 5. 6. 7. 8. 9. 10.	0 00 0. 0. 6. 0.
1 1/2 var. de 1. 2. 3. 4. 5. 6. 7. 8. 9. 10.	0 00 0. 0. 6. 0.
1. Sta. de 1. 2. 3. 4. 5. 6. 7. 8. 9. 10.	0 00 0. 0. 6. 0.
2. var. de 1. 2. 3. 4. 5. 6. 7. 8. 9. 10.	0 00 0. 0. 6. 0.
2. r. de 1. 2. 3. 4. 5. 6. 7. 8. 9. 10.	0 00 0. 0. 6. 0.
1 1/2 var. de 1. 2. 3. 4. 5. 6. 7. 8. 9. 10.	0 00 0. 0. 6. 0.
2. var. de 1. 2. 3. 4. 5. 6. 7. 8. 9. 10.	0 00 0. 0. 6. 0.
1. frezada de 1. 2. 3. 4. 5. 6. 7. 8. 9. 10.	0 00 0. 0. 6. 0.
2. Par. de 1. 2. 3. 4. 5. 6. 7. 8. 9. 10.	0 00 0. 0. 6. 0.
1. Silla de 1. 2. 3. 4. 5. 6. 7. 8. 9. 10.	0 00 0. 0. 6. 0.
1 par de 1. 2. 3. 4. 5. 6. 7. 8. 9. 10.	0 00 0. 0. 6. 0.
1. Domo de 1. 2. 3. 4. 5. 6. 7. 8. 9. 10.	0 00 0. 0. 6. 0.
1. Cavre de 1. 2. 3. 4. 5. 6. 7. 8. 9. 10.	0 00 0. 0. 6. 0.
2. Par. de 1. 2. 3. 4. 5. 6. 7. 8. 9. 10.	0 00 0. 0. 6. 0.
2. frenos y un par de 1. 2. 3. 4. 5. 6. 7. 8. 9. 10.	0 00 0. 0. 6. 0.
3. levos, para 1. 2. 3. 4. 5. 6. 7. 8. 9. 10.	0 00 0. 0. 6. 0.
2. votas p. 1. 2. 3. 4. 5. 6. 7. 8. 9. 10.	0 00 0. 0. 6. 0.
1 1/2 var. de 1. 2. 3. 4. 5. 6. 7. 8. 9. 10.	0 00 0. 0. 6. 0.
2 par de 1. 2. 3. 4. 5. 6. 7. 8. 9. 10.	0 00 0. 0. 6. 0.
Un par de 1. 2. 3. 4. 5. 6. 7. 8. 9. 10.	0 00 0. 0. 6. 0.
Por 24. 1. 2. 3. 4. 5. 6. 7. 8. 9. 10.	0 00 0. 0. 6. 0.
q. Gomo partido lta el 2 a febrero a 178. 1. 2. 3. 4. 5. 6. 7. 8. 9. 10.	0 00 0. 0. 6. 0.
que valio de curso del 2. de los Alamos.	0 00 0. 0. 6. 0.

Havienlo leyo las partidas v. 25. 2. 3



seguinte i certi Thaviano Sib Mar con-  
ferme per la m<sup>ma</sup> <sup>e</sup> tiene Rounan  
lar seriali in una Cruz x firmi au Riego  
el Rey D<sup>n</sup> Ramon Caro.

Unas B. xente na ferra e Cap. Almeida. .... 8246 6.3

Véle navonam a. Convento de los que tiene  
 Caravados El Monte El 2 bagager en que  
 se han corio con la Muger El 1.º El 1.º nalen  
 a el El 1.º Alamo. . . . . } 60. 00. 00  
 Bem 2.º a 2.º conque solo 1.º corio, 1.º corio  
 El 1.º El 1.º Tunis El 1.º corio el 1.º El 1.º febrero } 60. 20. 00  
 El 1.º con 1.º corio. . . . . }  
 1.º corio. . . . . }

Resulta líquido en concha el N.º 662000.....2186.3.3

Concuerda con la Cuenta, que se e a formado  
al contenido, conforme a su Declaracion, e Inform.  
que se han tomado en Causa e Navene por  
Dido las Sumas que existian en posesion  
del Capitan D. Fern.<sup>do</sup> Alameda en su Monte  
hacienda en el Rio Colorado. Minion e San Fariel  
y Fore 13 e 1781.

The *Strigal*

13.  
Hawes



	DEBIT		
	Ps.	Rs.	Grs.
1¼ varas of ribbon for the hat, worth 3 reales..	000	3	..
4 reales for a pair of boots bought at San Sebastian	001	6	..
1 piece of Brittany linen, worth 6 pesos.....	006	..	..
2½ varas of baize at 6 reales each .....	001	7	..
1 vara of glazed linen for lining, worth 2½ reales	000	2	6
3 varas of ribbon at 1 real each, and ½ vara of silk	000	5	..
6 reales for tailoring a pair of skirts.....	000	6	..
1 ounce of white silk .....	001	2	..
9 varas of Rouen linen, at 6 reales each.....	006	6	..
1 pair of women's stockings, worth 3 pesos, 4 reales	003	4	..
2 varas of linen for jackets, at 5 reales each....	001	2	..
2 pair of hose at 4 reales each .....	001	..	..
2 rebozos at 11½ reales each .....	002	7	..
1 hat worth 18 reales .....	002	2	..
6 varas of ribbon at 1 real each .....	000	6	..
2 pair of women's shoes worth 12 reales.....	001	4	..
1 bed blanket worth 4 pesos, 4 reales.....	004	4	..
1 coarse blanket for his son, worth 9 reales.....	001	1	..
1¼ varas of coarse linen wrapper for portmanteaus, at 6 reales each .....	000	7	6
6 reales for a pair of stirrups .....	000	6	..
3 varas of Rouen linen for handkerchiefs, at 6 reales each .....	002	2	..
3 varas of linen for the little girl, at 5 reales each	001	7	..
1 pair of reins from the House of Don Prudencio, worth 3 reales .....	000	3	..
2 headstalls at 3½ reales and 2 halters at 3 reales	001	5	..
1 leather water bag, worth 1 peso.....	001	..	..
1 quarter pound of leather, worth 5½ reales....	000	5	6
1 real for a sweat pad for the saddle .....	000	1	..
3 cruppers at 3 reales each .....	001	1	..
1 silk handkerchief worth 18 reales.....	002	2	..
176 daily rations at 2 reales each, from August 11, 1780 till February 2, 1781, when he left Los Alamos fully equipped .....	044	..	..
2 loads of baggage from el Real del Rosario to Los Alamos, a distance of 120 leagues, 15 pesos ..	015	..	..
	194	6	3

The account having been read in full to this individual, he expressed his satisfaction that the entries of merchandise and other effects therein contained are the same as he has received, and he made his mark, Alferez Don Ramon Laso signing at his request.

	Ps.	DEBIT Rls.	Grs.
To Credit of Don Fernando Rivera y Moncada's account .....	194	6	3
From this sum should be subtracted the value of 2 loads of baggage with which he conducted himself and family from el Real del Rosario to Los Alamos, at $\frac{1}{2}$ real per league.....	015	..	..
Also he is credited with 176 daily rations at 2 reales each charged against him from the 11th of August 1780 to the 2nd of February 1781, when he left fully equipped from Los Alamos ...	044	..	..
Credit .....	059	..	..
Net sum charged against the settler....	135	6	3

This agrees with the account rendered this individual, and conforms to his testimony and the investigations made because the original accounts which were in the hands of Captain Don Fernando Rivera y Moncada were lost at the time of his death on the Colorado River.

O. K. San Gabriel Mission, September 20, 1781.  
 Neve. José de Zúñiga.  
 (Rubric) (Rubric)

## No. 74.

**A** LEJANDRO ROSAS, indian, 19, native of el Real del Rosario, married, his wife, Juana Rodríguez, native of San Blas, coyota, 20. He enlisted as a settler for the New Establishments of Monterey, in the Villa of Sinaloa, on November 7, 1780, and continues a resident of the City of the Queen of the Angels.

	Ps.	DEBIT Rls.	Grs.
In the first place he admitted having taken as a first entry in la Villa de Sinaloa, 25 pesos for the expense of his marriage .....	025	..	..
1 pound of wax, worth 5 reales .....	000	5	..
1 pair of silk stockings, worth 4 pesos .....	004	..	..
6½ varas of serge for women's skirts .....	009	6	..
1½ varas of glazed linen for lining, at 2½ reales..	000	3	9
1 quarter of silk, worth 2½ reales, and 7 varas of lining at 1 real .....	001	1	6
4 varas of ribbon at 1 real each .....	000	4	..
2 pesos for tailored goods .....	002	..	..
1 piece of ordinary Brittany linen, worth .....	006	..	..
1 ounce of silk, worth 1 peso, 2 reales .....	001	2	..
2 pair of hose, at 4 reales each.....	001	..	..



	Ps.	DEBIT Rls.	Grs.
2 pair of shoes at 6 reales each .....	001	4	--
2 rebozos at 11½ reales each .....	002	7	--
1 vara of linen for a jacket, worth 5 reales.....	000	5	--
1 hat, worth 18 reales .....	002	2	--
½ vara of ribbon for a hat band, at 2 reales....	000	3	--
2½ varas of blue woolen cloth, at 20 reales each for breeches .....	007	4	--
3 varas of domestic cotton shirting, of 2/3, for lining, at 3 reales .....	001	--	--
1 quarter of silk worth 2½ reales .....	000	2	--
1 dozen buttons, which with the tailoring, amounts to 11 reales .....	001	3	--
16 varas of domestic cotton shirting, at 4 reales each	008	--	--
1 [ounce] of silk, worth 10 reales .....	001	2	--
1 crupper, worth 3 reales.....	000	3	--
3 varas of ribbon, at 1 real each.....	000	3	--
1 piece of Brittany linen, that he got at los Alamos, worth 6 pesos .....	006	--	--
6 varas of Querétaro cloth, at 2 pesos each, for a cape .....	012	--	--
1 quarter of silk, and 1 peso for tailoring.....	001	2	6
2 pair of hose, at 4 reales each.....	001	--	--
2 pair of men's shoes at 5 reales each.....	001	2	--
1¼ varas of coarse linen wrapper for making port- manteaus .....	000	7	6
1¼ varas of Rouen linen for handkerchiefs.....	000	7	6
1 real worth of silk for sewing same.....	000	1	--
1 vara of Brittany linen for handkerchiefs.....	000	6	--
1 bed blanket, worth 4 pesos, 4 reales.....	004	4	--
1 black work hat ( <i>de Tarea</i> ), worth 18 reales ...	002	2	--
1 saddle complete, with tree and all, from el Rosario	010	4	--
1 set of saddle irons, worth 12 reales.....	001	4	--
2 bridles and a pair of spurs, at 9 reales each....	003	3	--
1 pair of reins worth 3½ reales.....	000	3	6
1 leather water bag, worth 1 peso.....	001	--	--
1 Rosarian women's saddle, worth 10 pesos, 4 reales	010	4	--
2 loads of baggage, at ½ real per league from el Rosario to el Real de los Alamos.....	015	--	--
1 pair of women's shoes on leaving los Alamos..	000	6	--
88 daily rations at 2 reales each from the 7th No- vember 1780, when he enlisted, till the 2nd of February, 1781, when he left fully outfitted..	022	--	--
1 pair of saddle bags, worth 3 pesos.....	003	--	--
	178	6	9

	Ps.	DEBIT Rls.	Grs.
Having read this account to the interested party he approved of same with his mark, and Alferez Don Josef Arguello signed for him.			
Sum in favor of Captain Don Fernando Rivera y Moncada .....	178	6	9
From this sum should be subtracted in favor of said party, 15 pesos, value of 2 loads of baggage, with which he brought himself and family from el Real del Rosario to Los Alamos.....	015	--	--
Also the value of 88 daily rations which he received, at 2 reales each, and are charged against his account supra, from the 7th November 1780 till the 2nd of February, 1781.....	022	--	--
	<hr/>	<hr/>	<hr/>
	037	--	--
Net sum charged against this settler....	141	6	9

This agrees with the account rendered this individual, and conforms to his declarations and the investigations made, because the original accounts which were in the hands of Captain Don Fernando Moncada, were lost at the time of his death on the Colorado River. San Gabriel Mission, September 18, 1781.

O. K.

Neve.

(Rubric)

José de Zúñiga.

(Rubric)

### No. 75.

**P**ABLO RODRIGUEZ, indian, 25, native of el Real de Santa Rosa, in the jurisdiction of Volañón, married to María Rosalia Noriega, native of el Real de Panuco, in the jurisdiction of Rosario, indian, 26. One child María Antonia, a year old. He enlisted as a settler for the New Establishments of Monterrey, at el Real del Rosario on August 13, 1780, and continues a resident of the City of the Queen of the Angels.

	Ps.	DEBIT Rls.	Grs.
In the first place he admits having received a peso in reales from Captain Don Fernando for medical services at Rosario .....	001	--	--
3 varas of wide Brittany linen, bought at the house of Don Lorenzo Moro, at 10 reales each...	003	6	--
1 black work hat, worth 18 reales.....	002	2	--
1 pair of women's shoes .....	000	6	--
1 pair of men's shoes .....	000	5	--

	Ps.	DEBIT Rls.	Grs.
1 pair of spurs worth 9 reales .....	001	1	--
1 Rosarian saddle completely accoutred .....	010	4	--
2 bridles, at 9 reales each .....	002	2	--
1½ varas of Querétaro cloth, at 2 pesos each for a jacket .....	003	--	--
4 varas of domestic cotton shirting for linings, at 3 reales each .....	001	4	--
1½ dozen buttons, at 3 reales each.....	000	4	6
1 quarter of silk and 14 reales of tailoring.....	002	6	--
2½ varas of woolen cloth for breeches, at 2 pesos each .....	005	--	--
3 varas of cotton shirting for lining, at 3 reales each	001	1	--
1 quarter of silk and a dozen buttons.....	000	5	6
1 peso for tailoring .....	001	--	--
16 varas of Lanquina shirting, at 4 reales each..	008	--	--
1 [ounce] of silk, worth 10 reales.....	001	2	--
2 pair of hose, at 4 reales each.....	001	--	--
2 pair of men's shoes, at 5 reales each.....	001	2	--
2 blankets, or small Puebla handkerchiefs, at 2½ reales each .....	000	5	--
1 vara of fine Brittany linen, worth 6 reales....	000	6	--
6½ varas of cloth for a cape, at 2 pesos each....	013	--	--
1 quarter of silk, and 1 peso for tailoring.....	001	2	6
3 pesos, 4 reales, for a pair of boots.....	003	4	--
1 piece of fine Brittany linen for shirts.....	006	--	--
1 pair of silk stockings, worth 3 pesos, 4 reales..	003	4	--
1 Marca silk handkerchief* .....	002	2	--
6½ varas of serge, at 12 reales each .....	009	6	--
1½ varas of glazed linen for lining, at 2½ reales each .....	000	3	9
1 quarter of silk, worth 2½ reales.....	000	2	6
4 varas of ribbon at 1 real each and 7 of Revechillo, (lining) .....	001	3	--
2 pesos for tailoring .....	002	--	--
2 varas of linen for jackets .....	001	3	--
1 ounce of silk, worth 10 reales.....	001	2	--
3 varas of blue baize for skirts, at 6 reales each..	002	2	--
1 vara of glazed linen at 2½ reales.....	000	2	6
1 quarter of silk and 3 varas of ribbon at a real each	000	5	6
2 pair of shoes, worth 6 reales.....	001	4	--
1 bed blanket, worth 4 pesos, 4 reales .....	004	4	--
1 halter worth 3 reales, and a head-stall at 3½ reales	000	6	6
1 leather water bag, worth 1 peso .....	001	--	--

\*Marca—a frontier province.

	Ps.	DEBIT Ris.	Grs.
1 set of saddle irons, worth 12 reales.....	001	4	--
1¼ varas of coarse linen for wrapping, at 6 reales each .....	000	7	6
1¼ varas of Rouen pack thread for hand cloths..	001	1	6
4 varas of cotton goods for child's diapers at 3 reales each .....	001	4	--
2 varas of blue baize for mantillas at 6 reales....	001	4	--
For 2 loads of baggage from Rosario to Los Alamos at ½ real per league .....	010	--	--
For 173 daily rations at 2 reales each, from August 13, 1780 to February 2, 1781 .....	043	2	--
Also for 1 rebozo that he received at Los Alamos	001	3	6
	168	4	3

## NOTE

That altho this person brought 2 loads of baggage, he was not paid for one of them from a distance of 20 leagues from Rosario to Sinaloa, which amounts to 80 leagues, and he is credited with 40 reales accordingly. Having read his account, he admitted that the entries were regular, and the same that he has received, in evidence of which he made his mark. Alferez Josef Arguello signed at his request.			
Sum in favor of Captain Don Fernando Rivera y Moncada .....	168	4	3
Said person is credited with the 10 pesos charged against him, value of the transportation of himself and family from Rosario to Los Alamos	010	--	--
Also he is credited with the 173 issues of rations charged against him, and which he received from August 13, 1780 to February 2, 1781..	043	--	--
	053	2	0
Net sum charged against this settler...	115	2	3

This conforms with the account rendered this individual and agrees with his declarations and the investigations made by reason of the originals, which were in Captain Rivera's hands, having been lost, when he was killed on the Colorado River.

San Gabriel Mission, September 18, 1781.

O. K.

Neve.

(Rubric)

José de Zúñiga.

(Rubric)



# CORRESPONDENCE PERTAINING TO REGLAMENTO AND TO RECRUITAL OF POBLADORES

Translated by MARION PARKS

## LETTERS REGARDING NEVE AND REGLAMENTO<sup>1</sup>

SEÑOR DON TEODORO DE CROIX

**M**Y DEAR SIR: I have received, with Letter from yourself of last February 12, a Copy of the Reglamento which lately has been prepared by the Governor of Californias Don Felipe Neve, altering the old one so that the affairs of this Peninsula may be regulated to course with more certain pulse; and so that every economy possible may be observed in the expenditures required for the Presidio of Santa Barbara, which has just been ordered, and those who prepare the employments which have been created for the better Service of His Majesty.

From the context of this Reglamento one deduces that its object is directed toward good internal government, and the discipline of the Presidial Companies, the relief of the Troops, the benefit of that Peninsula, and the Security of the interests of the Royal Hacienda. In this understanding you may soon proceed to dictate the Provisions required for its observance, in complete confidence that I am ready to Contribute on my part with those [provisions] which will further this intent, in which understanding I render a complete account [of these matters] to His Majesty so that all may be in accord with his gracious will.

May Our Lord guard you many years. Mexico, 19 May of 1780.

Your hands are kissed by your Most  
Attentive and Devoted Servant,

Martin de Mayorga (Rubric)

No. 37

Arispe July 15 of 1780.

**T**O the Assessor-General in whose possession is the antecedent correspondence in consideration of which I have named the subaltern officers who are being added to the Presidios of Californias for Assistant Inspector to the ranking Captain Don Nicolas Soler.

De Croix (Rubric)

<sup>1</sup> Provincias Internas Tom. 122 Archivo General.

Señor Comandante General :

**B**Y Royal Order of March 21, 1775, His Majesty was pleased to command that the Reglamento for the Peninsula of Californias be altered because of the defects which were noted in the one then in force; to which end Your Excellency ordered in a letter written by you on the fifteenth of August of '77 to Governor Don Phelipe Neve, that he inform you at length and in detail what he estimated necessary for its reform, so that he might be placed in a position to act when he should find himself on the ground. Subsequently in a new Order which was passed on September 3 of the following year of '78; he was instructed to dedicate himself to the task of improving the Reglamento in force; and in doing so bearing in mind the new establishments, which at his suggestion Your Excellency had resolved to found on the Channel of Santa Barbara, he framed and remitted the new Reglamento, which, under date of June 1, 1779, is found in the file.

Having considered and examined it, you were pleased to reply on February 12 of this year, that nothing was left to wish for, since in every particular you found the objects of the Royal Service fulfilled, especially as to relief for the Troops, Economy and security of the interests of the Exchequer, and Advantages which they proportioned for the cost of defending, developing and maintaining the Territory. This opinion you transmitted on the same date to His Excellency the Viceroy, and reported to His Majesty soliciting his Royal Approval.

Effectively, on the same day you also sent a Copy [of the Reglamento] to the Viceroy, informing him that you considered it not only worthy of his Recommendation, but that its adoption seemed to you very urgent in order that the advantages it offered might soon be realized, and that the expenses occasioned by the New Establishments might be reduced; and that if it merited the same Opinion on part of His Excellency, you hoped to be so advised in order to make the necessary arrangements and proceed immediately to the reform of the employments of the Commissaries, and Warehouse keepers, and to make further provisions looking toward its provisional observance, until, account having been given to His Majesty, the Royal Approbation should arrive.

To this the Viceroy replied on May 19 following that you might at once proceed with ordering the provisions necessary for putting the Reglamento in force, in the firm conviction that you were quick to contribute on your part with those things which would promote its intention, and in the understanding that you would give complete account to His Majesty in order that this Resolve might meet with his Royal satisfaction.

On February 23 of this same year you rendered account to His

Majesty of all which you had ordered relative to the Peninsula of Californias, and as a result of the Orders which its Governor Don Phelipe Neve had given. [You reported also] that having framed this the new Reglamento, of which you had ordered ad interim observance, the advantages toward which it was directed would be brought about, adding that in the Following Post, you would remit a Copy, which you lacked time and hands for getting into that one.

Thus, not only is the said new Reglamento found approved by yourself, but His Excellency the Viceroy has condescended to approve its observance, offering to make provisions conducing to this end, and of everything account has been rendered to His Majesty; and his Royal approbation is awaited. In everything possible Government, discipline and management of interests of the Troops of that Peninsula, have been made uniform to those established for the Troops of these Provinces in the last Reglamento of September 10, 1772—which is in force in them; and even if all the provisions and resolutions which have been ordered as a result of the revisions of Inspection (military orders) and expedients promoted in this one, are not adaptable to that Country, there may be many conducive (to this end), and easy of execution, especially in regard to the paymasters, powers conferred on the Officers of the Companies, method of distributing supplies, and responsibility of the Captains.

In view of which it seems to me advisable that at the same time these Orders be given to the Governor Don Phelipe Neve, he be sent also a Copy, or Certified Collection of the Resolutions both general and particular which have been dictated by Your Excellency for the better government, discipline and management of the interests of these Troops, so that comprehending all that has been disposed regarding them, he may adapt to those of that Peninsula such items as he will find convenient in the enforcement (of the new Reglamento) adding such items chapter by chapter to the said Reglamento and advising as to those which he has added so that there will always be a record of it in this Superior Government.

In official communication of Number 88, of June 6 of 1777, the Governor Phe. Neve, after describing in complete detail the places which had been examined from the Mission of San Gabriel to the Presidio of Monterrey, the distances at which they lie one from the other, and those which have available land and water for sowing and tilling, proposed that for the Province itself to produce the seeds and grains necessary to provision the Troops and Settlers, no other means can be found than to recruit forty or sixty laborers, who would settle on the Rivers of Santa Ana, San Gabriel, La Porciúncula, and Guadalupe, or at least, that divided in two crews be established one on the River of Santa Clara and the other on that of the Porciúncula, with various auxillaries to aid them, as he stated

later in a separate *Oficio* dated April 3, 1779, designated as Number 69. He explained [therein] that twenty-four Pobladores would be sufficient, including among them one Mason, and one blacksmith with the other auxiliaries which have been asked, and which were included in this number.

You having acceded to this proposal and having made provisions to secure the recruits and other auxiliaries asked by Neve, you advised him that you were instituting measures in interest of the project; with which motive, in a new *Oficio* of April 22 of this year, designated as No. 130, he explained that he had ordered reconnaissance of the region about the entrance of the Channel of Santa Barbara to the North and South, to see if in this area might be found a site adequate for planting crops which being contiguous would suffice to supply with provisions the Presidios and Pueblos which need to be established in order to occupy it [the channel]. This resulted in finding to the north an abundant flow of water, which falls from the mountain, and may be made available most easily, with spacious lands for tillage, and although in the immediate vicinity of the water supply the pasture does not appear to be of very good quality, such is to be found at short distance, with abundance of timber, firewood and stone, and more than two leagues of plain, down to the Camino Real which goes from the Presidio of San Diego to that of Monterrey. At Five leagues distance is the first rancheria of the Channel, called la Asunta. At seven leagues from the Opposite entrance, was found another abundant arroyo or spring with much and good land for tillage, but lacking in timber and firewood. These discoveries with those which were made in the year of '77, have brought him [Neve] to the conclusion that it would be more Advantageous to Change the foundation of the Pueblo, which was proposed for the margin of the River of La Porciúncula, as when he formed this project he was not instructed that you had approved that of the Occupation of the Channel. It therefore seemed to him more useful to found the two Pueblos, one in the stated place five leagues distant from the first Rancheria de la Asunta, and the other in the place which would offer most opportunity between the Missions of San Juan Capistrano and San Gabriel; the first in order to supply the Presidio and guard of the Channel of Santa Barbara; and the second in order to provide for that of San Diego; in the understanding that before Don Fernando Rivera arrived, he would go personally to investigate these places, and to examine whether the opportunities they offer corresponded to the information which he had been given by the Lieutenant Don Joseph de Ortega, and the Sergeant Juan Josef Robles. In which case he would divide the twenty-four families in the two establishments. He was not without confidence of being able to add some other Poblador, and that this idea would produce good effects; but needing for its execution your



approval, he hoped that you would be pleased to communicate your will, in order to make arrangements for all things concerned, so that before long the families who are to be colonized could be settled and there could be found for them livestock and other auxiliary necessities, because he thought to establish at one time, the two Pueblos, the Mission of San Buenaventura, and the Presidio of the Channel, and this finished, to go on to found the Mission of la Concepción.

And granting that the Governor needs to go to reconnoitre personally those lands as he offered to do in his *Oficio*, no one is better able to determine with light and certainty than he, those which may be most suitable, and provide most opportunity for the foundation of the two Pueblos and to facilitate their progress. It seems to me that in this matter you can, if it please you, leave to his judgment the selection of the places in which they shall be established, charging him that he shall arrange if it be possible, to place the New Presidio, which must be situated along the Center of the Channel, on suitable land with soil and water for tillage so that under its protection in time there may be founded another settlement, which is the Object with which His Pious Majesty generously erogates the expenditures occasioned by such establishments.

In view of the fact that those ordered founded at the Junction of the Rivers Colorado and Gila are equal in importance to these, and that in order to facilitate their progress you have ordered several measures very helpful to the undertaking which can be no less adaptable to [the needs of] the Peninsula of Californias, it seems to me that you can equally, if it suits you so to command, order that there be remitted Certified Copies of all [of them] to the Governor Don Phe. Neve, in order that having them before him, and at once observing those which seem to him possible of execution, he may report on the rest, [as to] that which should be done and what he finds. Nevertheless, in all these foregoing matters, you will resolve upon such conclusions as may be to your pleasure.

Arispe September 18, 1780.

Galindo Navarro (Rubric).

Arispe, September 18 of 1780.

I concur in the opinion of the Assessor, and in consequence made reply to the office of the Governor of Californias, No. 130, of April 22 of this year, regarding the establishment of the two new settlements, sending to him separately the orders preparing for the *ad interim* observance of the new Reglamento from the first of January of the next year; And forwarding the replies to the Gobernador Intendente of this Province and to the Capitan Don Fernando de Rivera y Moncada, Commissioned for the recruiting of Troops and addi-

tional Settlers; gave advice of all to His Excellency the Viceroy, and a report to His Majesty with copies of the *Expediente* and related documents.

De Croix (Rubric)

Report was given in Letter No. 721—February 28 of '82.

LETTER TO FERNANDO DE RIVERA Y MONCADA ACCOMPANYING  
INSTRUCTIONS FOR RECRUITAL OF EXPEDITION OF 1781<sup>1</sup>

WITH the due aims of defense, conservation and development of the Province of Californias, toward which the service of God and King is especially directed, I have resolved upon Occupation of the Channel of Santa Barbara with a Presidio of this name, and three Missions; the erection of a Pueblo with the title of la Reyna de los Angeles on the River of la Porciúncula, and His Majesty has approved the one named San Joseph which I ordered founded on the margins of the river of Guadalupe.

In order to bring to happy success these important new establishments, the Señor Gobernador of that Province, Don Phelipe Neve, has deemed it expedient and requested of me in various communications, that you join this party of Troops, and I having heartily consented, the time is now come for your zealous performance of the duties enunciated in the attached Instructions.

They refer to the advantageous Recruiat of Families and Soldiers for Californias, so that this Province [Sonora] will not be laid open to risk by serious diminution of its already small population; and to useful increase and requisite remount of Mules, Horses, Mares, etc., needed by both old and new establishments of the Peninsula.

Giving precedence to and with due reflection upon all things imposed by my instructions, you must inform me before your departure from this Capital, and during the time subsequently employed in your Commission, of the doubts and

<sup>1</sup> Provincias Internas Tom. 122 Archivo General.

difficulties which confront you, in order that I may clarify and surmount them.

In Article 14 of the *Instruccion* I say to you that recruits must not be deceived with offers of more than can be fulfilled, and realizing that this delicate Point requires the greatest clearness I advise you that the Poblador recruit is to receive the monthly stipend of ten pesos and daily rations with the understanding that the payments will terminate at the close of three years exactly, which must be counted from the day of enlistment. That to each one will be given two Cows, two Oxen, two Mares, two Horses, one Mule, two Ewes, two Goats, and the tools and utensils necessary for the Labors of the Field: And that for all these supplies and those of clothing and riding equipment which they now receive, they will reimburse the Real Hacienda, (with exception of the amount of the monthly stipend and the rations) with part of the crops and increase of the Herds, making allowance so that they shall not lack in whatever is requisite for their own subsistence and yet carry out reintegration as indicated.

As the Soldier Recruits enjoy a fixed position and better wages, and are governed by distinct regulations, they will, by means of prudent discounts, satisfy out of their income the expenses incurred in supplying them and their families with clothing, accoutrements, armaments, provisions and remount.

The false interpretation which the people have given to the Reglamento de Californias, persuading them of greatest detriments in the surcharges or discounts there made against the Salaries of Officers, troops and Pobladores, may prevent many from taking advantage of the opportunity which now is presented to them for gaining an honorable and happy berth and of performing a loyal service to the King which will merit in all times his sovereign pleasure and just remuneration.

In order to dispel these harmful impressions it is imperative that you strive to exercise prudence and skill, not lacking in the slightest degree the truth and probity which are the Northstar of my disposals, in the understanding that I am endeavoring seriously and efficaciously to find the remedy for the imagined detriments, which I am sure, partake

more of appearance than of reality; for all those (detriments) which thus are experienced here on these frontiers, as on that of California, do not result actually from the provisions of the Ordinance but rather from the vicious mode in which it is being enforced, which difficulty is most easy of remedy through methodizing the rules, clarifying those which time and experience show to need some alteration, and zealously working for its exact and proper fulfilment.

I am certain that you will be scrupulously faithful to the important Commissions which I confide to you, as you need be in order that I may recommend to His Majesty this new special service so that he will deign to extend to you the favors of his Royal pleasure, and in this understanding advising you that I will arrange for the supplies of clothing, accoutrement, remount, etc., for the recruits and families, of which Article 22 of the *Instruccion* treats, and as your first march must be to Los Alamos, I enclose the attached Passport so that you will not delay your journey.

God and Country, Arispe, December 27, 1779.

Sr. Dn. Fernando de Rivera y Moncada.



## BANCROFT LIBRARY TRANSCRIPTS OF DOCUMENTS PERTAINING TO THE FOUNDING OF LOS ANGELES<sup>1</sup>

NEVE TO THE COMANDANTE-GENERAL  
May 16, 1781 San Gabriel

*Departure of families with soldier escort.*

**T**O the effect that on the twelfth of March seventeen families under command of the Alferez Ramon Laso [de la Vega] left Loreto for the bay of San Luis [Gonzaga] where they arrived April 24, and that they continue their march to this place, and that José Zúñiga follows with the rest of the families. That Sergeant Juan José Robles will set out with twelve soldiers for the Colorado to meet Captain Fernando de Rivera whom he asks, if assured of the safe conduct of his entire expedition, to send them back.

pp. 286-8.

NEVE TO THE COMANDANTE GENERAL  
1781 San Gabriel

July 13—in which he reports on smallpox contracted in Loreto.

p. 310.

July 14—

**T**O the effect that the Lieutenant Diego Gonzalez and the Alfe-  
rezes José Arguello and Cayetano Limon with thirty-five recruits  
and thirty of their families, arrived today at this Mission. That  
in the short interval which will remain from the time the mules will  
regain their strength until the beginning of the rainy season, which in  
this country starts in November, it will not be possible to transport  
with the sixty-two pack mules brought by the expedition the families  
and 750 fanegas of grain and baggage of the troops in seven months  
or more. And anticipating that the rains will cease in February, the  
roads will be impassable for pack animals for more than a month  
thereafter; and as it is not possible to build warehouses for storage  
of everything where for lack of wood they have to be built of adobe,  
therefore the founding of the Presidio of the Channel will not com-  
mence until next year as soon as the rains terminate.

That the decision of Fernando Rivera to remain on the Colo-  
rado prevents auditing the accounts of recruits and settlers.

pp. 311-314.

<sup>1</sup> Translated by Marion Parks.

## DISPATCH OF DOCUMENTS

*August 29* (two documents) Military register. Dispatch of documents.

*September 1*

**T**O the effect that the Alferez Cayetano Limon returned to this Mission [San Gabriel] with all speed from the Colorado where he went to join Fernando Rivera, discovering there that the Gentiles had killed the Captain Fernando Rivera y Moncada with all his troops, and even also the religious, the troops and settlers of those Establishments. And that at a short distance from them death had been dealt the Corporal Pascual Bailon, nine soldiers, one poblador and a muleteer who transported supplies and livestock for the said establishments. That Limon examined the corpses both in the pueblo and nearby on the banks of the river, and from the state of destruction and the dryness of them inferred that the deed had been perpetrated some forty days before his arrival on the twenty-first of this month [August] at the Colorado, and that he himself was attacked by a considerable force of Indians who fired on him for more than four leagues, killing two of his soldiers, and wounding him with a ball which pierced his side under the left arm.

That he [Neve] has taken the necessary steps to prevent transmission of this news to the natives of these establishments [in California].

pp. 315-7,  
pp. 318-9.

*October 28* (6 documents)

**H**E remits fifty-two accounts which because of loss of the original records have been made up for fifty-two recruits enlisted by Fernando Rivera, according to their own statements and to information from other sources. He knows that some through malice or forgetfulness have not declared some of the supplies of clothes or money which they received, and it being not easy to ferret out these last, as far as the clothes are concerned the records can be cleared up if the merchants of Los Alamos have retained their memoranda of what they severally distributed.

*October 29*

**T**HAT for the basis of the Santa Barbara Company one corporal and seven soldiers have been withdrawn from the Companies of Monterey and San Diego. This leaving them ten, which he considers a sufficient number so that the Company will soon be in condition for service. That it has been necessary to construct forty small houses of palisades and mud so that these troops and their families may pass the rainy season in comfort.

pp. 320-2.

That having arrived at this Mission on August 18, the Lieutenant José Zúñiga provided that the recruits, pobladores and families which he brought, under his charge, should camp at a distance of one league [from the Mission] because of the fact that some children among the party had but recently recovered from the small-pox. From [their camp] they went to establish themselves on the ground where they are founding the pueblo of Los Angeles, and now having finished the *zanja madre* they are continuing with building their houses and also the corrals for the stock. The latter has not as yet been distributed because they are concentrating their efforts on finishing the pueblo and when it is completed, they begin to plow the fields for the sowing of the wheat.

That to this pueblo there arrived but eleven pobladores, and of these eight alone are of any use.

pp. 322-3.

## OUTFITS OF SOLDIERS, SETTLERS AND FAMILIES

Statement of the clothing and riding equipment to be supplied to the soldiers and settlers and their families recruited from the Real del Rosario to Guadalajara.<sup>1</sup>

### OUTFIT FOR A SOLDIER

One jacket of blue wool (shag) or Querétaro cloth, with cotton facing reverse side, lapels and collar of second grade cloth, dyed red; blue wool buttons, cotton lining, epaulets of wool; yellow buttons with loop.

One pair of breeches of blue wool, cotton lining, knee-strap of the same woolen (shag), and yellow button; a black campaign hat; one cape of blue Querétaro cloth, with reverses lined with red baize; one black Barcelona silk handkerchief; one good linen shirt; one shirt of Puebla cotton; two pairs of underdrawers of Puebla cotton; two pairs of woolen hose, double (knitted) of fine thread of the country (local manufacture); one pair of buckskin boots; two pairs of shoes with half-gaiters; two blankets; ribbon for hat and hair.

One cowhide saddle with the requisite accoutrements, all of good quality, but with wooden stirrups and without cover or fringe; one horse and one mule bridle; one pair of cowboy spurs, but small, as is the usage according to regulations on these frontiers; one sweat-cloth or saddle-blanket of coarse frieze; a large sheath case for musket; some *cojinillos de media mochila* (saddle bags); a cartridge-box for 21 to 24 charges, for canons and other [guns] as requested by the Governor of the Province.

### OUTFIT FOR A SETTLER

One jacket of blue Querétaro cloth, lined with cotton, trimmed with white or yellow buttons, but without insignia; one pair of woolen breeches like those of the soldiers; one tie or kerchief of linen as a neck piece; two cotton shirts; two pairs of underdrawers; the same of woolen stockings, buckskin boots, shoes with half-gaiters, blankets, and ribbon for hat and hair as for the soldiers.

### OUTFIT FOR A FAMILY

*For a woman:* Three chemises; three pairs of skirts, some of serge, the others of baize and *faldellin*; two *varas*<sup>2</sup> of linen for jackets; two pairs of Brussels stockings; two pairs of under-stockings; two pairs of shoes; two rebozos; one hat; six *varas* of ribbon.

*For a boy:* One jacket of Querétaro cloth; one pair of breeches of the same; two cotton shirts; two pairs of cotton underdrawers; one pair of woolen stockings; two pairs of shoes; one hat; one blanket.

<sup>1</sup> Translated by Thomas Workman Temple II.

<sup>2</sup> *Vara*: a Spanish measurement, approximately one yard.



*For a girl:* Two linen chemises (creas, a kind of linen); two pairs of cotton skirts; one kerchief to be use as a rebozo; one pair of baize skirts; one underskirt; two pairs of hose or under-stockings; two pairs of shoes; one blanket.

NOTE: In addition to the endowments provided in the above account, the *Capitan Comisionado* may secure for the recruits others which he may consider of precise necessity, the Royal Officials of the Cajas de Guadalajara supervising the purchases and distribution, as well as the accounts of these subministrations.—Arispe, February 9, 1780.

*Copies of the originals which I certify, Arispe, February 10, 1780.*  
(Signed) Antonio Bonilla.

## NOTE ON RACES AND CASTES OF MEXICO

Intermarriage among the native Indians and the several races brought into Mexico as a result of the Conquest produced a multitude of castes. During the sixteenth century these were distinguished by an extensive nomenclature both in official records and popular usage. Some of these terms were used in identifications of the founders of Los Angeles, among them the mysterious and much-discussed "chino." The following list is taken from "Mexico a traves de los Siglos," Vol. II, p. 471:

Español....	Spaniard.
Criollo.....	Child born in Mexico of Spanish parents.
Mestizo or Coyote....	Child of Spanish father, Indian mother
Castizo.....	" " Mestizo " Spanish "
Español.....	" " Castizo " " "
Mulato.....	" " Spanish " Negro "
Morizco.....	" " Mulato " Spanish "
Salta-atras (literally "throw-back")....	a child having negro characteristics but born of white parents.
Chino.....	Child of a "salta atras" and an Indian.
Lobo.....	" " a Chino and a Mulata.
Gibaro.....	" " a Lobo and a Mulata.
Albarrazado.....	" " a Gibaro and an Indian.
Cambujo.....	" " an Albarrazado and a Negress.
Zambo-prieto.....	" " a Cambujo and an Indian.
" " .....	" " a Negro and an Indian.
" " .....	" " a Negro and a Zamba.
Calpan Mulata.....	" " a Zambo and a Mulata.
"tente en el aire" (literally "up in the air")....	child of a Calpan-Mulata and a Zamba
"no te entiendo" (literally "I don't understand you")....	child of "tente en el aire" and mulata.
"ahí te estas" (literally "there you are")....	child of a "no te entiendo" and an Indian.

<sup>6</sup> Negroes were introduced as slaves into the Spanish West Indies as early as 1516, and subsequently were brought into Mexico in large numbers.

# FIRST CENSUS OF LOS ANGELES<sup>1</sup>

## Peninsula of California

Census of the population of the City of the Queen of the Angels, founded September 4th, 1781, on the banks of the Porciúncula River, distant 45 leagues from the Presidio of San Diego, 27 leagues from the site selected for the establishment of the Presidio of Santa Barbara, and about a league and a half from the San Gabriel Mission; including the names and ages of the residents, their wives and children. Also an account of the number of animals and their kind, as distributed; with a note describing those to be held in common as sires of the different kinds, farming implements, forges, and tools for carpenter and cast work, and other things as received.

(1) Lara, Josef de, Spaniard, 50,	Maria de los Santos Sef-	
Maria Antonia Campos, in-	erina, indian, 26,	
dia sabina, 23,	Maria Antonio Josefa, 8.	
Josef Julian, 4,	(6) Vanegas, Josef, indian, 28,	
Juana de Jesus, 6,	Maria Maxima Aguilar,	
Maria Faustina, 2.	indian, 20,	
(2) Navarro, Josef Antonio,	Cosme Damien, 1.	
mestizo, 42,	(7) Rosas, Alejandro, indian, 19,	
Maria Rufina Dorotea, mu-	Juana Rodriguez, coyote	
lata, 47,	indian, 20,	
Josef Maria, 10,	(8) Rodriguez, Pablo, indian, 25,	
Josef Clemente, 9,	Maria Rosalia Noriega,	
Maria Josefa, 4.	indian, 26,	
(3) Rosas, Basillio, indian 67,	Maria Antonia, 1.	
Maria Manuela Calixtra,	(9) Camero, Manuel, mulato, 30,	
mulata, 43,	Maria Tomasa, mulata, 24,	
Josef Maximo, 15,	(10) Quintero, Luis, negro, 55,	
Carlos, 12,	Maria Petra Rubio,	
Antonio Rosalino, 7,	mulata, 40,	
Josef Marcelino, 4,	Josef Clemente, 3,	
Juan Esteban, 2,	Maria Gertrudis, 16,	
Maria Josefa, 8.	Maria Concepcion, 9,	
(4) Mesa, Antonio, negro 38,	Tomasa, 7,	
Ana Gertrudis Lopez,	Rafaela, 6.	
mulata, 27,	(11) Moreno, Josef, mulato, 22,	
Antonio Maria, 8,	Maria Guadalupe Ger-	
Maria Paula, 10.	trudis, 19.	
(5) Villavicencio, Antonio,	(12) Rodriguez, Antonio Miran-	
Spaniard, 30,	da, chino, 50,	
	Juana Maria, 11.	

<sup>1</sup> MS. Provincial State Papers, Missions & Colonization, To. 1, pp. 101-2. Translated by Thomas Workman Temple II.

NOTE

That in addition to the cattle, horses, and mules, distributed to the first 11 settlers, as set forth, they were granted building lots on which they have constructed their houses, which for the present are built of palisades, roofed with earth; also 2 irrigated fields for the cultivation of 2 fanegas of corn to each settler; in addition, a plow share, a hoe and an axe: and for the community, the proper number of carts, wagons, and breeding animals as set forth above, for which the settlers must account to the Royal Exchequer at the prices fixed: with the corresponding charges made against their accounts, as found in the Book of Poblacion, wherein are also to be found the building lots, planting fields, farming utensils, and animals belonging to the settler, Antonio Miranda Rodriguez, which will be granted to him, as soon as he appears at said Pueblo.

San Gabriel, November 19, 1781.

PUEBLO DE LA REYNA DE LOS ANGELES

Extract of the review which I, Don Josef Francisco de Ortega, Lieutenant & Comandant of the Company which is to garrison the Presidio of Santa Barbara, made of the settlers, who enjoy wages and draw rations, in said Pueblo, on December 2, 1781.

Feliz Villavicencio,	Alejandro Rosas,
Antonio Mesa,	Antonio Rodriguez, absent in Loreto,
Josef de Lara,	Luis Quintero.
Josef Vanegas,	TOTAL—
Pablo Rodriguez,	With wages and rations..... 11
Manuel Camero,	1 absent at Loreto ..... 1
Antonio Navarro,	—
Josef Moreno,	12
Basilio Rosas,	

NOTE: Having apprehended the deserter RAFAEL MESA, who recently arrived, and who claims to have enlisted as a soldier; [let it be known that] he enlisted as a settler, and is therefore excluded from the Company, having been a settler from the 12th of June 1780, until the 10th of October of said year when he deserted.

San Gabriel, December 2, 1781—Joseph Franco. de Ortega.

## PADRON AND CONFIRMATION OF TITLES TO PUEBLO LANDS

### DISTRIBUTION OF TOWN LOTS AND TRACTS OF LAND FOR IRRIGATION AND DRY PLANTING<sup>1</sup>

Monterey, August 14, 1786. Pedro Fages.

Inasmuch as, in Article 14 of the Royal Regulations, which rule in this peninsula, provision is made for the arrangement, method, and order in which the town lots and tracts of land for irrigation and dry planting are to be distributed, with everything else pertaining to the cultivation of farms, raising of cattle, and the encouragement of the pueblos of white people situated in the territories adjacent to the presidios of these new establishments, and since it is necessary for the formalities required to give possession to the citizens of the Pueblo de la Reyna de los Angeles shall be put into effect, in order that they may live in quiet and peaceful harmony: I therefore commission the Alférez of the City of Santa Barbara, Don José Argüello, to go to the said Pueblo and, in accordance with the cited Royal Regulations, give possession in the name of his Majesty (whom God preserve) to each one of the settlers to the tracts of land and town lots which are assigned to them, by means of legal writs, which will follow at the end of this order, preparing for each interested person a warrant, including a copy of this *expediente* and the measures respecting each one. These papers he will send to be ratified (so that they may serve as titles) to this governor, so that, after examining them, he may decide what is best. Care must be taken to make it clear that the citizens understand what pertains to the royal government and what is held in common, such as the crops, water, pastures, and wood, which must be stated in each warrant or act of possession, which they accept, under the conditions and penalties provided in the above-mentioned Instruction, as well as the privileges, exceptions, and favors with which the sovereign gives them this grant. They, or some other person at their request, will sign these papers before the commissioner and witnesses. Finally, rec-

<sup>1</sup> Archives of California, State Papers, Missions and Colonization, Tom. 1. Translated by Phil Townsend Hanna.



ord shall be made in the administration book of each of these acts of possession, as well as of the branding-irons which are given to them for marking their cattle; and there shall be a copy made of everything, to be placed in the archives of the aforesaid Presidio of Santa Barbara.

---

#### AUTO OF OBEDIENCE

In the Pueblo of La Reyna de los Angeles, on the 4th day of the month of September, 1786, I, Don José Argüello, Alférez of the Company of the Royal Presidio of Santa Barbara, in consequence of the preceding order from Señor Lieutenant-Colonel Don Pedro Fages, Governor of the Peninsula, declared that proceedings should be started for the exact fulfillment of giving possession to the citizens of the aforesaid Pueblo of la Reyna de los Angeles, in the name of his Majesty (whom God preserve), of the town lots and sections of land which are assigned to them in accordance with the orders in the Instruction which is inserted in the Royal Regulation of this province for the Pueblos of white people. And, after they had been informed of its articles, with the rest pertaining to the literal contest of the cited *expediente*, I ordered that as soon as these measures were completed, with the necessary formalities and requisites, in the presence of two witnesses, the papers should be sent (conformable with orders) to the said Señor Governor for his validation, or whatever may seem best to his superior judgment; and that a copy should be made of them to be placed in the archives at the Royal Presidio of Santa Barbara. I so directed, ordered, and signed, to which I make oath.<sup>1</sup>

José Argüello.

---

Nomination and acceptance of two witnesses. In the said Pueblo, on the aforesaid day, month and year, I, the above-mentioned Alférez-commissioner, in view of the *auto* which precedes, it being necessary to appoint two witnesses to be present at the subsequent proceedings, for this purpose or-

---

<sup>1</sup> NOTE: This document may be regarded as an additional confirmation of September 4, 1781, as date of founding of Los Angeles. See Section 2, Fourteenth Title, *Reglamento*, (p. 181) warning that "said five years' time (of probationary occupation) is to be counted . . . from the day of actual giving possession of the House-Lots and Fields . . ." Editors.

dered to appear before me Corporal Vicente Felix, and the soldier Roque de Cota (of the Presidio of San Diego) who, when the nomination was made known to them replied that they accepted it, and promised to be present punctually whenever they were required during these proceedings. And they signed it with me, to which I make oath.

José Argüello, Vicente Felix, Roque de Cota.

---

Act of giving possession to the first settler, Felix Villavicencio, of his respective lot. In the aforesaid Pueblo, on the day, month, and year mentioned, I, the above-mentioned Alférez-commissioner, in continuation of these proceedings, ordered to appear before me and the witnesses, the nine settlers, including the son of Antonio Navarro, who represents his father during the latter's absence. All being present, I gave possession of his respective lot, twenty varas wide and forty long, to the settler, Felix Antonio Villavicencio. I explained to him, and he replied that he understood the privileges, exceptions, and favors with which the sovereign makes him this grant, under the penalties imposed upon the disobedient. Being asked if he accepts his act of possession, he replies that he accepts it, obligates himself, and promises to fulfill the obligations pertaining to his establishment. Not knowing how to write, he made the sign of the cross. I signed it with my witnesses, to which I make oath.

José Argüello, Vicente Felix, Roque de Cota.

---

Act of possession of four tracts of land belonging to the said Villavicencio:

In the said Pueblo, the day, month, and year cited, I the aforesaid Alférez, accompanied by the witnesses and settlers, went to the farm lands, where, after making the necessary measurement of 200 varas square for each lot of land, I gave possession to the said Felix Antonio Villavicencio of the four lots pertaining to him, all irrigated, in view of the fact that there were sufficient of this kind. The said possession having been effected with the same formalities and proceedings as are described in the preceding measure, and the settler having been satisfied and informed of everything, not know-

ing how to write, he made the sign of the Holy Cross, and I signed it with my witnesses, to which I make oath.

José Argüello, Vicente Felix, Roque de Cota.

---

Measure to confirm the branding-iron of the aforesaid Villavicencio. In the said Pueblo, the same day, month, and year, I, the said Alférez, having the settlers and my witnesses before me, delivered to the above-mentioned Villavicencio his corresponding branding-iron (the design of which is shown in the margin), he having been informed that it was the same with which he would have to brand his cattle. The iron was registered without any charge, according to the provision of article 8 of the aforesaid Instruction. Not knowing how to write, he made the sign of the Holy Cross. I signed it with my witnesses, to which I make oath.

José Argüello, Vicente Felix, Roque de Cota.

(Note. Then follow autos of lots and branding-irons, with slight variation of language, to the following settlers: José Vanegas, Pablo Rodriguez, Manuel Camero, Antonio Clemente, José Antonio Navarro, José Moreno, Basilio Rosas, Alejandro Rosas, and José Sinova. None was able to write and all had to sign with their mark.)

---

Autos to assign lands to individuals and the royal government for irrigation, pasture, etc.

In the Pueblo of la Reyna de los Angeles, on the 5th day of the month of September, 1786, I, Don José Argüello, Alférez of the company of the Royal Presidio of Santa Barbara, commissioned for these measures, declared the acts of possession of the town lots and tracts of land corresponding to each one of these settlers concluded. I then went with them and the witnesses to the lands that were not yet assigned. Having made the necessary measurement from near the dam as far as the dividing boundary of the lands already partitioned, the measurement resulted in a length of 2200 varas from north to south for those which has been assigned to individuals of the Pueblo; leaving for the government all the land on the opposite side of this river and Pueblo, over 2000 varas long. Those which are not comprised in the aforesaid lots of pos-

session, nor of individuals, I assigned to them, together with sufficient pasture land for their cattle. I caused them to be informed of all of this, and also that they were to enjoy the right to maintain their cattle from the community supply of water and pasture, wood and timber, with everything else pertaining to the spirit of the aforesaid Instruction for Pueblos or white people, to all of which they replied that they understood and agreed. Not knowing how to write, they made the sign of the Holy Cross, and I signed it with my witnesses, to which I make oath.

José Argüello, Vicente Felix, Roque de Cota.

At the Royal Presidio of Santa Barbara, on the 18th day of the month of September, 1786, I, Don José Argüello, Alférez de la Compañía of the said Presidio and commissioner in the present proceedings, in view of their conclusion, and having made a record of each of the respective possession and their lands in the book of settlements in charge of the Comandante of that presidio, Don Felipe de Gycoechea, for whom a copy was made of everything to remain in the archive, I directed that the originals should be sent to the Superior governor of this province, as is required in their heading. I so provided, ordered, and signed, to which I made oath.

José Argüello..

#### TRANSLATION OF PORTION OF ORDER OF GOVERNOR FELIPE DE NEVE FOR FOUNDING OF LOS ANGELES<sup>1</sup>

**F**OR the establishment of the Pueblo of Los Angeles, near the river Porciúncula, and on the land designated for this purpose, there shall be included all the lands that may be benefitted by irrigation. There shall be marked out the best place to construct the dam in order that the water may be distributed to the largest extent of land.

The site where the Pueblo is to be established shall be marked out, on land slightly elevated, exposed to the North and South winds. Measures shall be taken to avoid the dangers of floods; the most immediate vicinity to the river or vicinity to the principal zanja shall be preferred; taking care that from the Pueblo the whole or greatest portion of the planting lands may be seen.

<sup>1</sup> From a certified traced copy from Surveyor-General's office, filed as evidence in Los Angeles District Court Case No. 1344, March 11, 1869.



The Plaza ought to be 200 feet wide by 300 long; from said Plaza four main streets shall extend, two on each side; and besides these, two other streets shall run by each corner. The four corners shall look towards the four cardinal points, for the reason that said streets being prolonged in this manner from the Plaza they shall not be exposed to the four winds, which would be a great inconvenience. Taking this into consideration and the gradual increase of population there shall be marked out the convenient lands to establish said Pueblo; and for the purpose of building there shall be marked out as many building lots as there may be *suertes* of land susceptible of irrigation. Also, a tract of land 200 varas wide between the planting lands and the Pueblo shall be left vacant.

Every building lot shall measure 20 varas wide by 40 varas long.

Every *suerte* of land, either susceptible of irrigation or not, ought to be 200 varas long by 200 wide, on account of this being the size of a tract of land usually employed in planting one bushel of corn. The distribution of said building lots and planting lands shall be made in the name of the King—equally and proportionately to all new settlers—in such a manner that after measuring the land susceptible of irrigation there shall be reserved as *baldios* the fourth part thereof counting the number of population. There shall be distributed to each settler two *suertes* of land susceptible of irrigation and two *suertes* of land not susceptible of irrigation. The remainder of said lands shall be reserved for *propios* of the Pueblo and the *realengos* shall be awarded gratuitously to new settlers. An equal rule shall be observed in the granting of building lots to settlers, marking out the proper site for The Church, government buildings, etc.

The front of the Plaza looking towards the East shall be reserved to erect at the proper time the Church and Government Buildings and other public offices, and the adjoining lots shall be allotted to settlers.

On the main portion of said proposed buildings the proper site for the Guardhouse shall be marked out. Well understood that in the distribution of *suertes* every *suerte* shall be marked out separate and distinct from each other, designated by stakes, leaving the proper divisory margin between each *suerte*.

The *suerte* shall be numbered beginning by those nearest the town. The settlers shall draw lots therefor, the one obtaining the 1st number shall be awarded the 2d; and the person obtaining the 3d shall be awarded the 4th. In this manner the inconvenience resulting to them of having intermediate *suertes* distinct from those corresponding to each settler, shall be avoided.

Mission San Gabriel, Aug. 26, 1788.\*

PHELIPE DE NEVE.

---

\*Evidently copyist's error—should read 1781.

# REGLAMENTO PARA EL GOBIERNO DE LA PROVINCIA DE CALIFORNIAS.

Aprobado por S. M. en Real Orden de 24.  
de Octubre de 1781.



---

EN MEXICO.

---

Por D. Felipe de Zuniga y Ontiveros, Calle del Espiritu Santo,  
año de 1784.

# REGULATIONS AND INSTRUCTIONS

For the Garrisons of the Peninsula of Californias, erection of new Missions,  
and fostering of the colonization and extension of  
the Settlements of Monterrey.

Translated by CHAS. F. LUMMIS

Reprinted from *The Land of Sunshine Magazine*, Vol. VI, January, 1897, by courtesy of copyright owners.

**H**IS Majesty, having deigned to determine (by Royal Decree of March 21, 1775) to alter the provisional Regulations now in force in the Peninsula of Californias; in order to give due fulfillment to this Sovereign Resolve, has marked as the most opportune and suitable means their adaptation (so far as possible), to the rules established by the Royal Regulations for Garrisons, for the economical government of the [garrisons] of the Peninsula and their Troops; changing the footing, pay and management of interests in such manner as to make (by advantageously apportioning the force of the posts for sallies and other functions of the Service) a saving in the present costs which the Royal Exchequer pays in the posts of Loreto\*, San Diego, Monterrey and San Francisco. [To] increase number of Officers, equalize and proportion the wages of Sergeants, Corporals, Soldiers, Surgeon, Master Mechanics and Colonizers, in such manner that the wages be such as are requisite for the subsistence, responsibility and heedfulness of each class. This includes the subordinates of the small Department of Marine at Loreto; stipends which have to be continued to Religious Missionaries; and the order in which new Reductions [centers for converting the Indians] should be located, establishing rules which shall assure the encouragement, population and extension of the old and new settlements. With which important object, to secure communication and to draw to the true knowledge of Religion the numerous Gentiles that inhabit the indispensable strait and perilous pass of the Channel of Santa Barbara, it is decided to occupy it; establishing a Post and three Missions, with a Pueblo [town] which, being near by, can supply said Post and that of San Diego with provisions from the product of its crops. And as it is not feasible that the Frontier Inspector of Posts review those of this Peninsula, since the sea-voyage and their enormous remoteness hinder, it is made obligatory upon the Governor to discharge the duties of Inspector (as he has done); heeding that the Government be purely Military, and that this Chief be not included as Captain of any of the Posts of his command. And if he is unable to discharge this duty personally, as is ordered, he shall (subject to Superior approbation) name and appoint an Aide, who shall, under his direction and orders, review the Posts to which he is destined, watch zealously the uniformity, service, discipline and subordination of the Troops as to the most exact

\*Lower California.

observance of whatever is provided in the said Royal Regulations, without variation except as authorized by the following Titles.

### FIRST TITLE

1. As the present condition of the Peninsula does not permit change in the established order of transporting from New Spain\*, at the cost and risk of the Royal Exchequer, of Clothing, Goods, Provisions and Troop Horses for the subsistence and alleviation of the Troops, Settlers and other Dependents of the Posts, this practice must be followed: the Agent of the Peninsula and the Commissary of San Blas forwarding their lists for the Requisitions which must be sent yearly by the Governor to the Most Excellent Viceroy, that he may deign to determine the purchase and forwarding [of supplies]. *Excepting*, the Post of Loreto, whose considerable remoteness forbids the sending of its accounts in season; wherefore they must be sent by the Captain direct to His Excellency.

2. The Provisions, Uniform, Arms, Saddles, Clothes, Troop Horses and other articles sent from Mexico, San Blas or Sonora, must be received and distributed to the Troops at prices based on first cost, under which consideration the wages are fixed. Consequently there must be no intervention except the pay of the Individuals entitled to it and comprised in these regulations.

3. As at present the Commissary of Loreto and the Store-keeper in other Posts has charge of the paying of Troops and Clerks and the receipt and distribution of the respective Requisitions, it will henceforth be in charge (under inspection of the Captain in Loreto, and of the Commandant in the Posts of the new Settlements) of a Paymaster appointed from among the Subalterns of the Company under the rules hereinafter set forth.

4. The payment of Allowances shall be continued from the Royal Chest in Mexico, in the same order as now; delivering to the Agent of the Peninsula, (as per Supreme Decree of the Most Excellent Sir Viceroy) of the amount fixed as sufficient to fill the Requisitions of goods. This shall include the sum to be remitted in dollars to each Post, likewise crediting to the Commissary of the Dept. of San Blas the funds necessary to purchase victuals and articles for rations; and whatever else, through agency of said Commissary, is remitted him according to the Requisitions. As said delivery and purchases are made in the last months of the year, and received the following May or June, there should be no change in the established method of providing for the troops, with reference to the balance that each individual deducts for his last year's settlement; providing, through the year, the Rations and other necessary expense of the Soldier or his family. For this reason the allowance of 25 cents daily

---

\*Mexico.



for the support of Corporals and Soldiers is exempted; the Royal Exchequer paying the allowances at the end of the year they come due and paying the Troops the middle of the year following. With this knowledge and prudent regulation of the cost of the Provision, Uniform, Arms, Trappings, Clothing, Goods and Funds (counting the total sum of the Allowance for paying in Dollars the Salaries of Officers and Surgeon, discounting that which they receive during the year and the balances left after supplying the Troops) the Paymasters will make out the Requisitions bearing in mind to deduct the residues, whether they arise from the delivery to be made of them, or as surplus from year to year; bearing in mind equally, that the cash to be asked must not exceed, at present, one-fourth of the allowance, exclusive of the Salary of the Governor and Aide (if that office is created), who shall receive theirs separately as suits them.

5. As prices of Clothing and Goods are subject to alteration, whenever for this reason, or because the Requisition amounts to more than one-half the Allowance, the assortment cannot be filled, the lack shall be supplied from the one-fourth part to be remitted in money; and since the remaining one-fourth is arranged to meet the cost of Provisions and Goods called for by the Requisition of San Blas, any deficiency will be covered in same manner.

6. Whenever the sowing, harvesting and storing of crops in the new settlements is advanced so that the Garrisons can provide themselves in whole or in part with the needful provisions, the Paymasters will ask for the sum of money corresponding to their purchase price, above that already indicated, subtracting the equivalent from the San Blas Requisition for seeds, and proportionately from the sum of supplying them.

7. The supreme difficulty and losses in transporting Troop-horses from Sonora to this peninsula, makes it necessary to supply each soldier with three or four, and to have in each Post, at cost of the Royal Exchequer, a drove of 24 or 30 mules to pack cargoes from the Ships, carrying Provisions for the Escorts and aid the Garrison, which, through the loss or considerable delay of a vessel, might lack the most necessary Seeds and Goods. For these reasons, that of the carrying of Rations to the Settlers of the new Town of San José Guadalupe and to the Town (if it is decided to found one) and for the other labors to be incurred in establishing the Post and Missions in the Pass of Santa Barbara—to which for the first year all food and other necessities must be carried by land—besides the need of hauling in wagons, henceforth, the produce of the Towns to supply the Posts; since it is impossible to put these Troops on a cavalry footing like those of the Frontier until facilitated by the increase of the horse-herds in the Peninsula, it is proper that when the Herds of Loreto and San Francisco are filled to the number of 24 mules (each with its trappings) and that of San Diego with 30

mules, 30 others be supplied to the Post which must be located in the Pass equally equipped. All this at cost of the Royal Exchequer; their keep, the replacing of those that die or become useless, the repair of harness and other belongings, and the pay of one Muleteer in each Post, being charged to the allowance fund, as a general expense henceforth. If, owing to other uses to which it is destined, the fund will not cover this expense, let the deficit be charged to the General Fund of the Companies, which are at all times responsible for the stock of said Herds, that of Monterey included, which now has 40 pack mules.

8. It being indispensable to furnish the trades of Carpentry and Blacksmithing to these recent acquisitions of Monterey, the two Master Mechanics, the Carpenter and three Blacksmiths now there shall remain, at the wages assigned them. This expense shall be included as part of the Allowance of Monterey and San Diego to which they are set aside, this being the only one for this purpose to be met by the Royal Exchequer. Since all the tools and irons pertaining to those trades and that of Stone-mason, which are included in the delivery to be made to the Paymasters, are to remain for the benefit of the settlements, the Paymasters are charged with their preservation and repair and with receipts for the work done for individuals, applying any surplus to the wages or rations of four Apprentices, to be sought to learn these trades, whereof the due account must be kept. Meantime the continuance of these trades and the respective cost to the Royal Exchequer are to be understood.

## SECOND TITLE

Footing, pay and gratuities of the companies and Dependents of Posts, and Marines of Loreto; posts covered by the Troops, and their distance apart.

---

1. The Company of the Post of Loreto, Capital of the old California, is and shall remain on the footing of Captain, Lieutenant, Ensign and 44 Recruits, including two Sergeants and three Corporals. With this it should maintain the small detachment of a Sergeant and six Soldiers in the *Real* [mining town] of Santa Ana of the South, distant 100 [Spanish] leagues\* [416 miles] from the Post. It covers with a subaltern Officer two Corporals and 23 Soldiers, the three Missions of the North Frontier, which are at intervals in the 280 leagues [1166 miles] between the last of them and Loreto. At Loreto must remain the Captain, one subaltern Officer (who must be the Paymaster), one Sergeant, one Corporal and 10 Soldiers. It is distant 350 leagues [1458 miles] from the following:

2. The footing of San Diego shall be of Lieutenant, Ensign

---

\*A Spanish league was 22,000 feet.

and 52 Enlisted men, including one Sergeant and five Corporals, the rank of Ensign being added to the present footing. It should cover the three Missions of its district with one Corporal and five Soldiers apiece. Upon the founding of the new Pueblo [town] it shall place therein a Safeguard of four Soldiers, who shall remain only the first two years. Thus the Garrison [San Diego] will be reduced to one Lieutenant, one Ensign and thirty men, including a Sergeant and two Corporals, wherewith it shall attend to the sorties and other duties of the Service. To the next is 170 leagues [708 miles].

3. That of San Carlos de Monterrey shall be of the same number of men as the preceding, adding to the company a Lieutenant and Ensign. Three privates of its present footing shall be abolished. It shall continue the escorts (of one Corporal and 5 Soldiers) in each of the three Missions of its territory. It has four Soldiers employed in the Pueblo of San José; and there shall remain in the Garrison, for the duties of the Service, a Lieutenant, an Ensign, a Sergeant, two Corporals and 27 Soldiers. It is 27 leagues [112 miles] from the next.

That of San Francisco will consist of Lieutenant, Ensign, and 31 Men, including a Sergeant and 4 Corporals. An Ensign is added to its present footing, and three privates subtracted. It shall cover (with two Corporals and 10 Soldiers) the two Missions in its scope; and will have left for the service of the Post, a Lieutenant, Ensign and 19 men, including a Sergeant and two Corporals.

5. The Pass of Santa Barbara is 74 leagues [308 miles] from the Post of San Diego and 70 from that of Monterey. It stretches between the Coast and the Cieneguilla [meadow] Range about 26 leagues, its greatest width being half to three-fourths of a league. It is full of high hills, bluffs and profound clefts. In this indispensable pass are 8000 to 10,000 Gentiles [Indians], who inhabit 21 Rancherias, situated at short distances on the heights and points contiguous to the Beach. Near the beach, sometimes on it and sometimes on the high ground, runs the Camino Real [King's Highway]. This evidences the risk to which small Parties are exposed on it; and that if some incident makes those Gentiles treacherous or hostile, communication with the old and new settlements would be cut off. These urgent reasons have caused the determination to occupy this pass in the following form.

6. The Post which shall be established midway the Pass shall be manned by Lieutenant, Ensign and 29 Recruits, including a Sergeant and two Corporals. It shall establish in its shelter a Reduction which afterward shall be removed to the neighboring spot which offers more land and sufficient water to irrigate the fields; and then it shall be given from the Garrison an Escort of a Corporal and five Soldiers. At the ends of said Pass, for its complete occupation, two other "Re-

ductions" shall be placed, each garrisoned with a Sergeant and 14 Soldiers. Said Recruits will be considered supernumeraries to the Company at the Post, while they secure these settlements peace and good admission among the Gentiles.

Attaining this with the rapid progress that should be expected in the spiritual conquest, they shall be reduced proportionately to the regular Escort of a Corporal and five Soldiers each; the Sergeants shall be incorporated with the Companies of San Diego and Monterey, and the 16 remaining Recruits shall be destined to garrison other "Reductions" which it may be decided to found, in which case they shall be added to the Companies nearest the spot.

7. The annual Allowance of the Post of Loreto shall be \$12,-522.50; adding \$1996 (amount of the corresponding allowance for the Marine Dept., which must be credited annually as extra to the Allowance of the Post) makes a total of \$14,518.50, divided thus:

Annual Pay of the Captain .....	\$1500.00
Of the Lieutenant .....	550.00
Of the Ensign .....	400.00
Of each of the 2 Sergeants \$262.50 .....	525.00
Of each of the 3 Corporals, \$225 .....	675.00
Of each of the 39 Privates, \$217.50 .....	8482.50
For gratuities of \$10 yearly per private .....	390.00

---

Total for the Post ..... 12,522.50

Marine Department of above Post.

Yearly pay of one Ship-Carpenter .....	\$132.00
Of one Blacksmith .....	120.00
Of one Porter .....	120.00

Crew of the Sloop "Pilar"

Annual Pay of the Master .....	120.00
Of the Boatswain .....	84.00
Of 8 Sailors at \$72 each .....	576.00

Crew of the Launch "Lauretana"

Its Master, by the year .....	84.00
*Eight Sailors at \$60 each .....	360.00

Annual cost of careenings, overhauls and masts for one

Sloop and two Launches, allow .....	400.00
-------------------------------------	--------

---

Total allowance for the Post and Marine .....\$14,518.50

This Regulation abolishes the Crew of the Launch "San Juan Nepomuceno," which Boat must be kept ready to be fitted out whenever there is grave need (only during that urgency) of the three vessels; and for this purpose, the actual Master will remain as Boatswain of the Sloop.

---

\*Misprint for 6.



*The Annual Allowance of the Post of San Diego shall be \$13,162.50, divided as follows:*

Annual Pay of the Lieutenant .....	\$550.00
Of the Ensign .....	400.00
Of the Sergeant .....	262.50
Of each of the 5 Corporals, \$225 .....	1125.00
Of each of the 46 Privates, \$217.50 .....	10,005.00
For gratuities of \$10 yearly to each Private .....	460.00
	<hr/>
	\$12,802.50
One Carpenter by the year .....	180.00
One Blacksmith ditto .....	180.00
	<hr/>
Total .....	\$13,162.50

*The Annual Allowance of the Post which shall be established in the Pass of Santa Barbara shall be \$7577.50; adding \$6895 for the two Escorts which must be provided temporarily, gives \$14,472.50, divided thus:*

Annual Pay of Lieutenant .....	\$550.00
Ensign .....	400.00
Sergeant .....	262.50
Each of two Corporals \$225 .....	450.00
Each of 26 Privates, 217.50 .....	5655.00
Gratuities from general fund of \$10 each .....	260.00
	<hr/>
	\$7577.50

*Escorts*

Two Sergeants at \$262.50 .....	\$525.00
28 Privates at \$217.50 .....	6090.00
Gratuity at \$10 each .....	280.00
	<hr/>
Total .....	\$14,472.50

*The Annual Allowance of the Post of San Carlos de Monterey shall be \$17,792.50; divided in this manner:*

Annual Pay of the Governor .....	\$4000.00
Lieutenant .....	550.00
Ensign .....	400.00
Surgeon .....	450.00
Sergeant .....	262.50
5 Corporals, @ \$225 .....	1125.00
46 Privates @ \$217.50 .....	10,005.00
Gratuities at \$10 each, yearly .....	460.00
	<hr/>
	\$17,252.50
One Carpenter, by the year .....	180.00
2 Blacksmiths at \$180 .....	360.00
	<hr/>
Total .....	\$17,792.50

*The Annual Allowance for the Post of San Francisco shall be \$8027.50, divided in this form:*

Annual Pay of the Lieutenant .....	\$550.00
Ensign .....	400.00
Sergeant .....	262.50
4 Corporals at \$225 .....	900.00
26 Privates at \$217.50 .....	5655.00
Gratuity from Common Fund, \$10 each .....	260.00
Total .....	<u>\$8027.50</u>
To each settler in each of the two first years, for pay and rations .....	\$116.37½
For rations in each of the three following years that they may be granted him .....	\$60.00

### THIRD TITLE

#### *Uniforms.*

1. As the Clothing and corresponding goods to uniform the Troops of these Posts have been included in the annual Requisitions, causing considerable delay to the Soldier, either because what was furnished him for uniform did not fit, or because of want of Tailors to make up the cloth they were long without the necessary skill or spoiled the cloth in cutting, henceforth the Paymasters shall order the uniforms for their Companies made in proportionate sizes, itemizing the individual measurements and garments. And while the total of uniforms must conform to the provisions of the Royal Regulations, and likewise the distribution, it must be borne in mind that as a pair of Breeches (and sometimes the Jacket) is not enough to last a year in the constant hardship of this service, it will be necessary to order extra garments in the required amount. Equally, that as the wooden one with double pouches is inconvenient, the cartridge-box should be made with one row of 24 receptacles, of tin covered with leather, to be attached firmly to the strap used as a belt, which is to be one and a half yards long and of corresponding width. The row of receptacles to be covered with a flap of soft leather, shall begin six inches from the buckle\*, which shall be of brass, smooth, with two claws; and two pouches in the ends of the cartridge box, one of them with a small tin priming-horn.

### FOURTH TITLE

#### *Armament and Horse-Trappings.*

1. These must fully meet the provisions of the Royal Regulations. As it is not practicable to furnish the Troops of this Peninsula eight mounts to the man, because of the difficulty of transporting horses, they shall be maintained with as many as may be, until by encouragement of stock-raising in the new settlements it shall become possible to Re-mount all the Posts.

\*"Evilla" is properly spelled Hebilla.

2. As to maintaining the horse-herd in close proximity to the Posts, to be brought in, morning and evening (if the country is not exposed to surprises by the enemy), that a prompt sortie be not hindered by the way the horses are held together and tended, there shall be no change in the established practice of keeping four horses tied by day and eight by night, in the garrison; and this number shall be increased whenever there is noticed any reason calling for it.

### FIFTH TITLE

*Distribution of Funds, and order in which general and special Accounts must be kept by the Paymaster.*

---

1. Understood that during the year the Troops must be assisted by the Paymaster in the special expenses which befall individuals and families; that, as there is no commerce in the Peninsula, these (expenses) must be on credit in the respective Warehouses, the daily succour of 25c each to Corporals and Soldiers (as is practiced in the Frontier Posts) shall be dispensed with; though when some urgent need arises, and there is sufficient balance, with the knowledge and order of the Captain or Commander of the Company, \$20 or \$30 may be advanced; but in no case shall this be done for one who is not on the stipulated footing; and for this the Commander shall be responsible.

2. Recollecting that the collection of the Estimate for these Posts is made at the end of the year, and that the paying of the troops is effected in the middle of the year following (by which means, at whatever time the Soldier may depart, since economy must be practiced, there will be sufficient balance above the value of the armament and horses) there shall be retained in the fund for Corporals and Soldiers only \$50 each; which shall be discounted in the first four years for the purposes set forth in Title 4, Article 2, Royal Regulations.

3. Of the discounts annually made for the balance-fund of the Company, the Paymaster must make the corresponding entry to Cash, with a List specifying the names of the Corporals and Soldiers, the amount retained for each individual and the sum total. For his safeguard, a copy of said List shall be signed (crediting the deposit of that amount in the Treasury) by the Depositary, who shall be the Captain in Loreto, and the second Officer who does not act as Paymaster in the remaining Posts. The second year, and thereafter, the introduction of the amount pertaining to this fund shall be made, with its respective settlement; the charge being made up from the balance in hand from the preceding year, and the amount of discounts of the present year; the payments made therein being shown, as also the total of said fund.

4. The settlement of the yearly account (making the preceding discounts and the two per cent, which the Paymaster is to receive) must be made under the supervision of the Captain or Second Officers mentioned in the preceding Article; and of the Interested person or Subject named to examine it; making good in ready money to each his dues, in the order fixed by the Royal Regulations.

5. The gratuity fund for the Garrison, at the rate of \$10 per man, is designated (outside the general expenses) to meet the cost of the rations wherewith must be assisted the Indian Prisoners, or those that come to treat under a truce. Also to meet the fitting-out of the Recruits, under the exact rules fixed in Art. 5 of this Title in the Royal Regulations; the salary of a Muleteer, the repair and care of pack-saddles and other equipment and the replacing of pack-mules that may die or become useless in each Post. The common fund of the Companies shall be responsible (as aforesaid) for any shortage in this fund; said Officers distributing *pro rata* whatever deficit may result; remembering that the pack-animals are destined for the benefit of the Companies, and that consequently these are always responsible for their keep, and that in no case must the Royal Exchequer be charged with any excess of cost in this or other matters to which the fund is applied.

6. The Paymaster must keep his accounts, supervised by the other Officers of the Post, with the utmost precision and equity. Each year there should be entered to cash, with the amount corresponding to this fund, its respective settlement, with the vouchers for the legitimacy of the expenditures, which must be agreed and determined by the Officers of the Company. They shall not fail of this duty nor delay to consult the Governor and await his decision, the very thing which must be observed by those who are not executive officers, as well as to give account of those who (being such) should do so. Nevertheless he must examine in the Reviews their good and legal government, to give account yearly of the amounts on hand and the costs, and other matters bearing on the condition of each Post and Company to the Sir General Commanding.

7. The general accounts shall be kept in a book, to be called the Cash-book. Its first item of charge will be the amount on hand, by delivery or brought forward, of clothing, goods, victuals, money or horses; next, the amount of the Requisitions received from Mexico and San Blas; the total of balances of the Company and dependents of the Post; and the amounts realized from colts, steers and other live-stock which may have been distributed to the Troops during the year. These items are to come last in the charge, both in this account and the private ones. The aforesaid charges must be verified by the Inventory of stock on hand, which must be made out at the end of every year (under supervision of the Officers of the Post) and their respective account. The original Invoices from



Mexico and San Blas, with copies of the corresponding Receipts given by the Paymaster; the private settlements and accounts of the Company and dependents of the Post, and the vouchers for the entries pertaining to the Royal Exchequer, which must be made out, for the live-stock, separately; the items of credit do and must specify the payment of loans and wages, with the settlements and private accounts of the Troops and dependents of the Post; the posting in the Cash-book of the amount corresponding to the gratuity fund, and the amount held back for Corporals and Soldiers, to verify the estimated balance in their respective settlements; the debts-on-account of individuals of the Troops and dependents of the Post; and the sum of the stock on hand at the end of the year shall prove up with the Inventory, wherewith (deducting the total of debit from the total of credit) shall be shown the balance, surplus or deficit resulting.

8. The settlements and private accounts of Officers, Surgeon, Sergeant, Corporals, Soldiers and dependents shall be kept in a Memorandum Book arranged annually for that purpose. It shall begin with an Index, showing the name and page under which is to be found the account of each one, headed with his name and rank. This shall enter the item showing last year's credit or debit, which must be brought forward on the margin and underlined, to follow out the supplies to be furnished this year. The items must state the quantity, quality, price and total value of the goods, noting on the opposite margin the month and day of delivery. The prices must agree with those fixed in the original Invoices or Tariff, to be made up the last of December. The accounts are to be closed, deducting from the total delivered and owed that which is due, thus showing the balance resulting. This must be noted in the presence of the interested party, as already provided.

### SIXTH TITLE

#### *Supply of articles of clothing and other necessities to the outfitting of the families of the Troops.*

1. As it is not feasible in these Posts to make the assortment from the Requisitions agree with the lists provided for by the Royal Regulations to be given to individuals of the Troops in clothing and goods they may need for their outfitting and that of their families (partly by the fact that a year or more elapses before their arrival and receipt, partly because the Soldier has no other means of assorting or providing than from a general stock, and would therefore fall short in the necessary memoranda—since, anxious to receive the remainder of his pay in money, he would prefer it to the forced maintenance of his wife, children and remaining family) it is necessary to change this custom in these Posts. Therefore such lists shall be given only by the Officers, Surgeon and Sergeants, fol-

lowing in making requisitions that which is set forth in Art. 4, Title 1 of these Regulations.

2. When it is possible to show that any of the articles or goods sent by the Agent are not absolutely up to specifications, if the deterioration has not been caused by the voyage, it shall be charged back at the first opportunity—and, if possible, on the same vessel which brought it.

3. As it is inevitable that there will be damage to seeds and articles of food, after they are received—particularly Corn, which is generally landed wormy; Lard and *Panocha* (cane sugar), which the heat of the holds melts and ferments; and the latter article remains fermented and even becomes watery by the frequent fogs and dampness of the climate; to which must be added the shrinkage and waste caused by retailing, and by the carrying of these articles, victuals and necessities for the subsistence of such Troops as are on escort duty—the Paymaster should not report these losses, nor those in piece-cloths which by shrinkage fall short of their proper measure; it being proper that the Common Fund suffer these losses. To proceed with due equity, that there be not inconvenience and that the Paymaster be secured, it is to be observed that preceding nomination (by the Corporals and Soldiers of the Company) of two Proxies in the same manner to be provided in Head 9 of Title 13; in their presence and that of the Officers shall be made an average of one, two or three bolts of each cloth, measuring them by different hands. Having discovered how much lacks, and the number of yards in hand, this (shortage) shall be deducted from the Invoice of value of the bolts, comparing the price of each yard with that which shall be fixed by the cost of the other bolts of the same quality. The same (precaution) must be practiced with all the other goods which show variation; all those measured must be noted together, and marked by the Officers and Proxies, and (thus) shall be the tariff of retail prices upon cloths and goods which show shrinkage. To cover loss in grains and articles for rations, one “bit\*” shall be added to the price of each *fanega* ( $1\frac{1}{2}$  bushels) of Corn, Beans, Peas and Lentils; one “bit” to the price of each *arroba* (25 lbs.) of Lard and Rice; two “bits” to that of each *arroba* of *Panocha*. Wherewith the anticipated shrinkage and variations shall be at the charge of the Paymaster, as shall those resulting from carelessness in storage and care of whatever is entrusted to him.

## SEVENTH TITLE

### *Powder.*

1. There must be scrupulous observance of the provisions of Articles 1, 2, 3 and 5 of this Title, in the Royal Regulations; altering

---

\* $12\frac{1}{2}$  cents.

Art. 4, in that the store of Powder and Ball in each Post must amount to 16 pounds per man; in view of the difficulty and risk of bringing them from Mexico, where must be made up any shortage shown in the special account which must be kept of the consumption of stores. This being approved by the Governor, and on his request, it shall be supplied by the Factory in said Capital, the Most Excellent Sir Viceroy deigning to assign it.

### EIGHTH TITLE

#### *Conferment of Positions.*

---

1. Under the rules established by the Royal Regulations under this Title, in case of vacancy in the Company of the Post of Loreto, the lieutenancy or sublieutenancy of the remaining (Posts) of the Peninsula, the Governor shall propose [names for] the aforesaid positions, directing his nominations to the Sir General Commanding.

2. To provide a Lieutenant or Ensign for the Company of Loreto, the Captain shall propose three persons, having the necessary qualifications and who are actually in service; passing the nominations to the Governor, and the latter to the Sir General Commanding, with his approval or remarks.

3. To fill vacant Sergeancies, the Captain shall make similar nominations; as shall the Lieutenants in the remaining Posts where there is no Captain (and where the Lieutenants must in this and other matters discharge the functions of Company Commanders). [The nominations shall be] from among those who have most distinguished themselves for good conduct and bravery; taking care, so far as possible, that they shall know how to read and write. The Governor shall approve the one who seems to him fitting. Corporals shall be named by the Captain and by Lieutenants who command a Post, on their own account; with the difference that they must hand up the nomination to the Governor for his approval.

### NINTH TITLE

#### *Monthly Reviews.*

---

1. The Commander of each Post shall review the Company monthly, and shall draw up an abstract, with the names of Officers, Sergeants, Corporals, Soldiers, Surgeon and other dependents. For those present at the review he shall write in the margin a P.; the occupation of each employé; and for vacancies among employés or men a V. Vacancies of the past month which have been filled shall be indicated by a note in said abstract. If the place was that of an Officer, it shall carry the date of the Commanding General's approval, and Certificate signed by all the Officers, as to date of taking possession. If of Chaplain, Sergeant or Corporal, it shall carry merely

the Certificate. And if of a Soldier, it shall copy the record of enlistment, which must be written in the Roster; and the ten years' papers which must be given each man on enlistment.

2. To adjust departures, there shall be no variation from the provisions of the Royal Regulations under this Title, except such departures as are verified by the retirement of Soldiers. Seeing that the vast distance of this Peninsula does not permit that other departures be verified until the return of the vessels which arrive at the Posts with the Allowance, and from whose crews substitutes are sought, this being the only means available in these Posts; consequently this consideration makes binding upon the Reviews the Discharge papers of those who have finished their service, or for other cause are deemed proper to be retired from their Companies. Wherefore, having first secured leave from the Governor, the abstract shall give the date thereof, and the Officers shall certify the day on which the retirement took place, except on occasions when the Governor was present.

3. As it is proper to credit as an Extra to the Allowance of the Post of Loreto that of its small Department of Marine, the individuals of the latter shall be included monthly in the abstract of review, separate from, and following, the Company; observing with them respectively the formalities hereinbefore set forth for the registering of the places in the Roster, and noting the vacancies and replacements of Soldiers. With this difference, that the Captain may, of his own authority, give leave of absence to the Sailors, according to the needs of the service.

4. The Reviews must be held in all Posts from the 1st to the 4th of each month. The original abstract must remain in each Post; but two copies shall be taken with the same formalities, and these shall be forwarded from Loreto and San Diego at the first opportunity; and from the other Posts monthly.

## TENTH TITLE

### *Behavior toward hostile or neutral Indians.*

1. Since the Peninsula is in peace and quiet; and its numerous Gentiles [Indians], (by virtue of the mildness of the punishments visited upon those that in different localities made disturbances causing hostilities and deaths; along with the good treatment, humanness and gentleness experienced by the prisoners) remain friendly, so that communication with the Posts and other settlements is kept open; therefore there should be no change in the rules formerly established according to those defined by the Royal Regulations under this Title. These must be obeyed exactly in all their parts, varying only according to circumstances that may arise.



## ELEVENTH TITLE

*Functions of the Governor as Inspector of Posts for the Peninsula.*

1. These shall conform wholly, with respect to the Government Posts, to those exercised by the Commanding Post-Inspector of the Frontier, as set forth in Title 12 of the Royal Regulations. The only variation is that the Post of Loreto should be reviewed every second year, because of its enormous distance and the roughness of the intervening road. Wherefore—and because he has to discharge the other duties of Government—he shall be furnished with an Aide, with the rank of Captain. In view of the expenses and constant journeys he has to make for the Reviews and other duties to which he may be commissioned, if his appointment be approved, I\* fix his annual salary at \$2000.

## TWELFTH TITLE

*Functions and powers of the Captain and other Officers, Sergeants, Corporals and Soldiers.*

1. These shall be in every respect equal to those defined for each class under Title 13 of the Royal Regulations; except the variation hereinbefore provided in case of Lieutenants Commanding Companies and Posts in the new settlements.

## THIRTEENTH TITLE

*Obligations, appointment and Instruction of Paymasters.*

1. The first obligation of the Official Paymaster is to prove himself worthy the election and confidence shown by his Company in entrusting to him the management, custody and distribution of its interests; proceeding in all things with the cleanness and honor inseparable from his profession.

2. He shall keep the general accounts of debit and credit with the utmost clearness, accuracy and order, as is provided; so that at the end of the year, (when his accounts shall have been examined and approved by the Captain in the Post of Loreto, and, in the other Posts, which have no captain, supervised by those Officers who are not Paymasters) they may be approved also by the Governor.

3. Likewise he shall keep, with the same detail and order the private account of each individual, informing himself frequently as to those of the soldiers, in order to reduce the distributions made in the general and mid-year advances to the balance of each one's account; so that (except the recruits) no one shall receive more than is due him; preferring, in the delivery, the articles of uniform, arms and horse-trappings necessary for the weekly Reviews which must be passed.

4. Whenever any Soldier shall die or be furloughed, in view of the urgency of buying his mounts and Equipment to supply the

---

\*De Neve.

Recruit who is to take his place, or to fill the shortage of others, after their just appraisement (supervised by his heirs, if present) the Paymaster shall take these articles and distribute them (in the order set for him by the Company Commander) at the same price at which he received them; following the same method in case of taking them for the fund, to settle what is owing the dead, retired or furloughed man.

5. Under the prohibition and penalty set forth in Art. 7, Title 14 of the Royal Regulations, Paymasters shall not be allowed to charge the Soldier (in supplying victuals, uniform and other articles) more than the first cost given by the respective Invoices, with no other increase of price than is expressed in the Tariff, and deduced by the operation provided in Art. 4, Title 6 of these Regulations. The penalty prescribed in said Title equally includes any culpable loss or embezzlement of funds.

6. Paymasters shall keep in correspondence with the Agent of the Peninsula and Commissary of San Blas, who will send them by the directest way the corresponding remittances, invoices and bills of lading. It shall be the care of the Agent to ask for the settlements which must be made out annually by the Royal Officers of the Treasury of Mexico, conformably to the abstracts of Review for each Post; and these he shall direct to the Paymasters who must archive them with the general abstracts, and make use of them for guidance as to the sums which may be received from year to year on account, or the balance left over.

7. It being for the present indispensable that Horses and Mules be transported from Sonora to maintain in effective state the Companies of these Posts, the corresponding superior order having been obtained, the necessary sum for their purchase shall be estimated ahead; and upon the arrival and distribution of saddle-animals as destined for each Company, according to their number, quality and first-cost price, the Paymasters shall make their receipts. These must be passed to the Governor, that they may be directed by his hand to the Royal Officers of the Treasury in Mexico, that the proper charge may be made. It being understood that the animals which may die, be lost or become worthless after they have been delivered in the Peninsula, shall have their value charged pro rata upon the remaining animals, which shall be distributed at the resulting prices.

8. Although these Paymasters are not to make expenditures to supply victuals, clothing and other articles, being bound to the costs, responsibility and safe-keeping of the stores and their distribution at retail, the keeping of general and private accounts of the Troops and employees of the Post, shall discount to the Captain, Officers, Surgeon, Sergeant, Corporals, Soldiers and employes 2 per cent. for the service and costs of commission.

9. Whenever it may be necessary to name a Paymaster in the Post of Loreto, in consideration of there being no Chaplain in it or in the other Posts of the Peninsula, the lack of this vote shall be supplied by a second Proxy of the Company. Since 32 of its 44 men are occupied in the Detachments of the Real of Santa Anna of the South and the frontier of the North, the Captain shall provide, with proper announcement, that the Sergeants, Corporals and Soldiers, collectively in their stations, nominate two Proxies for the Company from among themselves. This accomplished, the votes shall be sent in writing by the Individuals of each rank, direct to the Captain. He shall cause the same course to be followed by the troops present in Garrison, with assistance of the Master of the Sloop and the Naval Officers of the Department of Marine, who are to vote for a Member of the Company. And when it is seen who have received the plurality of the votes, if they are stationed with the Detachments they shall be relieved, that they may transfer themselves to the Post, the Captain ordering the designated Officer on the Frontier to remit his vote sealed. As soon as this is done, he shall summon to his house his Subaltern Officer and the Proxies of the Company. The vote of the absent Officer having been opened and seen in its proper turn; one of these subaltern officers, and no other, will stand named as Paymaster.

10. If of the five votes there be two for one person and three for another the two who were of the contrary verdict must conform and assume their share of the responsibility, the same as if they had voted for the person elected.

11. In the Posts of the new Settlements in which there are but two Subaltern Officers, the naming of the two Proxies in each Company shall proceed in the same method with the same notice as is already provided. This done, the Commander shall convoke the Ensign and Proxies to name one of said Officers, and no other, for Paymaster. In case the four votes be for one person, the election shall be consummated, he who was opposed being bound to conform and assume responsibility, the same as if he had voted in that person's favor. In case there are two votes for each person, the Governor shall decide.

12. As soon as the election is perfected, the Appointment and Authorization shall be committed to writing, whereof, a copy must be taken to be rendered to the Governor. Every three years there shall be nomination anew for Official Paymaster, whether to reelect the incumbent or to appoint someone else.

13. Consequent upon the aforesaid first appointments, the Commissary of the Post of Loreto and the Storekeepers of the Posts of San Diego, Monterey and San Francisco shall make delivery to the respective Paymasters, by formal Inventories, of all the stuffs, victuals and goods on hand in the storehouses, with

proper distinction of qualities, measure, weight and values on prices of first cost, and the sum total. In these must not be included the goods which have not been distributed to the Troops and Employes (Settlers included) since of these a separate Inventory must be drawn up, showing clearly, as far as possible, their condition and value; which thus performed, shall remain deposited in the power of the Paymaster until such time as, giving account to the Superior Government with said Inventory, the expenditure which should be devoted to this item shall be determined.

14. Since the Pack Mules with all that belongs to their trap-pings, the tools for Carpentry, Smithing and other\* materials are to remain for the benefit of the Posts and Companies, which are responsible for their condition, as is already provided for the due faithfulness, the delivery of said utensils, cargo Mules, harness, panniers, pack-saddles and other gear shall proceed (after they have been appraised.) This, with the due specification of the condition, quality and value of each article, must be done by the Experts to be named for this purpose by the Post Commander, who must superintend the delivery and valuation, signing with the Experts and Paymasters, Commissary or Store-keeper, the vouchers which must be filed with the Inventory.

15. As there is on hand at the Post of Monterey a Herd of Cattle which at present exceeds 500 head of all ages, and another herd of Mares which counts up over 170 head, and about 250 head of sheep and goats, with some droves of Burros and Pigs; and in the Post of San Francisco there are 124 head of Cattle, all belonging to the Royal Exchequer, these must be included in the first Inventory of delivery, itemizing the kinds and ages of the cattle and the Mare-herd. This is the duty of the Paymasters, who, under the orders of the Governor, shall carefully oversee the herding and care of said Herds, their increase, their distribution to Settlers as pay or reimbursement; and with care in breeding shall be kept the outgo of Colts, Bulls, Calves, Sheep, Geldings, Goats, Pigs and of the others that because old or barren should be constantly used up. The reckoning of these Herds shall be kept, to give annual account of their produce and increase to the Royal Exchequer, as hereinafter set forth.

16. The Commissary of Loreto and Store-keeper of the other Posts must so make up their accounts that hereafter the Paymasters be not responsible to the Royal Tribunal and Court of Accounts for the results of preceding accounts. Consequently no other document should remain in their possession except a copy of the last settlement or account, and the Inventories of the turning over. And it shall be exclusively the duty of each Paymaster, and part of the

---

\*"Obras" seems to be a misprint for "otras."



pay of his respective Allowances, the sum in which the value of the chattels distributed and chargeable to the Troops, Employes and Settlers exceeds the value of his debits to the total of balances (payable from the year 1774, inclusive, to the day of giving possession) which must be paid in full to those Interested. But if, on the other hand, the item of balances exceeds that of debits and chattels, the residue shall be in favor of the Paymaster, and must be credited to him by the Royal Treasury of Mexico in the first settlement had with him, subtracting the respective interest.

17. Whereas in the transportation of the annual remittances there occur (caused by the heat in the Holds of the vessels, and by other incidents) losses, damage and leakage—principally in the Lard, Sugar and Liquids—the delivery should be made to the entire satisfaction of the Paymaster, weighing and measuring the articles and he shall separate from the aforesaid that which is found proper. In case any bale, tierce or box turns out to be damaged, broken or in bad condition, to determine if it is spoiled partially or entirely, he shall proceed with his formal inspection on board the Vessel, with the superintendence of its Captain and of the Post Commander; checking by the Invoice the goods and articles it contains. This done, the said officers shall certify the deterioration or loss which may have been caused by the damage or other incident which must be specified. Having done thus, the Paymaster shall disembark and take charge of said Certification, which must be placed head by head upon the appraisement lists that are to be made in the Post under the supervision of the Captain and subaltern Officers, previous to the appointment of experts by the Commander. Comparing the prices and the Invoice with the damage caused, (specifying the damage and the goods or articles affected by it), there shall be shown the just value to which the goods are reduced; and upon this valuation, without change, they must be distributed and charged to the Troops. The Paymaster shall charge the present net value of the damaged goods and articles, as well as of those not damaged, as fixed by the official inquiry; and leaving a copy thereof certified by the Officers in the Post, the Paymaster shall forward the original documents to the agent, whereby to prove and credit the loss.

18. To avoid the confusion arising from the delivery and measuring of the Corn and Beans in the Holds or Storerooms of the Vessel, wherein there inevitably must follow shrinkage to the person delivering, if he gives good measure—since the rolling of the vessel shakes down the grain in the measure—or to the receiver, because scant measure is given, or because the grain is spilled at the time of emptying the measure into the bags, on account of the haste and inconvenience with which this is done (and to this the Storekeepers attribute a large part of the shrinkage); to shun such difficulties henceforth, the measuring of grain shall be done ashore,

either on the Beach or in the Posts near the landing place, as has always been done at Loreto, and sometimes at Monterey, with little or no loss, while large losses were suffered under the contrary practice.

19. The Paymasters shall stipulate as well the Bales, Tierces and Boxes forwarded from Mexico as the provisions and goods which arrive from San Blas, at the ends of the Bills of Lading, noting the shortages, losses or leakages discovered at the delivery, and the amount received of each Grain, Flour and article of provision. These documents, signed by the Paymaster, shall be delivered by the Person who comes in charge of the shipment, by whom must be signed, in the Bills of Lading that are sent in duplicate from the Commisariat of San Blas, the declaration of the delivery made in each branch or kind of goods contained in the Bills of Lading themselves, which must remain in keeping of the Paymaster to attest his receipt. To this end he should forward them (retaining a Copy certified by the Officers of the Company) to the Agent of the Peninsula that it be exhibited wherein they tally, and that from them may be made the due receipt, seeing that the charge entered against the Allowance was made according to the gross amount of the Invoices, on account of the unavoidable delays in the arrival of these vouchers.

20. Whereas, it has been for a few years the rule to make delivery of the general consignment to the Boatswains of the Vessels, and they, through lack of intelligence and of the proper assistance on board, cause delays in impressing the delivery upon their memories, henceforth the one who receives should be an Officer, it is expedient to change the practice; and if the Commander of the Vessel is not supercargo, the Pilot should be, as he has more fitness and responsibility for said commission.

21. Whereas, it has been enacted that the Captain of the Post of Loreto, as Lieutenant-Governor, give the Licenses to the Cruisers to engage in the pearl fisheries on that Coast and its contiguous islands, regulating the amount which each Canoe must pay in Fifths [the Royal share] which sum is now fixed at \$100; in view of the scarcity to which the deposits have come, for which reason years have passed in which not a single pearl diver entered, and even now there are not more than two or three Canoes that do; and this sum, by order of said Captain, has been collected by the Commissary who has turned it over to the Royal Exchequer with the proceeds of the sale of Salt and some Bulls bought by the Troops and Citizens of the Mining Camp of Santa Anna; and whereas this practice should be followed henceforth by the Paymasters, these shall enter, each year, the proceeds of these branches, and others pertaining to the Royal Exchequer, in a separate account, supervised by the Captain. In this shall be noted the costs of careenings, overhaulings and

masts for the Sloop and Launches of the Department; and this, with the corresponding vouchers of debit and credit, shall be sent to the Agent of the Peninsula to be presented in the Royal Court of Claims, for the charges or rebates which shall make it tally with the Allowance.

22. The Paymasters of Monterey and San Francisco respectively must make up annually a debit and credit account of the Herds in their charge, itemized by kinds, showing the increase of numbers and the proceeds in dollars for those sold during the year, for which purpose they will follow the formula which will go at the end of these instructions.

23. In the same manner it shall be the duty of the Paymaster of a Post in whose vicinity or boundaries a new Pueblo of civilized People may be founded, to make a register and open an account with the Settlers, take charge of, and give proper vouchers for, the sums that were supplied them in Sonora to outfit them; likewise of the herds or tools that are sent from other Posts for the same purpose; to credit them with their respective property from the day of their arrival, and verify the collection of the subsidy which may be due each Settler and should be discounted for him; making an annual account, in which, with due clearness and attestation, shall be given the expenditures and receipts pertaining to the Royal Exchequer.

24. The registration which the Paymaster must make out for every Settler shall give his name, quality, condition, age, nationality, and the Pueblo in which he is enrolled as a citizen; and with equal detail shall give the name, quality and age of his wife, sons and daughters; the day, month and year in which he entered upon the enjoyment of the salary and rations allotted to each one, following in this part the provisions to be made in the Instructions for Settlement, when feasible under the conditions on which those who come from Sonora to populate these Settlements are registered.

25. The entry of a new Settler and the credit of his property in the private account which has been provided for, shall tally with the Order which must first be had from the Governor, and the copy of the record of registration. The losses by death shall be verified by a copy of the record of interments; and stopping of pay or rations due each year shall be indicated in the record by noting separately the remainder that from one to another the individual has received in the year, as the proof will be deduced from the respective register since a copy of the register must always accompany the first account.

26. In the two first years the value of the tools they have received must be discounted to the Settlers; and in the following three years payment shall be made for all the other things supplied

them for the outfitting of their labors, according to the provisions to be made in the corresponding Instructions.

27. The Corn, Brown Beans, Peas and Lentils produced by the harvest of the Pueblo (the citizens reserving what is necessary for their subsistence and planting) have not and cannot for the present be given, other use than to supply the Posts. Accordingly the Paymasters shall buy these grains at the prices now fixed or those that may be fixed hereafter, bearing in mind that they have to be transported upon the Packbeasts of the Posts.

28. If in the Post to which a Pueblo is added there be on hand any herd belonging to the Royal Exchequer, its account shall be added to that of the Settlement; in which the Paymaster shall make the corresponding charge of the proceeds of the animals distributed, and likewise shall embrace in it (with the proper attestation) the proceeds of whatsoever other article pertains to said Royal Exchequer. Bearing in mind that all the Esmiquilpa sacks sent up from San Blas (except those for flour, which are included in the value of each tercio, and the loads of sacks distributed to the troops on account), as well as the Barrels, must be returned from year to year, by this means to avoid the repeated expense of them; as to the wraps and mattings on bales which come from Mexico, as well as the boxes, pains shall be taken to get some benefit from those that arrive in good condition; and those which by being rotten or broken have no use, like those headed with hide, shall be considered a legitimate expense on the Royal Exchequer. That which turns out thus shall be attested with a Certification signed by the Officers who supervise the Inventory of stock on hand at the end of the year, which is to be attached to the aforesaid private account. This must be sent annually to the Governor; and being examined, compared and approved by him, shall be forwarded to the Royal Officers of the Treasury of Mexico, that by it they may credit the expenditures pertaining to the Paymaster.

### FORMULARY

#### DEBIT AND CREDIT ACCOUNT OF THE FLOCKS WHICH

*are on hand in the Post of San Carlos de Monterey belonging to the Royal Exchequer, entrusted to my charge as Company Paymaster; in which, by kinds, I present under their respective accounts the charge entered from the Inventory of delivery, the increase of the present year, the distribution of animals, the proceeds thereof in dollars, the amount on hand and increase at the end of December, 1780.*



## ACCOUNT OF MARES &amp; COLTS.

	Head	Dollars
First: Credit 190 head, which was distinguished by classes in the Inventory of delivery, remain on hand .....	190	
Debit 32 colts of the increase of the present year...	32	
Debit 38 fillies of the same crop .....	38	
	<hr/> 260	

*Credit by kind, and proceeds in dollars.*

Credit 20 Colts, fit for breaking, distributed among the Company at \$6 each .....	20	\$120
Credit 10 3-year-old Colts, sold to the Paymaster of the Post of San Francisco at the same price....	10	\$ 60
Credit 2 Mares that died, whose brands were ex- hibited and burned .....	2	
	<hr/> 32	
	Debit .....	260

On hand the last of December .....	228	
On hand the year before .....	190	
	<hr/>	
Increase and proceeds this year .....	38	\$1

## ACCOUNT OF CATTLE HERD.

	Head.
Debit 570 head, which, by classes as per Inventory were on hand .....	570
Debit 83 bull calves of the increase of the present year	83
Debit 106 Heifer calves of said increase .....	106
	<hr/> 779

*Credit by kinds and proceeds in dollars.*

Credit 46 four-year-old steers, sent to Don N....., Paymaster of ....., to distribute to settlers, of which charge there remains to be entered their amount at \$6 per head, to the Royal Exchequer	46	276
Credit 10 Bulls, which were distributed to the Troops at \$5 .....	10	50
Credit 4 Cows, which were sold as aged at \$6 each	4	24
Credit 2 Bulls which were injured and their meat was distributed in 20 rations, each one, at 25c per ration .....	2	10

Credit 3 Bull Calves and 2 Heifer Calves which the wolves killed .....	5	
	<hr/>	
<i>Credit</i> .....	67	
<i>Debit</i> .....	759	
	<hr/>	
On hand the last of December .....	692	
Amount on hand last year was .....	570	
	<hr/>	
Increase and proceeds the present year is.....	122	360
	<hr/>	<hr/>

The accounts of the other Herds shall follow in this order, followed by a summary of the amounts they brought in dollars, to show their total. Against this shall be credited the items realized from the Herds given out to Settlers, satisfaction for which should be made by another Paymaster, and the only items of cost which should be offered for the wages of the shepherd and 50 or 75 pounds\* of Puebla hay which is to be asked for one or the other years, where-with subtracting the credit from the debit account, there will be shown how it stands against him who presents the account. And balancing at the bottom the total debit and distribution of dollars, he shall date and sign it.

#### FOURTEENTH TITLE

##### *Political Government and Instructions for Settlement.*

1. Since the most important object for the fulfillment of the pious intentions of our Lord the King, and to perpetuate his Majesty's dominion over the extensive territory embraced for more than 200 leagues by the new Settlements and respective Posts of San Diego, Monterey and San Francisco; to advance the conversion, and to make this so vast Country as useful as possible to the State—inhabited by innumerable Gentiles (except 1749 Christians of both sexes at the eight missions on the road between the first and the last Posts), erecting Pueblos [towns] of civilized people, who, being assembled, shall encourage tilling, planting and stockraising, and in succession the other branches of industry, so that in the course of a few years their produce may suffice to supply the Post-Garrisons with victuals and horses, thus making up for the distance of transportation [from Mexico], risks and losses at which these things are brought by the Royal Exchequer, with which fit idea the Pueblo of San José is already founded and settled, and the building of another is determined upon, for which Settlers and their families must come from the Province of Sonora and Sinaloa; whose progressive increase, and

---

\*An arroba is 25 pounds.

that of the families of the Troops will provide for the establishing of other settlements and for Recruits for the Post Companies, thus freeing the Royal Treasury from the forced costs which it is now under to meet these ends; and it is convenient to establish regulations which shall certainly bring this about, the following instructions shall be observed.\*

2. Since, until now, there were assigned to each Settler his rations, \$120 in each of the two first years, and in the three years following the rations only, fixed at  $17\frac{3}{4}$  cents a day, exempt; hereafter they shall enjoy as an equivalent \$116.37 $\frac{1}{2}$  in each of the two first years, it being understood that the rations are included in this amount; and for the rations in the three years following, \$60 in each. Whereby the foregoing emolument is advantageously replaced, subtracting the increase with which it was paid and reduction with which have been issued the Rations. These goods, and others shall be received at cost as soon as these Regulations shall be approved and declared in force. Warning is given that the said five years' time is to be counted for their prerogatives from the day of actual giving possession of the House-Lots and Fields to be given out to each Settler, as will be hereinafter set forth; the time between registration and taking possession, to run under the conditions of Contracts; and to avoid this cost it shall be so arranged that as soon as new Settlers arrive they shall be located and given said Possession without delay.

3. To each Settler and to the common fund of the Pueblo must be given (subject to replacing in the case of Mules and Horses, which may be given and received, and to payment in the case of other herds, cattle and sheep under the just prices which shall be fixed, and the tools at cost, as is ordained) two Mares, two Cows with one Calf, two Ewes, and two she-Goats, all pregnant; and one yoke of Oxen or Bullocks, one Colter, one Hoe, one Spade, one Ax, and one Sickle, one Field-knife, one Lance, one Musket and one Dagger, two Horses and one cargo Mule. Likewise and to the common charge, shall be given sufficient fathers for the number of head of stock in each kind in the whole community; one master-Burro, one common one and three she-Burros, one Boar and three Sows, one Forge fitted with an anvil and other necessary belongings, six Crowbars, six iron Spades and the necessary tools for Carpentry and Wagonmaking.

4. The building-lots granted to the new Settlers must be fixed by the Government as to location and size according to the extent of land where the new Pueblos may be established. So that a plaza [public square] and streets shall be left as provided by the Laws of the Realm; and correspondingly shall be marked out sufficient Room

\*This is kept unsplit, as a typical De Neve sentence. Elsewhere his breathless flights are cut into sections. Had he been no more governor than rhetorician the Province would have died young.

for the Pueblo to grow, and Pastures, with the suitable arable lands for Individuals.

5. Each allotment of Fields, both for irrigation and for dependence on the rainfall, shall be 200 *varas* [550 feet] long and 200 wide, this being the area ordinarily taken by one *fanega* [1½ bushels] of Corn in sowing. The allotment to be made of said Fields, as of the Building-Lots, in the name of our Lord the King, to the new Settlers, shall be made by the Government equitably in proportion to the amount of land which can be irrigated; so that, after first making the proper demarcation, and reserving vacant the fourth part of the fields counting the number of Settlers, if they will tally, there shall be allotted to each Settler two Fields of irrigable land and two more of dry. And of the royal lands shall be set aside such as is deemed proper for individuals of the Pueblo, and of the remainder grants shall be made by the Governor in the name of His Majesty to those who come newly to settle; and also of the respective Building-lots. Particularly to the soldiers who, by having served the time of their enlistment, or because of advanced age, are retired from the Service; as also to the families of those who die. These shall carry on their farming by means of the funds each should have, without assistance from the Royal Exchequer in salary, rations or live-stock, this favor being limited to those who with that provision emigrated from their own country to colonize this one.

6. The houses erected upon the Lots granted and set aside to the new Settlers, and the Fields embraced in their respective grants, shall be an inheritance in perpetuity to their sons and descendants, or daughters who marry useful Settlers and have no allotment of Fields for themselves; all such persons to comply with the conditions which will be set forth in these Instructions. And that the sons of the possessors of these grants may have the obedience and respect they owe their parents, the latter shall be free and empowered, if they have two or more sons, to choose which one they will (being secular and lay) for heir of their Houses and Fields. And likewise they shall be able to dispose that these fields be divided among the children—but not that one single Field be divided, for the fields must be, all and each, indivisible and inalienable forever.

7. Neither shall the Settlers nor their heirs be able to place a quitrent, entail, bond, mortgage nor other incumbrance whatsoever (though it be for a pious cause) upon the House and Fields granted to them; and if anyone shall act contrary to this just prohibition, he shall be irredeemably deprived of the property, and for the same act his endowment shall be given to such other Settler as is useful and obedient.

8. To maintain their herds the new Settlers shall enjoy the common privileges of water and pasturage, firewood and lumber from



the Outer Lands, Forests and Pasture to be assigned according to Law to each new Pueblo. Each shall also have exclusively the grazing of his own lands; but on condition that—as he should have and breed all kinds of livestock, large and small, and it is impossible that each should by himself care for the few head consigned to him for a start, since that would lead to neglect of his crops and public duties—for the present the goats and sheep of the community should be herded together, the pay of the Shepherd being a common charge; and for rounding up the cattle and horses and bringing them to the corral, as Mares and she-burros, there should be two mounted Settlers appointed daily (or as often as seems best) from the community. Thus the herds will be cared for in their kinds, avoiding the risk of their being “lifted,” and the fields and other duties of the community being attended to. Each individual shall mark his sheep and goats and brand his horses and cattle, for which the registers of branding-irons will be given without any charge. Warning being given that henceforth no Settler shall have over fifty head of each kind of stock; in order that the usefulness of the herds be distributed among all, and that the real wealth of the Pueblos be not monopolized among a few citizens.

9. The new Settlers shall be exempt and free for the term of five years from paying tithes or any other tax on the fruits and produce brought them by the lands and herds with which they are furnished; on conditions that in the first year from the day they are allotted their Lots and Fields they shall build their houses as best they may, and dwell in them; shall open the proper ditches for the irrigation of their lands, placing on their boundary lines, instead of landmarks, useful fruit or forest trees, at the rate of ten to the Field; and equally that they shall open the acequia or *zanja madre* [mother-ditch], build a reservoir and other public works necessary to benefit the crops. This should by preference be done in common; and at the common charge must be built the Royal Buildings within four years, and in the third year a bin, large and adequate, for a public granary, in which must be guarded the communal crops. This communal sowing at the rate of one *almud* [ $\frac{3}{4}$  of a bushel] of Corn per Citizen, must be made from the third year to the fifth, inclusive, in the land allotted to individuals of the Pueblo. All the work incidental thereto, up to storing the crops in the Public Granary, is to be done by the community, for whose exclusive benefit it shall serve. To regulate and increase this item, the Ordinances will be drawn up, in due time, and must be observed.

10. After the five years, they shall pay tithes to His Majesty, to be applied as may be his Royal pleasure; since they pertain wholly to him, not only by the absolute Royal Patronage which he has in these his dominions, but also as tithes from new broken lands, as they are to be produced in lands till now uncultivated and abandoned

and now about to be made fruitful at the cost of the great expenditures made by the Royal Exchequer.

When the said term of five years is past, in recognition of the direct and supreme dominion which pertains to the Sovereign, the new Settlers and their descendants shall pay half a *fanega* of Corn per irrigated Field; and for their own benefit it will be an indispensable obligation upon all in common to repair the irrigating-ditch, reservoir, sewers and other public works of their Pueblo—including the Church.

11. When the droves of pigs and burros shall have multiplied, the necessary Burros having been adopted for service of the Mares, if the division of each of the two kinds be feasible, said division shall be made, by common consent of the Settlers, among themselves, as equitably as possible so that from the first herd each Citizen have to head, a male and a female. This done the animals shall be marked and branded by their owners.

12. Within the aforesaid five years the new Settlers are all obliged to have two yokes of Oxen, two plows, two plowshares or points to cultivate the earth, two hoes, with the other necessary tools for farming. Their houses must be entirely finished within the first three years, and furnished with six Hens and a Rooster. It is absolutely prohibited that within the fixed term of five years Settlers shall dispose, by sale, exchange or other pretext, or kill any animal of those supplied them or of those of their own raising—except the sheep and goats, which at four years must be crossed (since otherwise they die); and in consequence those of this age may be disposed of at the owner's will. But not the younger ones; under penalty for him who disobeys this provision (which is for his own good and the increase of his belongings) of being by the very act deprived for one year of his rations. And he who howsoever receives one or more head of said flocks within said period, in whatever state or condition, shall be obliged to give them back.

13. On completion of the term of five years—preserving the breed of all the kinds (except pigs and burros, of which each Settler will be obliged to keep but one Sow and one Burro or she-Burro) having their farms equipped with the yokes of Oxen or Bullocks indicated, being provided with a cargo Mule and the necessary Horses—the settlers shall be at liberty to sell the Bulls, Bullocks, Colts or Horses, Burros, wethers, gelding goats, pigs and Sows. It being forbidden to kill a Cow unless she is old or barren; and Ewes and She-Goats under three years old; or to sell Mares or good breeders until such time as each Settler shall possess 15 Mares and one Stallion, 15 Cows and one Bull, 12 Ewes and one Ram, and the 10 She-goats with one Male.

14. It shall be forbidden to all Settlers or Citizens to sell Colt, Horse, Mule or Stud, or to exchange said beasts, except among them-

selves, being provided with those that are necessary, since the remainder are destined only for spare Mounts for the Troops of the Posts, and must be paid for at the just prices which shall be fixed (except all Horses and Mules of private ownership in the Pueblos themselves) under a fine of \$20 which shall be collected from whatsoever person shall disobey this law for every head of which he shall make other disposal than has been stated, which shall be applied half to the accuser and half to the public expenses.

15. The Maize, Beans, Peas and Lentils which are harvested in the Pueblos (the Citizens reserving what will be necessary for their subsistence and planting) shall be bought and paid for in cash at the prices which are established, or henceforth shall be established, for the provision of the Posts; and of its value the prudent discounts which shall seem proper shall be made to every Settler, to reimburse the Royal Treasury for the amount which for his equipment he has been supplied in coin, riding beasts, flocks, tools, seeds and other effects, so that in the five first years the pay shall be completed.

16. Every Settler and Citizen head of family to whom has been granted, or in the future shall be granted, Building Lots or Fields and their successors, shall be obliged to keep themselves equipped with two horses, a saddle complete, firelock and other arms which are mentioned, and must be furnished them at cost that they may defend their respective districts, and assist, without abandoning their first obligation, where with grave urgency they shall be ordered by the Governor.

17. Of the grants of the Building lots, Lands and Waters conceded to the new Settlers, or Citizens to whom such may be granted in the future, the corresponding patents shall be delivered by the Governor or Commissioner named for this purpose, whereof record must be kept (and of the registers of brands) in the general book of the settlement which must be made up and guarded in the Archives of the Government, in which will be put head by head a copy of these Instructions.

18. And it being essential to the good government of the Pueblos, administration of Justice, direction of the public works, division of the "turns" of water, and to fulfill carefully the accomplishment of whatever has been provided in these Instructions, the Pueblos shall be given, in proportion to their number of inhabitants, alcaldes of the 1st instance, and other officials of the Council yearly. These shall be appointed by the Governor the first two years; and in the following years they shall nominate by themselves and from themselves the public officials that shall have been arranged for. These elections must pass for their confirmation to the Governor, by whom said nomination shall be continued in the three following years if he deems it expedient.

FIFTEENTH TITLE  
*Erection of New "Reductions"*

Since after the location of the three Reductions\* which are determined upon for the channel of Santa Barbara, the Demarcation will be complete which has ruled from South to North the establishment of the eight previously founded on the road which leads from the Post of San Diego to that at Monterrey, and from this to the one of San Francisco; and consequently communication between the new Establishments is facilitated, as the eleven Missions and Posts are from thirteen to twenty leagues distant from one another (excepting the interval from San Antonio to San Luis, and from San Juan Capistrano to San Gabriel, which is reckoned at twenty-five leagues) it is of the greatest importance for advancing the conversion of the numerous Gentiles which inhabit this part of the Peninsula to change the establishment of the new Reductions to the opposite directions; proportioning them as the site will permit (in which must be sought the necessary qualities) in such a manner that each one of those which shall be in the future (and except one or two, the remainder shall be to the East) shall be at a distance of fourteen to twenty leagues from two of the old Reductions. By this means they will fill the gaps which are now between the old ones, will girdle the Rancherias [Indian villages] of the Gentiles, will increase Christianity markedly, and will explore the country.

2. It being understood that the line of the aforesaid Establishments is more than 200 leagues long from Monterey, while the width of the country is unknown (but is presumed to be as great as the length, or greater, since its greatest breadth is counted by thousands of leagues) it is consequently made imperative to increase the number of Reductions in proportion to the vastness of the country occupied, and although this must be carried out in the succession and order aforesaid, as fast as the older establishments shall be fully secure, decreasing the size of their Escorts that the remaining Troops may garrison the added establishments which must perforce be many and consequently will either be a considerable burden on the Treasury or will have to be erected slowly. To facilitate the matter it is advisable that (except the three Reductions which have to be located along the Santa Barbara channel, which are to have two Priests each, for the local reasons already set forth) the rest that may follow shall be established under the old practice in this and the other Interior Provinces, with only one Priest, but without change from the aid of \$400 a year which is assigned to each. In this sum, it must be understood, are to be included all the articles necessary to worship, as the temporal supplies for Mission work and farming in the \$1000 granted for each founding. It shall be permitted, for

---

\*Stations for converting Indians.



the more rapid increase of the new Missions, that the older ones help them with live-stock and seeds (given so as not to run short in any variety, as the Reverend Father President of the Missions shall direct) and with one Priest in the first year of establishment.

3. The eight Missions already established shall retain the two Priests that each now has; but vacancies by death or retirement shall not be filled until they are reduced to one Priest apiece. Excepting, the Missions which are close to posts; in which must be maintained two Priests, one being obliged to serve the Post as its Chaplain, until it shall be decided to provide the Posts with secular Chaplains. Consequently if a vacancy occurs in these Missions, or in those of the Channel, a Priest shall come from the Missions of San Juan Capistrano, San Gabriel, San Luis, San Antonio or Santa Clara to fill it—or, as aforesaid, to aid in founding new Missions.

4. In the same order as explained by the second Article, the Curacies administered by the Priests of the Order of Santo Domingo in Old [Lower] California shall be cut down to one Priest each. Excepting, the curacy of Loreto (in which two Priests must be kept; one of them as Chaplain of the Post) and the two most northerly curacies which now are or shall become the frontier Missions. And in all these, vacancies shall be filled from the second Priests of the other Missions, while they hold out. All shall be continued in the stipend of \$350 which is assigned to each. But the Prelates shall not have discretion, for any reason, to move the Priests from one Curacy to another, that the form of the Royal Patronage be preserved exactly and fully in all its parts and whatever case may arise.

5. It is understood that the Reduction of Our Lady of the Rosary at Viñadaco, and that of Santo Domingo, are the only ones yet founded that should be located according to the plan formerly agreed upon by the Royal Council of War and the Royal Exchequer, to cover the road from the Frontier to the Post of San Diego; as it is of the greatest importance to effect the erection of the remaining three, whereby communication between the old and new Establishments will be facilitated, this should be done with all possible promptness.

So much as I have set forth is that which the experience and knowledge acquired here, my zeal and love for the Royal Service, and the fulfillment of Superior Orders have dictated to me as most suitable for carrying out the Royal Resolution and the pious intentions of the King.

Royal Post of San Carlos of Monterey, June 1, 1779.

FELIPE DE NEVE.

*This is a copy of the original, which remains in the Secretary's office of the General Commandancy, in my charge. Whereto I certify. Arispe [Mex.] Feb. —, 1780.*

Antonio Bonilla.

The King has seen the Regulations for the government of the Province of Californias, drawn up by the Governor thereof, Don Felipe Neve, by virtue of the dispositions of the Royal Decree of March 21, 1775 of the which Your Excellency forwards testimony with your Letter No. 856 of Jan. 19 of this year. His Majesty has deigned to approve it, and of his decree I advise Your Excellency beforehand for your understanding and guidance. God guard Your Excellency many years. San Lorenzo, Oct. 24, 1781.

JOSEF DE GALVEZ,

Sir Viceroy of New Spain.  
Mexico, Mch. 26, 1782.

Let a certified copy of this Royal Decree be taken; and adding it to the Regulations to which it relates, in proof of its approval by His Majesty, let the corresponding copies be printed, and the necessary number be sent, with the respective Official Letters, to the Sir Commander-General of the Interior Provinces, to the Royal Officers of this Treasury, to the Royal Tribunal of Accounts, to the Agent Don Manuel Ramon de Goya, to the Commissary of the Department of San Blas, and to the Governor of the Californias for their understanding and fulfillment in the part that relates to each. The which supplying with copies shall be acknowledged in response to said Royal Decree.

MAYORGA.

*Copy of the original, whereof I certify. Mexico, third of April, One Thousand, Seven Hundred and Eighty-two.*

*Pedro Antonio de Cosio.*

# INSTRUCTIONS FOR THE RECRUITAL OF SOLDIERS AND SETTLERS FOR CALI- FORNIA—EXPEDITION OF 1781

Teodoro de Croix to Captain Fernando de Rivera y Moncada

Translated by MARION PARKS

PROVINCIAS INTERNAS TOM. 122 ARCHIVO GENERAL.

**I**NSTRUCTION to be observed by Captain Don Fernando de Rivera y Moncada in the Recruiting and equipment of *familias pobladoras*<sup>1</sup> and troops, assembling of mounts, and transportation of these, and further auxiliaries solicited by and granted to Colonel Don Phelipe Neve,<sup>2</sup> Governor of Californias, for the defense, benefit and conservation of the new and old establishments of that Peninsula.

## 1.

As it has been resolved to add two Subaltern Officers to the Presidio of Monterrey, one Alferez to that of San Francisco, the same to that of San Diego; and to name one Lieutenant, one Alferez and three Sergeants for the new Presidio of Santa Barbara, which is to be erected midway of the Channel of that name, I have sent provisional commissions as Lieutenants to the Alferezes Don Alonso Villaverde, and Don Diego Gonzalez; and as Alferezes to Sergeant Don Mariano Carrillo and to the Cadets Don Manuel Garcia Rovi [Ruiz] and Don Ramon Laso de la Vega, reserving decision on the commission for the officer lacking in this class pending advice from the Governor of the Province of Californias. By the same order, three Sergeants, two Corporals and twenty volunteer Soldiers of the Presidial Companies of this Province have been withdrawn so that they may continue their service in the said Province of Californias.

<sup>1</sup> Families of settlers.

<sup>2</sup> Old style of spelling has been retained throughout translation.

## 2.

Of the Cited Individuals two are in the Peninsula, and the rest must assemble on the first day of February next in San Miguel de Orcasitas, enjoying from the same day the salaries and supplies pertaining to their new employments, according to the Reglamento which governs in California.

## 3.

I select this rendezvous so that Captain Don Fernando de Rivera may appoint from the Officers, Sergeants and Corporals under his immediate command those whom he considers best fitted to aid him in the discharge of his duties.

## 4.

As, in discharging these duties, the principal *comisionado*<sup>3</sup> as well as those who will assist him, naturally will need some supply of money for their subsistence and marches, the former will request of me the amounts which he considers necessary for each one, in order that I may draw against the *Real Caja de los Alamos*<sup>4</sup> advances on the respective Salaries and Supplies.

## 5.

With these foregoing matters completed, Captain Rivera will despatch his people to the proper destinations, and having requested the Necessary Passports, will leave without delay to prosecute the recruit of Troops and families, and the assembling of Mules and Horses to the number specified in the attached documents numbers 1 and 2.

## 6.

Provisions for  
the Recruit

For the recruit and gathering of the remount, I do not limit the territory, but assign to the *Comisionado* the Provinces of Ostimuri, Sinaloa and the rest which extend to Guadalajara inclusive. In those which are not recognized by the *Comandancia General* as in my charge, he will proceed in virtue of permission which I have asked of His Excellency the Viceroy. Since the requirements for the recruit and for securing the

<sup>3</sup> Commissioner.

<sup>4</sup> Branch of the Royal Treasury at Los Alamos.



remount are distinct, I will make provision for them separately.

## 7.

Twenty-four families and 59 men are at present needed in Californias to erect a new Presidio and Town, but if this number is taken from the territories under my charge, there will be a scarcity [of people] what with the number which already has been taken out, and with the numbers which in future may be withdrawn, for the necessary repopulation of Sonora; which is equally to the interest of California, since the two Provinces should be united and have communication one with the other through the establishments on the Rivers Colorado and Gila. And while it is expedient for them and for those of the Peninsula to secure Recruits in these interior Territories, it is also certain that there are not enough people for the two enterprises [there] and that it will always be necessary to apply to the neighboring Provinces, commonly called *tierra afuera*,<sup>5</sup> in consideration of which the *Comisionado* must direct careful attention to the object of accomplishing an advantageous Recrual for California without greatly affecting the Population of Sonora and in everything possible acting in accordance with the points prescribed in the following Articles.

## 8.

In order to direct his course to the City of Guadalajara Captain Don Fernando de Rivera must travel perforce through all the Provinces subject to the Government of Sonora. In these he has a free hand to recruit the families as well as the Soldiers, but as he will not be able to complete the Recrual of Volunteers [there] it will be necessary that he conclude it in Guadalajara, and by this means the withdrawal of People from Sonora will be minimized.

## 9.

Three Sergeants, two Corporals and 20 Soldiers already have been taken from the Presidios of this frontier, and since their Places are being kept vacant so that they may be filled

---

<sup>5</sup> Outlying territory.

by an equal number of Recruits of similar rank, whom *el Capitan Comisionado* will have to bring from Guadalajara, it follows that for the Presidios of Californias he will only have to recruit 34 Men. If he secures all of them in the Provinces of the Government of Sonora, he will not continue the Recruit in Guadalajara, as also in the case of *familias pobladoras*; but, the success of this being doubtful, *el Comisionado* will bear in mind the number of People which he may recruit in the *territorios internos*,<sup>6</sup> in order to complete in those *de afuera* the number needed and prescribed for California.

## 10.

Recruitment of  
the 24 familias  
Pobladoras

The head or Father of each family must be a Man of the Soil, *Labrador de ejercicio*,<sup>7</sup> Healthy, robust, and without known vice or defect that would make him prejudicial to the Pueblos. For these will be situated in the midst of a numerous population of Gentiles, [who are] docile and without malice but susceptible, like all Indians, to the first impressions of good or bad example set by the Spanish who settle among them aiming to civilize them with good treatment and to win them happily through the practice of true Justice and good deeds to a knowledge of our Sacred Religion, and the Sweet Dominion of our Catholic Monarch.

## 11.

Among the said families must be included a mason, a carpenter who knows how to make yokes, ploughs, *rodadas*<sup>8</sup> and *Carretas*, and a blacksmith, who will do if he knows how to make ploughshares, pick-axes, axes and crowbars.

## 12.

Recruitment for  
the Presidios  
of California

The Soldier recruits for California must be Married, and of the same Qualities and conditions as must be the settlers, adding those of greater strength and endurance for the hardships of the frontier service.

<sup>6</sup> Interior provinces.

<sup>7</sup> A worker in the fields.

<sup>8</sup> Solid wooden wheels.

## 13.

Recruits for  
the Presidios  
of Sonora

All those recruited for the Presidios of Sonora must be Bachelors, young men not over 25 or 30 years of age, and not under 18 and who are at least two yards tall, healthy, robust, of good presence, and without defect of body or face.

## 14.

No recruit must be forced to enter but must volunteer, and he must not be deceived by offers of more than can be fulfilled, and you will emphasize this Instruction.

## 15.

From the day on which enlisted, the Recruits must receive [as follows]: those *who are destined for Californias and Sonora*, the goods allotted to them respectively according to the Reglamentos of that Province and of *these frontier Provinces*; and the *vecino Poblador* his salary of 10 pesos a month and the customary rations; while each Recruit *without exception* will receive the daily *socorro* [stipend] of two *reales* in cash, where he can use it in maintaining himself, and provisions when traveling through unpopulated places or on the frontier where money is of no use to him, reserving the rest of his pay to cover the costs of the march and equipment.

## 16.

All Recruits without exception will be enlisted for ten years, which will be counted from the day of the date of their affiliations.

## 17.

The Soldiers' enlistments will be formalized as prescribed by the general ordinances of the army, except with the general provision that they must join one of the Presidios of California or Sonora. The *Comisionado* must deliver the registers of enlistments to the *military Governor of the latter [province]* Don Jacobo Ugarte y Loyola and to Don Phelipe Neve [military governor] of the former in order that these chiefs may assign the Recruits to the presidial Companies as they see fit.

## 18.

As to the *vecinos Pobladores*<sup>9</sup> they shall enlist in the proper mode and for the same period of ten years, for either the Pueblo of San Joseph de Guadalupe or of La Reyna de los Angeles de la Porciúncula, adding after their own declarations those of their wives, sons, daughters and sisters or unmarried female relatives who of their own will desire to accompany them, for to these latter there offers the possibility that they may marry members of the troops who remain single in California for lack of Spanish Women, according to the notices communicated to this Superior Government.

## 19.

It will be advisable for the Commissioner to take with him in his company from San Miguel de Orcasitas three officers or two officers and one sergeant, and also a small party of troops, charged solely with looking after the Recruits.

## 20.

During his march to the boundaries of the Jurisdiction of the Viceroyalty of New Spain, it is very likely that he will make some Recruitment of Soldiers and settlers for Californias, and as these will have to be assisted with their daily rations, they will have to be habilitated and escorted, the *Comisionado* will appoint one of the officers who accompanies him, with a detail of troops, to return from the place in the *Provincia Interna* where the last Recruit is enlisted, to pick them up and conduct them to the Real<sup>10</sup> de los Alamos.

## 21.

During the time consumed by the return of the *Oficial Comisionado*, the *Justicias*<sup>11</sup> will be careful to supply the Recruit or Recruits with the daily allotment of two *Reales*, Captain Don Fernando de Rivera leaving in their charge [for this purpose] the small sum he judges sufficient according to the time that the return of the Subaltern charged with assembling the Recruits is expected to take.

<sup>9</sup> Village settlers.

<sup>10</sup> Real: an encampment or village, originally a mining camp.

<sup>11</sup> Village magistrate.



## 22.

No expenditures for the recruits should be made by the Subaltern Officer other than for the daily Provisions, baggage, and incidentals requisite for the march to the Real de Los Alamos. There, where the resources are greater, the recruited Soldiers, *Pobladores* and families will be equipped with all Clothing, Arms, riding equipment, and Animals stipulated for them.

## 23.

For the said expenses of daily provisions and transportation of Recruits, Captain Don Fernando Rivera will Require the advance of some money, but since I cannot determine the correct amount myself, the said captain will inform me how much he estimates as sufficient so that a warrant may be drawn for him by the *Gobernador Intendente* of this Province, Don Pedro Corvalan. In case the expenses be greater than the amount now delivered, the warrants of Captain Rivera will be honored and paid in the *Caxa de los Alamos*, he giving a statement explaining with detail and clarity the ends for which he may have used the money drawn; and the Royal Officials of that *Caxa* will forward their report to me by way of the *Gobernador Intendente*.

## 24.

From the boundary of these provinces to Guadalajara Captain Don Fernando de Rivera will continue the Recrual of *Pobladores* and soldiers for Californias. He will conduct the recruits to that city in his Company or entrust to some Subaltern Official their transportation and the responsibility of providing them with the daily allowance of two Reales, as well as care of the Baggage and other impedimenta necessary to the march.

## 25.

As soon as he arrives in Guadalajara he will present himself to the *Señor Regente*, and delivering to him the attached *Pliego* [paper], will request lodging for the Recruits mentioned in the preceding Article, for the Officers and troops of his Party, and for the people who are to be recruited in said City and are to be destined for the Presidios of Sonora.

## 26.

If the Captain shall not have been able to complete the Recruitment for Californias during the march, he will finish the quota in Guadalajara, and will present the enclosed *Pliego*<sup>12</sup> to the Royal Officers of that *Caxa* so that in compliance with the orders which His Excellency the Viceroy will soon communicate to them they will deliver the sums necessary to supply the Recruits with Clothes and riding equipment in accordance with *relacion* [memorandum] No. 3.

## 27.

The Recruits, Soldiers and *Pobladores* whom the *Comisionado* shall enlist for the Peninsula from the Boundaries of these Provinces to Guadalajara will have to be transferred to California by way of San Blas. In this understanding, the Recruits and their families, being furnished with what they may need in clothing and further supplies as provided in *Relacion* No. 3, will proceed to their destination when ordered by *el Señor Regente*, under the command of another Subaltern Officer to whom Captain Don Fernando de Rivera will give written Instructions as to what he must do, it being understood that until the day of the embarkation of Recruits at San Blas they must receive the daily *socorro* [stipend] in money or provisions as circumstances dictate.

## 28.

To cover the *socorros* of these Recruits and expenses of the march to Guadalajara *el Capitan Comisionado* will inform me as to the prudent sum which should be advanced to him by the *Caxa de Alamos*, and he will present his request for what he may need to meet similar expenses on the march thence to San Blas, to the Royal Officials of Guadalajara.

## 29.

I have stated in Article 26 that these *Señores Ministros* [Ministers] will deliver to Captain Don Fernando de Rivera the funds necessary for supplying the said recruits for Californias with Clothing and other supplies stipulated, but it will be understood that the distribution must be made under

<sup>12</sup> Paper or document.

the supervision and with consent of the said Ministers and that it must appear in the reports covering this subject, which the *Capitan Comisionado* will prepare and forward to me.

## 30.

He will receive in addition [to the amount drawn] from the *Real Caxa de Guadalajara* and with obligation to reimburse [*la caxa de*] Alamos, the money which he may need to supply the Soldier Recruits of Sonora, to pay the expense of their baggage, and to fulfil the pledges of Clothing and riding equipment prescribed in *Relacion* No. 4.

## 31.

Having completed and equipped this recruit, and despatched by way of San Blas [the recruit] for California, he will entrust to the other Subaltern Officer the march of the first with part of the members of the detail of troops and taking the rest [of the troops] the Captain will go forward in order to carry out the task of securing the remount.

## 32.

All of this is completely expressed in *Relacion* No. 2. If [the *Comisionado*] delay, all his care will not avail to control circumstances so that the several auxiliaries may arrive approximately at the same time in Californias, and many days will be lost.

## 33.

In order to take advantage of every day, at the same time that the *Capitan Comisionado* on his march to Guadalajara discharges the duty of Recruiting, he may address himself also to securing the remount, having someone to help him in its care and gathering, and for this he will make use of the rest of the officers and Sergeants provided for Californias, and of the Corporals and Soldiers who will rendezvous in Orcasitas.

## 34.

I may omit advising the Captain Don Fernando de Rivera of the places where he can secure the remount and best arrange to assemble it, for he has a rich knowledge of the territory; the same is true as to the quality of the Mules

and Horses, since he already knows that for this stock to be useful in California it must have in addition to the conditions of strong health, of robustness, sound bone, and normal stature, that of *newness*, for the Old Beasts become useless on protracted marches, and it is not possible to restore [their strength] in whatever length of time. And finally, I realize it is unnecessary to remind the *Comisionado* of the care that he must observe in concluding the purchases [to secure] them under advantageous conditions, and [to observe] economy in the adjustment of prices, for these are points which will attest to his zeal, intelligence and faith to his obligations; but I do advise him that in case the remounts do not have to be assembled, if that be possible, in any particular place until the arrival of the Recruits, he will try to stipulate with the venders of the stock that the Horses, Mules, Mares and the rest must be maintained at the venders' cost and risk in their summer pastures until the officers and troops enlisted by the *Capitan Comisionado* return, gathering the animals and transporting them to the Place of Reunion which he will designate as expedient. This must not be omitted, so that the *Hacendero* [farmer] or *Ranchero* [rancher] vender may receive without delay the value of the Beasts which he sells, on condition that he enters into formal obligation to deliver them in the complete number and of the quality and conditions stipulated, and to bear the cost and risk of those [animals] which die, are lost, or become useless or are stolen by Enemy Indians up to the day of the delivery to those commissioned to assemble the remount.

## 35.

In order to gather them up, the Captain Don Fernando de Rivera will inform me as to what funds he will need and if it be preferable that his warrants to the *Hacenderos* for the price of the Beasts needed, be paid from the *Real Caja de los Alamos*.

## 36.

As prescribed above, the Soldiers and *Pobladores* destined for Californias who are Recruited in the *pais interno*<sup>13</sup>

<sup>13</sup> Interior.



must go to the *Real de los Alamos* and in charge of one Subaltern Officer. Those who are recruited for the same Province in territories *de afuera*<sup>14</sup> must be transported to Guadalajara, and from there to San Blas for embarkation as soon as convenient, under orders of another Subordinate officer. The recruits destined for the Presidios of Sonora who are enlisted in Guadalajara must be conducted under another Officer by the most direct road to San Miguel de Orcasitas. On his march, with a complement including the rest of the Officers, Sergeants, Corporals and Soldiers, the *Capitan Comisionado* will devote himself to finding, contracting for and purchasing the remount, and on his return [will attend] to assembling and transporting [the animals] to the place found convenient for their assemblage.

## 37.

I must advise *el Comisionado* that this Place must be selected by the good judgment of the *Comisionado* taking into consideration the fact that the entire Remount has to be transported by way of the Rivers Gila and Colorado, and that I will provide the necessary requirements for its custody up to the day on which the Expedition starts out, and at that time such assistances as necessary for the successful conduct [of the Expedition].

## 38.

In order to prevent delay to the march overland, it may be desirable to transport by Sea the *familias Pobladoras* and the Troops for Californias which are to rendezvous at los Alamos. The *Comisionado* will inform me what circumstances present themselves and what he thinks on this point, in order that I may formulate my instructions.

## 39.

All persons who exercise any Commission delegated by the Captain Don Fernando de Rivera must keep account and a clear and formal record of the funds that they receive and the objects for which they are disbursed, in order to satisfy themselves as well as to render accounts to their Commander

<sup>14</sup> The outlying provinces.

who must approve them if they are meritorious, and use them to balance his general accounts.

## 40.

Four [records] must be rendered by the Captain Don Fernando de Rivera: first of the Remount, second of the *familias Pobladoras*, third of the Soldiers recruited for Californias, and fourth of those destined for the Presidios of this Province, according to the forms which will be handed to him by the *Gobernador Intendente*, to whom he will deliver the records so that the latter may examine them, add his comments, and put his approval on them, and report to me.

## 41.

Everything cannot be held in mind, nor is it feasible to give a minute and prolix account of all the new situations with which the carrying out of these Commissions naturally will be confronted, therefore the *Comisionado* will [be depended upon to] surmount with his own zeal, action and experience the difficulties [that may arise].

## 42.

Finally, from whatever place where there may be provision for a post, he will advise me of the condition of his charge, and if any grave matter or new thing arise which makes Superior aid or orders urgent, he will despatch his Letters to me by *cordillera*<sup>15</sup> and thus his difficulties will be known and I shall be able to make contingent decisions.

Arispe, December 27, 1779.

(Enclosure) No. 1.

**S**TATEMENT of the Number of Families for the new Pueblo of la Reina de los Angeles, and of the number of Soldiers for Californias to be recruited by Captain Don Fernando de Rivera y Moncada in the Places, and of the

<sup>15</sup> Message sent from camp to camp.

Character and Conditions prescribed in the accompanying Instructions of this date.

<i>Recruits</i>	<i>Number</i>
Families of Settlers .....	24
Soldiers for Californias .....	59
Total.....	83

Note: Among the twenty-four *familias Pobladoras* must be included one Mason, one Carpenter, and one Blacksmith.

El Caballero De Croix (Rubric).

Arispe, December 27, 1779 (4 Copies).

(Enclosure) No. 2

**S**TATEMENT of the remount to be procured by Captain Don Fernando de Rivera y Moncada for the Province of Californias in accordance with the provisions made in the attached Instructions.

	<i>Mules</i>	<i>Horses</i>
For the Four existing Pre- sidios of Loreto, San Diego, Monterey and San Francisco }	350	130
For the new Presidio of Santa Barbara..	153	102
For the 24 Settlers of la Porciúncula ....	48	24
	<hr/>	<hr/>
	Mules .....	551
	Horses .....	256
For the Pueblos of San Joseph, and of that planned for la Porciúncula }	Brood Mares .....	60
	Iden. Burros .....	80
	Donkeys .....	6
	Stallions .....	4
	Geldings .....	4
	<hr/>	<hr/>
Grand Total....	961	

Arispe, December 27, 1779 (2 Copies).

PROVINCIAS INTERNAS TOM. 122 ARCHIVO GENERAL.

**Y**OUR EXCELLENCY

My dear Sir: The Province of Californias is one of those placed especially in my charge by His Majesty in the Royal Instructions, and in consequence of orders from his Excellency the Viceroy, predecessor of yourself, and from me, the Governor Don Phelipe Neve has offered several suggestions relative to the better defense, conservation and development of that important Country.

Having examined in detail the Reports made by the Governor, and viewing them in the same favorable light as did the late Viceroy,<sup>1</sup> I have ordered the Occupation of the Channel of Santa Barbara with one Presidio of that name and three Missions; the establishment of a Pueblo with the title of la Reyna de los Angeles on the River Porciúncula; and His Majesty has deigned to approve the one named San Joseph which has been founded on the banks of the Guadalupe.

These provisions require an increase in Troops as shown in the attached Statement No. 1, to be distributed as provided in Document No. 2. In order that [these plans] may prove effective it is necessary to recruit families of Settlers and Soldiers, assemble a remount, and secure various other auxiliary items which I will expound to Your Excellency in separate reports.

In order to facilitate the matters to which I refer herein, I have prepared the Instruction of which copy is enclosed. I have charged Captain Don Fernando de Rivera y Moncada with the responsibility of carrying out its provisions, and that Officer already has entered upon his duties. But as the gracious assistance of Your Excellency is necessary for the successful outcome [of the plan], I enclose the attached Note No. 3, which indicates the dispositions necessary on the part of Your Excellency. And while I have given the orders pertaining to the Account and Purpose of expenditures, which Comisionado Rivera is to present as soon as he concludes the Recruitall of troops and families of Settlers and the Assembly of remounts, my subsequent advices and the remittance to

---

<sup>1</sup> Antonio Bucareli.



Your Excellency of Documents regarding the expenses and warrants in favor of the Presidios of Californias and for the families, and for the reimbursement of advances made by the Royal Treasuries of Guadalajara and Alamos, must await his reports.

Señor Mayorga.<sup>2</sup>

Arispe, February 9, 1780.

## No. 2.

**D**ISTRIBUTION of Troops for Californias as detailed by Governor Don Phelipe Neve:

<i>Destinations—</i>	<i>Cap- tains</i>	<i>Lieut- en'ts</i>	<i>Alfer- ezes</i>	<i>Ser- geants</i>	<i>Cor- pl's</i>	<i>Sold- iers</i>	<i>To- tal</i>
Presidio of Loreto .....	1	..	1	1	1	10	14
Real de Santa Ana del Sur .....	..	..	..	1	..	6	7
Missions of the Northern Frontier .....	..	1	..	2	..	23	26
Presidio of San Diego .....	..	1	1	1	2	27	32
Missions of its (San Diego's) district.....	..	..	..	..	3	15	18
New Pueblo of la Reyna de los Angeles.. ..	..	..	..	..	..	4	4
Presidio of Monterey .....	..	1	1	1	2	27	32
Missions of its district .....	..	..	..	..	3	15	18
New Pueblo of San Joseph .....	..	..	..	..	..	4	4
Presidio of San Francisco .....	..	1	1	1	2	16	21
Missions of its district .....	..	..	..	..	2	10	12
New Presidio of Santa Barbara and Central Mission .....	..	1	1	1	2	26	31
Mission of San Buenaventura .....	..	..	..	1	..	14	15
Mission of la Purísima Concepción .....	..	..	..	1	..	14	15
Totals.....	1	5	5	8	18	211	249

Arispe, February 9, 1780.

<sup>2</sup> Martín de Mayorga, successor to Antonio Bucareli as Viceroy of New Spain, after the death of Bucareli in April, 1779.

**PART III**

**SPANISH REPRINTS**

**OF**

**DOCUMENTS AND TRANSCRIPTS**

**PERTAINING TO THE**

**FOUNDING OF LOS ANGELES**

# FELIPE DE NEVE—CORRESPONDENCIA<sup>1</sup>

No. 82. //78

## FABRICAS.

**S**E de cuenta a S. E. de aver encontrado redificada la Mision de Sn. Diego y concluida la de Sn. Juan Capistrano. fundado el fuerte de Sn. franco. la ymediata mision de su nonvre y la de Sta. Clara, y q allandose sin resguardo dho fuerte, como este presidio sea dado providencia para que se serquen y construian conforme a lo dispuesto en el Rl. Reglamento. de presidios, para cuja obra quedan acarreandose Materiales en Monte Rey.

## EXMO. SOR.

*Señor*

**D**OI quenta a V. E. que a mi Arribo a estos nuevos establecimientos, se allava ya redificada la Mision de Sn. Diego y concluida la fundacion de Sn. Juan Capistrano en el mismo paraje en que fue yniciada, aviendo en una y otra precavido sus fabricas del Ynsencio? cuvriendolas de Terrado. ygualmte. se allava fundado el fuerte de Sn. franc. y su ymediata Mision de el mismo Nombre, el primero ymediato al fondeadero del Puerto, y la segunda a distansia del fuerte de sinco cuartoa de legua contigua á la leguna de Nra. Sra. de los Dolores, uno y otro sitio fueron ocupados el 27 de Junio, y convienen ser el // de la Mision abundante de Agua leña y Piedra para fabricas, con tierras proporcionadas para sienvras, y con la ventaja de un Manantial que tiene mui ymediato y de no difisil saca que conseguida lograra veneficiar con riego vastante sienbra.

La segunda Mision á que se puso el Nre. de Sta. Clara fue cituada el dia quatro de Eno. ultimo, a 15 leguas de distancia del fuerte al sueste y Margen del Rio de Nra. Sa. de Guadalupe, tiene segun se me ha ynformado, muchas tierras de sinebra á una y otra parte de el Rio, de riego, y vmedad, y mui facil la saca del Agua, vien que espuesta la mision y tierras de lavor (segun temen los R. R. P. P.) alas ynundaciones que puede causar de que no se tiene esperiencia por seguir el ano con la mor. escasez de Aguas que sea experimentado, la Gentilidad que puebla aquel //79 Terreno se asegura mui numerosa; luego que me desenvarase, y regresen las partidas que se allan fuera de este Presidio, pasare a Reconoser dhas. Misiones, y fuerte, de que ynformare a V. E. con mas Yndividualidad: añadiendo tengo prevenido al Tente, Dn. Joseph Joaquín de Moraga disponga lo conveniente á cercar el fuerte, conforme alo prevenido por el Rl. Reglamto. de Presidios? alo que tengo dado prinsipio, y continuare asta su conclusion, en este, por allarse como aquel formado de Barracas, o chosas, y sin ningun resguardo, exectuada la pequeña casa del Comte. y el Almacen que son de adove y ia se avrian desplomado ano averse apuntaldo en el año pasado, como anteriormte. sucedio ala Capilla, de que sirve en el dia un pequeño jacal, y como para facilitar el todo dela obra se ase presiso enplear la Tropa con los pocos // sirvientes del Presidio, lo represento esperando dela Venignidad de V. E. ade conseder á estas Compañias la gratificasion que sea de su Superior agrado.

Nro. Sor. Gue.: la Exma. Persona de V. E. ms. as. Monte Rey 25 de febrero de 1777.

Exmo. Sor.

Phelipe de Neve (Rúbrica).

Exmo. Sor. Bo. f Dn. Antonio  
Bucareli y Vrzua.

<sup>1</sup> Provincias Internas Tom. 121. Archivo General de Mexico.

No. 83  
TROPAS

SE DA cuenta a S. E. del estado en que existen las Compañías de los tres presidios de la California Septentrional en Bestuario Montura Armamento, y Cavallers. con expresion del numero de mulas y Caballos que se regulan precisos, y acompañandose Relaciones de las prendas de Vestuario Montura, y Armamentos que se necesitan.

EXMO. SR.

Señor: El tres del presente mes llegue á este Presidio, no aviendo permitido verificarlo con mor. prontitud la considerable distancia, y conservasion de la cavallerias que me trasportaron.

Ami paso por el Presidio de Sn. Diego reconosi el estado de la Tropa de su guarnision, como lo ejecute a mi trancito, de los Cavos y Solds. enpleados en las escoltas de las Misiones, como de la Compañía de este Presidio. a vnos, y otros, he allado en el mas deplorable estado, asi de Vestuario, como de Armamento, y Montura; lo primero sobre no averse seguido uniformidad, yndistintamte. usan casaquilla corta, chupa, o chaleco de diversos colores, son raros los que tienen capa y los restantes mangas y muchos tan deteriorados que tocan // en yndesencia.

El Armamento, sobre ser de desigual calivre al prevenido por ordenanza las escopetas, son las mas desconpuestas y de ninguna seguridad. las Espadas (a exesion de las que en el año pasado se remitieron a Sn. Diego) enteramente ynutiles, por su mala calidad, cortas, o rotas, siendo varios los que no la tienen, ygualmte. que Lanzas, allandose quasi todas los Solds. desaviados de su Montura que sobre ser mui vieja, son pocos los que no estan faltos de alguna de las prendas que la componen.

Las Cavallerias que tiene la Tropa de estos presidios consisten en 70 Mulas y 37 Cavallos, el de Sn. Diego, distrivuidas en las 43 plazas de su antigua Dotacion (excluidos los 25 Reclutas de Aumento que estan desmontados) 86 Mulas y 41 Cavallos, el de Monte Rey. Repartidas en 45 Plazas de que consta su guarnision, yncluzas 20 que cubren las escoltas de las tres Misiones de S. Luis. S. Año. y el Carmelo. 31. Mulas y 57 ca //60 vallos, el de Sn. Franco. repartidos en las treinta y quatro Plazas de que oi consta su Compañía escluido el Tente. en cuio numero de cavallerias puede considerarse una quinta parte de desecho.

En esta Atension doi quenta á V. E. acompañando dos Relaciones, vna del Bestuario y Prendas de Montura que se necesitan para las Compañías de dhos. Presidios segun el pie que oi se allan, y otra del Armamento, Polvora, y Balas correspondients. á cada una, asi para su respectivo Armamento como para el que deve existir de Repuesto, a fin de que siendo de la aprovasion de V. E. se Digne mandar remitir en primer ocasion las prendas de Bestuario, Montura, Armamentos. y Municiones que expresan á cada uno de los Referidos Presidios.

Ygualmte. devo Representar a V. E. que sin envargo de que las Armas que actualmte. tienen estas Compañías, (executadas las de veinte Soldas. de la de Sn. franco.) son pro // pias de la tropa por averseles cargado su valor, es conveniente se recojan y depositen en los Almancenes para obiar por este medio el grave ynconveniente de que las vendan a los Gentiles, que con ansia Solicitan prinipalmente. ojas de espada, pedanzos de hellas, moarras de Lanzas belduques, y todo genero de Ynstrumentos. Cortantes, de que he visto Armados muchos Gentiles (sic) en la Canal de Sta. Barbara, siendo admirable el primer conque asicalan, y asen un agudo puñal de un pedazo de espada. por lo que siendo del Superior agrado de V. E. podra distiruvirse el nuevo Armamento, sin cargo de su Valor al Soldado, que solo quedara responsable á su reparo, y entregarlo en ex-tado siempre que se Lisencie ó Muera.



Por lo respectivo a Cavallerias siendo las Plazas que en el dia tienen las tres compañías, (escluidos oficiales) 147 y las Bestias cavallars., y Mulares que existen 322 a que agregadas, las ochenta Mulas y 26 Cavsa., // 61. que proximante. deven venir de Loreto resultan 438 que corresponden a tres cavallerias por Plaza, con falta de tres vestias, y sin contar con las que en aquel no. se comprehenden de desecho por Viejas e ynuitiles con las que no es posible se aga el servicio sin tan considerable atraso como el que se experimenta de sufrir la fatiga, aquellos Solds. que se allan en mayor estado para las salidas, o prestandose los unos, alos otros, quedando quasi desmontados los que quedan en el Presidio; con cuia consideracion y la de que las Reguas de este Presidio y el de Sn. Diego, se allan tan deterioradas que para socorrer este, con sinquenta y dos cargas de maiz. dela frontera de Velicata, y Mision de Sn. Luiz me a sido forzoso valarme de 12 mulas dela Mision de Sn. Diego y 23 dela Regua del Presidio de Sn. franco. no aviendo podido aprontarse en tal vrjencia mas de 17 Bestias delas dos restantes; por lo que para poner en estado de servicio la tropa de estos Presidios, contando con lo q ha de dilatarse el resivo de las // Vestias, y predidas que qn de ocurrir en las existentes regulo son presisas doscientas Mulas y trecientos Cavallos, cuia conduccion unicamte. podra aserse por tierra siguiendo el derrotero de Dn. Juan Bautista de Anza, sin la perdida de Cavallerias y cresido atraso de años que causaria su envarco, y dilatada marcha, viniendo por Loreto. Todo lo que represento á V. E. en desempeño de mi obligacn., esperando dela yntegridad de V. E. determinara como conviene.

Nro. Sor. Gue. la Exma. Persona de V. E. felizes as. Monte Rey 26 de febrero de 1777.

Exmo. Sor.

Phelipe de Neve (Rúbrica)

Exmo. Sor. Bo. f Dn. Antonio Bucareli y Vrzua.

101

No. 71  
REGLAMTO.

**S**E DA Cuenta de lo vrgente que sera nonbrar un Ayudante que exersa. en los 5 presidios de Californias las funciones que los de Ynspector, en los de frontera en el caso de aprovarse las reglas propuestas para el nuevo Reglamto.

**M**UI Sr. mio. paso a Representar a V. S. que asi para desempeñar los Establecimientos. de Presidio y Misiones que han de cituarse en el canal de Sta. Barvara y Pueblo que deve fundarse contiguo al Rio de Porsincula como tiene V. S. determinado, como ygualmente oara establecer el nuevo pie y reglamto. que tengo propuesto, para los Presidios de hesta Peninsula, uniformando en todo lo adactable su gobierno a lo prevenido por el Rl. Reglamento de Presidios, siendo ynescusable (de ser aprovado este proyecto) o que se Nombre ynspector para estos o que exersa aquellas funciones el Govor. atendidas la enorme estencion de la Provincia y a la que estan sus Presidios, no es asequible que ninguno pueda dar cumplimto. a ello, sin el Auxilio de un Ayudante, y menos yo que he de formalisar y Radicar esta nueva planta, llamado de aquellas atenciones, quando mi devilitada Caveza me ynpide sufrir aquella mediana aplicasion y Ma // terial trabajo conque pude dar expediente a los asuntos que se me fiaron en otro tiempo, y allandome al presente en un destino en que no tengo ni a quien fiar la copia de una carta.

En cuia atencion lo hago presente. a V. S. Suplicando que de ser aprovadas las reglas propuestas para la variacion de Reglamto. en esta Peninsula, se digne V. S. Nombrar un Ayudante que exersa en estos Presidios lás funciones que los de Ynspector en los de frontera, cuio acenso podra

recaer en un Tente. de conosida ynteligencia y conducta con el Sueldo que V. S. tenga a vien consignarle.

Nro. Sor. Gue. a V. S. ms. as. Monterrey y Abril. 3 de 1779.

Blmo. de V. S. su ms. Atento Sergro. Servor.

Phelipe de Neve (Rúbrica)

Sor. Comte. Genl. Cavallero de Croix.

Provincias Internas Tom. 121. Archivo General.

No. 92. //48

#### TROPA Y ESTABLECIM.

**S**EDA cuenta con extado de las Armas Polvora balas y Cartuchos de Cañon que para completo delas Compañias y correspondientes Repuestos se necesitan. y dos Relaciones delas Ropas Viveres y efectos que se regulan precisos para para (sic) Socorrer la tropa que ha de Guarnecer el Canal, los Pobladores y sus familias, en el Ymediato año, supuesto lleguen en el a esta Provincia, y que sera conbeniente se execute por mar el Reconocimiento del Canal para demarcar el surgidero mas seguro para las embarcaciones.

**M**UI Sr. mio, pazo a Manos de V. S. el adjunto extado, que manifesta las armas, Polvora, y balas que para completar las Caomanias de hestos tres Presidios y sus Repuestos; el de Polvora y balas y cartuchos de Cañon se necesitan, como assi mesmo, los Repuestos que corresponden para la Tropa que ha de guarnecer el Canal de Sta. Barvara, dos Cañones de 4 para este Presidio y cartuchos que por aora le Regulo.

Ygualmte. con considerasion de la necesidad conque ha de llegar dha. Tropa, los Pobladores y sus familias, de que se les socorra, con Ropas, por lo que ha de destruirle tan dilatado viaxe, para que no experimenten su falta y la de varios efectos y Viveres necesarios, he jugado preciso dirigir a V. S. las dos memorias que aconpano, a fin de que teniendolo V. S. por conbeniente, se digne providenciar se remitan los Surtinientos que contienen, de Mexico.// y Sn. Blas en el Proximo ano, con la embarcasion que condusga el Situado, del Presidio de Sn. Diego, a entregar en el al Tente. Dn. Josef franco. de Ortega, en el cazo de que a su arribo alli, no se halle ua ocupado el Canal, pues de estarlo devera trasportarse todo a el, con los dos Canones que podran facilitarse del Departamento de Sn. Blas.

De verificarse assi allara en dho Sn. Diego el Comte. del Vuque, todas las prevenciones que yo Regule puedan conbenirle al desempeno de su Comision, ye sera muy oportuno, traiga la orn de Reconoser la costa del Canal, para demarcar el abrigo, o encenada que con mas proporcion al Presidio, permita fondear las enbarcaciones, praacer las descargas de Viveres y efectos que alli condusgan en lo subcesivo.

Nro. Sor. Gu. a V. S. ms. as. Monterrey 19 de Julio de 1779.

Blmo. de V. S. su ms.

Atento. Sro. Cor.

Phelipe de Neve (Rúbrica).

S Comte. Genl. Cavallo de Croix.

## CORRESPONDENCIA TOCANTE AL REGLAMENTO

N. 37 //1.

**M**UI SEÑOR MIO: He recibido con Carta de V. S. de 12 de fevbrero ultimo Copia del Reglamento que nuebamente ha formado el Governador de Californias Dn. Phelipe Neve, para que con bariacion del antiguo se rijan los asuntos de esta Peninsula con mas acertado pulso, se economizen en el modo posible los gastos que demanda el Presidio de Santa Barbara, que se acaba de erejir, y los que preparan los empleos que se han creado para el mejor Servicio de S. M.

Del Contexto de este Reglamento se deduze que su objeto es dirigido al buen gobierno interior, y disciplina delas Compañias Presidiales, al alivio dela Tro//pa, el beneficio de áquella Peninsula, y la Seguridad delos Ynteresses de Rl. Hacienda en cuió Concepto puede V. S. proceder desde luego á dictar las Consiguientes Providencias para su observancia, bajo la firme persuasion de que estoy pronto á Contribuir por mi parte, con las que Conduzcan al intento, en inteligencia de que de todo doy Cuenta á S. M. por si fuese de su agrado resuelto.

Nro Señor Gue á V. S. ms. as. Mexico 19 de Mayo de 1780.

Blmo. á V. S. su mas Atto. Segó.

Servor. Martin de Mayorga (Rúbrica)

Arispe 15 de Julo. de 1780.

Al Asesor gl. donde se hallan los antecedentes en el concepto de qe. hé nombrado los oficiales subalternos que se aumentan en los Presidios de Californias para Ayudte. inspector al Capitan graduado Dn. Nicolas Solér.

De Croix (Rúbrica)

**S**OR. COME. GENL.

Por Rl. Orden de 21 de Marzo// de 1775, se sirvió S. M. mandar que se Variase el Reglamento formado pa. la Peninsula de Californias pr. los vicios que se notavan en el qe. entonces governava; a cuió fin mando VE. en la que dirijio á 15. de Agto. de 77. al Governador D. Phe. Neve, que informase con extension y menudamente, quanto estimase necesario a su Reforma, de //2 vn. modo, que le pusiese en estado de determinar, quando se hallase sobre el terreno; y posteriormente, en nueva Orn que se le pasó a 3. de Septire. del siguiente año de 78; se le previno que se dedicase a formarle, mejorando el Actual; y en su Cumplimiento, teniendo presente los nuebos establecimientos, que a su proposicion havia VS. resuelto hacer en el Canal de Sta. Barvara, formó y Remitio el nuevo reglamento, que con fha de lo. de Junio de 1779. se halla en el expediente.

Reconocido y Examinado por VS, se Sirvio contestarle en 12 de febrero de este año, que nada le dejava que apeteer, pues en todos sus puntos hallava atendidos los objetos del Rl. Servicio, con particular albio de la Tropa, Economia y seguridad delos intereses del Erario, y Ventajas, que proporcionaban el fomento, defensa y conservacion del Territorio, y que este Concepto lo trasladava VS. con igual fha al Exmo Sor. Virrey, y daua cuenta á S. M. Solicitando Su Rl. aprovazion.

Con efecto, en el mismo dia Remitio VS. Copia al Sor. Virrey, manifestandole que no solo lo considerava digno de su Recomendacion, si no es que le parecia mui vrgente su practica // para que desde luego se disfrutasen las Ventajas, que ofrecia, y fuesen menores los gastos qe. Ocasionasen los Nuevos Establecimtos y que si mereciese igual Concepto á S. Exa, esperaba se lo havisase para arreglar sus disposiciones, y proceder inmediatamente á la reforma delos empleos de Comisarios, y Guarda Almacenes, y á tomár las demas providencias conducentes á su Observancia interina, hasta qe. dando cuenta á S. M. llegase la Rl. aprovazon. a que

contestó en 19. de Mayo proximo, que podia VS. proceder desde luego á dictar las providencias consiguientes a su Observancia, bajo la firme persuasion, de que estava pronto á contribuir por su parte con las que condujesen a su intento, y en la inteligencia, de que de todo daua cuenta á S. M. pr. si fuese de su Rl. agrado esta Resolucion.

En 23. de febrero de este mismo año dio VS. cuenta á S. M. de todas las providencias qe. hauia dictado, Relatibas a la Peninsula de Californias, y en Consequencia de los Oficios qe. le havia pasado Su Governor. D. Phe. Neve //3 y de que haviendo formado este el nuevo reglamento, que havia mandado observar interinamente, se conseguirian por Su medio las ventajas á que se dirigia, añadiendo que en el Siguiete Correo, se Remitiria Copia por haver faltado tpo y manos pa. sacarla en aquél.

De forma, que no solo se halla aprobado pr. VS. el citado nuevo reglamento, sino es qe. el Exmo Sor. Virrey há condescendido a su observancia, ofreciendo contribuir con las providencias que conduzgan á ella, y de todo se há dado cuenta á S. M.; y se espera su Rl. aprovacion: En todo lo posible, se ha procurado Vniformár el Gobierno diciplina y manejo de intereses, de las Tropas de aquella Peninsula, al establecido para las de estas Provins. en el ultimo Reglamento de 10. de Sepre. de 1772- que gobierna en ellas; y quando no sean adaptables á aquel Pais, todas las providencias y resoluciones, que se hán dictado de resultas delas revistas de Ynspon.; y expedientes promovidos en este, puede haver muchas que sean conducentes, y de facil execucion, expecialmente las relatibas a los Avilitados, facultades // qe. se les Confieren en los Poderes de sus Compañs. metodo en que deuen hacer las Subministraciones, y Responsavilidad delos Capitanes, por la intervencion qe. les Corresponde tenér en ellas, Por lo qual me parece, que al mismo tpo se pase la Correspondiente Orn al Governor Dn. Phe. Neve, para que desde luego proceda ala Execucion y observancia interina del expresado nuevo reglamento, se le remita igualmente vna Copia, o coleccion Certificada de las Resoluciones generales y particulares dictadas pr. V. S. para el mejór gobierno diciplina y manejo delos intereses de estas Tropas, a fin de que Reconociendo lo dispuesto acerca de ellas, adapte a las de aquella Peninsula, las que hallare no tener incombente, en su ejecucion, añadiendo las que econtrare de esta clase, por Capítulos del mismo Reglamto. y havisando las que fueren para qe. siempre conste en esta Superioridad.

En oficio de 6. Junio de 1777. Señalado con el No. 88, despues de informar el Governor Dn. Phe. Neve con la maior prolixidad; los parages que hauia Reconocido, desde la //4 Mision de Sn. Gabriel, hasta el Presidio de Monterrey, las distancias en que se hallavan vnos de otros, y los que tenian proporcion de tierras y aguas para Siembras y labores, propuso, que para que en aquella Peninsula se cojiesen las Semillas y granos, que se necesitavan, para provehér la Tropa, y Pobladores, no halla otro Arvitrio, que el de que se Reclutasen quarenta o Sesenta labradores, que poblasen los Rios de Santa Ana, Sn. Gabriel, La Porciuncula, y Guadalupe, o a lo menos qe. diuiliendose en dos quadrillas, se estableciese la vna en el Rio de Santa Clara, y la Otra en el de la Porciuncula, facilitandoles varios auxilios, que expresó con indiuidualidad posteriormente por nuevo Oficio de 3. de Abril de 1779. Señalado con el No. 69. expuso que vastarian Veinte y quatro Pobladores, incluyendo entre ellos vn Arbañil, y vn Herrero con los demás auxilios, que tenia pedidos, y qe. fuesen respectibos á este numero.

Haviendo VS. Accedido á esta proposicion y tomado las providencias Correspondientes pa. facilitar los reclutas y demas auxilios //pedidos por Neue, se le dio oportunamente aviso, para que en su inteligencia fuese dando las disposiciones Conducentes a su logro; con cuio motibo en nuevo Oficio de 22 de Abril de este año Señalado con el No. 130., expuso



que havia echo reconocer las inmediaciones de la entrada de la Canal de Santa Barvara, al Norte y Sur, para vér si en ella se encontraba sitio proporcionado para hacer Siembras, que con la posible inmediacion bastasen á Surtir de Viueres los Presidios y Pueblos, que deuen establecerse para Ocuparlo de que resultó encontrar ala parte del Norte vn Caudaloso trozo de agua, que se desprende de la Sierra, con facilisima toma, y dilatadas Tierras para labór, y aun que en la Cercania de la Saca, manifestava no ser el pasto de mui buena Calidad, lo havia a corta distancia, y abundancia de madera leña y piedra, con mas de dos leguas de llanura, hasta el Camino Real, que bá del Presidio de Sn. Diego, al de Monterrey, quedando a cinco leguas la primera Rancheria del Canál llamada la Asunta; que á siete leguas dela entrada Opuesta, se halló otro //5 abundante arroyo o manantial con muchas y buenas tierras de labór, pero escaso de madera y leña; y que estos descubrimientos, con los que se hicieron en el año de 77, le havian conducido al pensamiento, de que seria mas Ventajoso Variar la fundacion del Pueblo, que propuso sobre la margen del Rio de la Porciuncula, por que quando formó este proyecto no estava instruido de aver aprobado VS. el de la Ocupacion del Canál; vajo cuió Supuesto le parecia más util, que se formasen los dos Pueblos, vno en el citado paraje distante cinco leguas de la primera Rancheria de la Asunta, y otro en el que ofreciese mas proporciones, entre las Misiones de Sn. Juan Capistrano y Sn. Gabriel; él primero para abastecer el Presidio y escoltas del Canál de Sa. Barvara; y el Segundo para proveer el de Sn. Diego; en la inteligencia de que antes qe. llegase Dn. Fernando Ribera, pasaria a reconocerlos personalmente, y há examinar si sus proporciones, correspondian álos informes que se le hauian echo, por el Teniente //D. Jph. de Ortega, y el Sargto, Juan Josef Robles, en cuió caso se Repartirian las Veinte y quatro familias en los dós establecimientos, y no desconfiava poder aumentar algun otro Poblador, y que produjese esta idea buenos efectos; pero que necesitando para su ejecucion la aprobacion de VS, esperaba se sirviese Comunicarle su Resolucion, pa. tener dispuesto todo lo Conducente, a que desde luego se Situasen las familias, que deuiesen poblar, y que hallasen en ellos los ganados y demas auxilios Necesarios, por que pensava establecer aun tpo, los dos Pueblos, Mision de Sn. Buenaventura, y Presidio del Canál, y ebaquado esto pasar á fundár la Mision de la Concepcion.

Y Supuesto que deuiendo pasar el Govor. a reconocer personalmente aquellos terrenos como lo ofrece en su Oficio, ninguno puede resolvér con mayores luces y acierto, los que sean mas apropiado, y de mejores proporciones para la fundacion de los dos Pueblos y facilitar sus progresos, me parece que por este motibo podrá VS, si fuere Servido, dejár a su Arvitrio la Eleccion // de los parajes, en que deban situarse, encargandole que el Nuevo Presidio, que há de hubicarse en el Zentro del Canál, procure igualmente Colocarle, si fuere posible, en terreno apropiado y con tierras y Aguas pa. Siembras, a fin de que a su Abrigo pueda con el tpo fomentarse otra Poblacion, que es el Objeto, con que la piedad de S. M. eroga generosamente los gastos que Ocasionen Semejantes establecimientos; y en Atencion a qe. los mandados hacer, en la Junta de los Rios Colorado y Gila, son de igual naturaleza que estos, y que para facilitar sus progresos se han dictado por VS. varias providencias mui Conducentes al asunto, qe. no pueden menos de sér adaptables a los de la Peninsula de Californias, me parece podrá VS. igualmte.; si fuere Servido mandár, se Remita Copia Certificada de todas al Govor. Dn. Phe. Neue, para que teniendolas presentes, y observando desde luego las que le pareciesen exequibles, informe sobre las demás, lo que hubiere y se le

ofreciere; Sin embargo de lo //qual resolvera VS. Sobre todo lo que fuere de su agrado. Arispe 18 de Septre. de 1780.

Galindo Navarro (Rúbrica)

Arispe 18 de Sepre. de 1780.

**M**E conforme con el parecer del Asesor, y en consecuencia hecha la contextazn. al oficio del Govr. de Californias No. 130 de 22 de Abril de este año sre el establecimto. de las dos nuevas Poblazes. dirijansele con separado las Orns corresptes. previniendo la observancia interina del nuevo reglamto. dese. el día lo. de Eno. del año proximo venturo; Y pasando las respuestas al Govr. Intendte. de esta Prova. y al Capitan Dn. Ferndo. de Rivera y Moncada Comisionado para la recluta de tropa // y Pobladores de aumto.; dese aviso de todo al Exmo Sr. Virrey, y cuenta á S. M. con copias del Expediente y documentos relativos.

fho

De Croix (Rúbrica)

Se dio cuenta en Carta No. 721—de 28 de Febo. de 82.

## CORRESPONDENCIA TOCANTE A LA INSTRUCCION

**C**ON los justos fines de defensa conservacion y fomento de le Provincia de Californias, en que particularmente se interesan el servicio de Dios y del Rey, hé resuelto la Ocupacion del Canál de Sta. Barbara con vn Presidio de este nombre, y tres Misiones, la erccion de vn Pueblo con el titulo de la Reyna de los Angeles sobre el Rio de la Porciuncula, y S. M. há aprobado el que mande fundár á las margenes del de Guadalupe Titulado Sn. Joseph.

Para proporcionár el feliz logro de estos nuevos inportantes establecimo. halló por conveniente y me pidio el Sr. Govor. de aquella Prova. Dn. Phelipe Neve en varias representazes. la venida de Vm. á esta vanda, y haviendo Yo condescendido gustosamte. es llegado el caso de exercitar el zeloso desempeño de Vm en los encargos que previene //la adjunta Instruccion.

Ellos se reducen á la ventajosa Recluta de Familias y Soldados pa. Californias, de modo que no padescan notable perjuicio esta Provincia en su corta Poblazn y á la vtil crecida y necesaria remonta de Mulas, Cavallos, Yeguas y demás que necesitan los antiguos y nuevos establecimtos. de la Peninsula.

Vm deve con reflexion y preferencia á todo imponerse de mis prevenciones, y representarme antes de su salida de esta Capital, y despues en el tiempo que enplée en su Comision las dudas y dificultades que se le ofrescan para que Yo pueda aclararlas y vencerlas.

En el Artículo 14 de la Instruccion digo á Vm que á los Reclutas no se les há de engañar ofreciendoles mas de lo que haya de cumplirseles, y comprehendiendo que este Punto delicado necesita de mayor claridad advierto á Vm qe. al Recluta Poblador se le há de asistir con // el sueldo mensual de diez pesos y razn. diaria de estilo por el perentorio termino de tres años que hán de contarse desde el día de su admision: Que á cada vno se le darán dos Bacas, dos Bueyes, dos Yeguas, dos Cavallos, vna Mula, dos obejas dos Cabras, y las precisas erramientas y vtensilios para las Lavores del Campo: Y que todos estos auxilios, y los de vestuario y Montura que aora reciben lo irán reintegrando á la Real Hacienda, (á ecepcion del inporte del Sueldo mensál y raciones) con parte de los frutos semillas, y procreacion del Ganado de manera que no les falte para su precisa asistencia y se verifique el Justo indicado reintegro.

Los Reclutas Soldados como que gozan de fixo y mayor sueldo y se gobiernan por distintas reglas, satisfarán de sus haveres por medio de

prudentes descuentos los gastos que causen en su actual avilitazn. y de sus familias de vestuarios, Monturas, Armams. viveres y remonta. //

La mala inteligencia que há dado el vulgo al Reglamto. de Californias persuadiendose los mayores perjuicios en los recargos ó descuentos que allí se hazen á los Sueldos de Oficiales tropa y Pobladores, podrá retraér á muchos de aprovechar la oportuna ocacion que aora se les presenta de conseguir vn honrrado y feliz establecimto. y de hazér vn leal servo al Rey que merecerá en todos tiempos su soberano agrado y justa remunerazn.

Para desvanecer aquellas dañosas impreciones és menester que Vm procure valerse de prudencia y maña sin faltar en lo mas minimo á la verdad y pureza que son el Norte de mis disposiciones bajo el concepto de que estoy tratando seria y eficazmente en ocurrir al remedio de los imaginados perjuicios que me persuado tengan mas la apariencia que de realidad, pues todos los qe. se experimentan asi en estas fronteras como en la de Californias no provienen verdaderamte. de las providencias de Ordenanza sino del vicioso modo con qe. suelen observarse, cuio perjuicio és de más facil remedio metodizando las reglas, aclarando las que pr. el tiempo y // las experiencias obliguen á alguna variacion, y zelando sobre su exacto y debido cumplimto.

Estoy cierto en qe. lo dará Vm puntual á las inportantes Comisiones qe. le confio como Vm deve estarlo de que recomendaré á S. M. este nuevo particular servicio para qe. se digne dispensarle las gracias que sean de su Real agrado, y en esta inteliga. advirtiéndole á Vm que yo dispondre la avilitazon de vestuars. Monturas y demas pa. las reclutas y familias de que trata el Arto. 22 de la Ynstrucon. y dever rendir su primera marcha á los Alamos, acompaño el adjunto Pasaporte á fin de qe. Vm no demore la Suya.

Dios &a. Arispe 27. de Dizre. de 1779.

Sr. Dn. Ferndo. de Rivera y Moncada.

## ARCHIVO DE CALIFORNIA—TRANSCRIPTIONS AND DOCUMENTS IN THE BANCROFT LIBRARY

1781 Mayo 16 S. Gabl.

*Neve al Com. Gl. Salida de familias sobre envio de soldo.*

Que el 12 de Mzo salieron de Loreto 17 familias a cargo del alfz. Ramon Laso para la bahía de S. Luis a donde llegó el 24 de Abl. y que continúa su marcha por tierra á este destino y que José Zúñiga le sigue con las restantes familias. Que saldrá el Sargto. Juan José Robles con 12 soldados para el Colorado a encontrar al Capn. Ferndo. Rivera a quien pide, que asegurado de la cómoda conduccion del todo de su expedicion, los devuelva. pp. 286-8.

1781 S. Gabl.

*Neve al Com. Gl.*

Julio 13.

Da cuenta la viruela cundió en Loreto.

p. 310.

Jul. 14.

Que llegaron a esta Misn. en este día el Ten. Diego Gonzalez y los alféreces J. Argüello y Cayto. Limon con 35 reclutas y 30 familias de ellos. Que en el corto tiempo que intermediara de estar restablecida la

mulada a la entrada de aguas que en este terreno empiezan en Novre. no es posible trasportar con 62 mulas de carga que trae la expedicion las familias, 750 fanegas de granos y Memorias de la tropa en 7 meses o mas, pues contando con que cesen las lluvias en Febro. son intransitables para recuas los caminos en mas que un mes despues y no es asequible formar almacenes para resguardo de todo donde por escasez de palisada es forzoso se hagan de adobe, por lo que no emprende la fundacion del Preso. del Canal hasta el inmediato año luego que terminen las aguas. Que la resolucion de Ferndo. Rivera de haber quedado en el Colorado le impide poder revisar las cuentas de reclutas y pobladores. p. 311-314.

Envia de doctos.

p. 314.

Agto. 29 (2 doc.) Cta. milr. Envio de doctos.

p. 314-5.

### Sep. 10

Que regresó a esta Mision de vuelta del Colorado adonde iba a incorporarse con Ferndo. Riva. el alfz. Cayetano Limon quien noticia que aquella Gentilidad dió muerte al capitan Ferndo. Rivera y Moncada con su tropa e igualmte. a los religiosos tropa y vecinos de aquellos Establecimientos. y a corta distancia de ellos al cabo Pascual Bailon, nueve solds, un poblador y un arriero que llevaban víveres y ganados para dhos establecimientos. Que Limon reconoció los cadáveres así en el pueblo como en su inmediacion a la márgen del río y segun lo destrozado y enjuto de ellos infiere que el hecho sucedió como 40 dias antes de su llegada el 21 preste. al Colorado, y que le atacó considerable Indiadada haciéndole fuego y disparando mas de 4 leguas matándole dos solds. y el (Limon) atravesado de bala bajo del brazo izquierdo.

Que ha tomado las providencias convenientes a fin de que no trascienda esta noticia a los naturales de estos establecimientos.

pp. 315-7.

### Octbre. 28 (6 doc)

pp. 318-8.

Que remite 52 cuentas que por pérdida de las originales ha formado a 52 reclutas hechas por Ferndo. Riva. con arreglo a sus declaraciones y estrajudiciales informes, y que comprende algunos por malicia a olvido no confiesan algunas prendas de ropa oreales que recibieron, y no siendo fácil la indagacion delos últimos, por lo respectivo a ropas podrá aclararse si conservan los mercaderes de Los Alamos los apuntes de las que respectivamte. dieron.

Envio de doctos.

p. 318

Id. (2 doc)

p. 319

Id. (2 doc)

p. 319-320.

### Oct. 29

Que para pié de la Compa. de Sta. Barba. ha sacado un cabo y siete solds. de cada una de las Comps. de Monterey y S. Diego, pues quedándole diez lo considera sufte. numo. pa qe. desde luego queda la Compa. en estado de hacer el servo. Que ha sido forzoso construir 40 pequeñas casas de palisada y terrado para que cómodamte. pase esta tropa y sus familias la temporada de aguas. p. 320-2.

Que habiendo llegado a esta Misn. el 18 del pas. Agto. el Tente. José Zúñiga providenció que los reclutas, pobladores y familias que traia a su cargo campasen a una legua de distancia a causa de venir algs. criaturas recientemte. salidas de la viruelas de donde pasaron a situarse al terreno en que queda fundándose el pueblo de Los Angeles y ya concluida la zanja madre continuan fabricando sus casas y lo estan los corrales para el ganado el que no se las ha repartido para que solo atiendan a la conclusion del pueblo y verificado entren a barbechar las tierras para la siembra de trigo. Que a este pueblo solo llegaron 11 pobladores y solo son utiles ocho. p. 322-3.



Que no habiendo llegado los Situados de estos Presidios los podrá abastecer hast Abl. prox. Que las Comps. Sta. Barba. y S. Franco. tendrán libre todo el Situado del inmediato año y aun alcances Sta. Barba. en fin de Dic. pres. Monterey y S. Diego alcanzarán como 17.000 pv. en dho mes y mas de 21.000 pr. Loreto sin contar con los antiguos alcances de estos tres últimos Pres. S. que son mas de 20.000 pv. p. 323-5.

Se da cuenta que Loreto no recibió provision de S. Blas y que se socorrió la frontera con 98 fans. maíz. p. 325.

Que el 5 de Jun. ult. fué nombrado Habilito. en Loreto el alzf. José M. Estrada y procedió a la entrega el comisario Franco. Alvarez Osorio que formó con desarreglo los doctos. y que ordenó se formen de nuevo. p. 326-7.

## VESTUARIO Y MONTURA DE LOS POBLADORES

**R**ELACION de las pundas de vestuario y montura con qe. han de habilitarse los soldados y pobladores y sus familias qe. se recluten desde el Real del Rosario, hta. Guadalajara.

**HABILITACION DE UN SOLDADO**—Una chupa de tripe a paño azul de Querétaro con forros de manta, vuelta, solapa y collarín de paño de segunda, tinte en grana; botón amarillo con asa.—Un par de calzones de tripe azul, forros de manta, charreteras del mismo tripe y botón amarillo.—Un sombrero negro de Fezcuco. Una capa de paño azul de Querétaro, con las vueltas a forro de bayeta encarnada—Una mascada negra de Barcelona—Una camisa de pontiví—Otra idem de manta.—Dos pares de calzoncillos de manta de Puebla—Dos pares de medias de lana de dos hilos finas de la tierra—Un par de botas de gamuza—Dos pares de zapatos abotinados—Dos pañitos de polvos poblanos—Cinta pa. el sombrero y pelo.—Una silla baquera con los aperos correspondtes. todo de buena calidad, pero con estribos de palo y sin anquera ni colgadura—Un freno caballar y otro mular—Un par de espuelas vaqueras, pero pequeñas, segun está prevenido y se observa en estas fronteras.—Un sudadero o carona de jerga—Una funda grande de escopeta—Unos cojinillos de media mochila—Una cartuchera de 21 a 24 tiros, de cañones y demás, como lo pidió el Gob. de la Provincia.

**HABILITACION DE UN POBLADOR**—Una chupa de paño azul de Querétaro forrada de manta, con boton blanco o amarillo y sin divisas.—Un par de calzones de tripe como los del soldado—Un pañito o corbata de lienzo pa. el cuello—Dos camisas de manta—Dos pares de calzoncillos idem—Medias de lana, botas de gamuza, zapatos abotinados, pañitos de polvos, y cinta pa. el pelo y sombrero como el soldado—

**HABILITACION DE FAMILIA**—*Para una mujer*—Tres camisas—Tres pares de enaguas; unas de sarga, otras de bayeta y faldellín—Dos varas de crea pa. armadores—Dos pares de medias de Bruselas—Dos idem de calcetas—Dos pares de zapatos—Dos rebozos—Un sombrero—Seis varas de cinta.

*Para muchacho*—Una chupa de paño de Querétaro—Un par de calzones idem—Dos camisas de manta—Dos pares de calzoncillos idem—Un par de medias de lana—Dos pares de zapatos—Un sombrero—Una fresada—

*Para muchacha*—Dos camisas de crea—Dos pares de naguas de manta—Un paño de rebozo—Unas naguas de bayeta—Un faldellín de paño—Dos pares de medias o calcetas—Dos pares de zapatos—Una fresada—

NOTA: Ademas de las prendas referidas en la precedente relacion, podrá el Cap. Comido, proveer a los reclutas de algunas otras qe. considere de precisa necesidad, interviniendo en las compras y distribucion, como en las cuentas de estas suminstraciones, los Señores oficiales reales de las cajas de Guadalajara—(La misma fecha).

Son cópias de sus originales de que certifico—Arispe 10 de Febrero de 1780—(Firmado) Antonio Bonilla—

pp. 393-422.

### PENINSULA DE CALIFORNIA

**P**ADRON del vecindario, el qe. tiene el pueblo de la Reyna de los Angeles fundado el 4 de Ste. del 1781, al margen del Río de Porciúncula, y a distancia de 45 Leguas del Presidio de San Diego, 27 del parage designado pa. fundar el Presidio de Santa Barbara, y como a Legua y media de la Mision de San Gabriel. en expresion de nombres, y edad de los vecinos, sus mugeres, hijos y hijas, e igualmente se señalan las cabezas de Ganado, y sus especies, qe. se les han repartido, y pr. nota las qe. quedan de cargo del comun, como Padres de todas especies, herramientos, de Labranza; carpintería; y demás qe. han recibido a saber.

NOMBRES	Hombres	Mugeres	Niños	Niñas	Edades
Josef de Lara Español .....	*				50
Ma. Anta Campos Inda. Sabina.....		*			23
Josef Julian .....			*		4
Juana de Jesus .....				*	6
Ma. Faustina .....				*	2
Josef Anto. Navarro Mestiso .....	*				42
Ma. Regina Dorotea, Mulata.....		*			47
Josef Maria .....			*		10
Josef Clemente .....			*		2
Maria Josefa .....				*	4
Bacilio Rosas Indio.....	*				67
Ma. Manuela Calistra, Mulata .....		*			43
Josef Maximo .....			*		15
Carlos .....			*		12
Anto. Rosalino .....			*		7
Josef Marcelino .....			*		4
Juan Estevan .....			*		2
Ma. Josefa .....			*	*	8
Anto. Mesa Negro .....	*				38
Ana Gertrudis Lopez, Mulata.....		*			27
Antonio Maria .....			*		8
Ma. Paula .....				*	10
Anto. Villavicencio Español .....	*				30
Ma. de los Stos Soberina India .....		*			26
Ma. Anta Josefa .....				*	8
Josef Banegas Indio .....	*				28
Ma. Maxima Aguilar India .....		*			20

NOMBRES	Hombres	Mugeres	Niños	Niñas	Edades
Cosmé Damien.....			*		1
Alejo. Rosas Indio .....	*				19
Juana Rodriguez Coyota .....		*			20
Pablo Rodriguez Indio .....	*				25
Ma. Rosala. Noriega India .....		*			26
Maria Antonia .....				*	1
Manl. Camero Mulato .....	*				30
Ma. Tomasa Mulata .....		*			24
Luis Quintero Negro .....	*				55
Ma. Petra Ruvio Mulata .....		*			40
Josef Clemente .....			*		3
Maria Gertrudes .....				*	16
Maria Concepcion .....				*	9
Tomasa .....				*	7
Rafaela .....				*	6
Josef Moreno Mulato .....	*				22
Ma. Guade. Gertrudis Mulata .....		*			19
Anto. Miranda Rodrigz. chino viudo..	*				50
Juana Maria .....				*	11
Totales .....	12	11	11	12	

## NOTA

Que a los 11 prims. pobladores, se repartieron, amas de los Ganados qe. quedan demostrados soles. en qe. han construido sus casas, qe. pr. ahora son de Palisada embarrada y terrado y 2 suertes de tierra de regadio pa. siembra de 2 fanegas de Maiz, a cada uno, con mas una Reja, un Azadón, y una Acha, y al comun del Pueblo la precisa Herramienta de carreteria qe. como los Ganados qe. quedan demostrados, han de satisfacer a la Rl. Hacda, sobre los precios establecidos, de qe. les queda hecho el correspte. cargo, a continuacn. de sus asientos, en el libo. mero. de Poblacn, siendo prevenen. quedan señalados, solar, suertes de tierra, Herramientos y Ganados corresptes, al Poblador Anto. Miranda Rodriguez, qe. se halla en el Preso. de Loreto, y se lo entregaran luego qe. se preste. al referido Pueblo: San Gabl. y Nove. 19 de 1781.

pp. 420-21.

103

Plano de el Pueblo de la Reyna de los Angeles, y tierras de Labor qe. se han medido en numo. de 30 suertes de 200 varas de largo, y las mismas de ancho cabida de una fanega de sembradura de Maiz, en cada una, las cuatro primeras son de trescientas varas de Largo y ciento de ancho, los Marjenes Divisorios son de tres varas de ancho.

## PUEBLO DE LA REYNA DE LOS ANGELES

**E**XTRACTO de la Revista qe. pr. relacion pase yo Don José Franco. de Ortega, Tente. y Comte. de la Compa. qe. ha de Guardecer el Preso. de Sta. Barba, a los Pobladores, qe. gasan sueldo y racion en el referido Pueblo en 2 de Dice. de 1781.

## NOMBRES

Felix Villavicencio .....	P. en el citado Pueblo
Antonio Mesa .....	P. " Im.
Jose Lara .....	P. " Im.
Jose Vanega .....	P. " Im.
Pablo Rodriguez .....	P. " Im.
Manuel Camero .....	P. " Im.
Anto. Navarro .....	P. " Im.
Jose Moreno .....	P. " Im.
Basilio Rosas .....	P. " Im.
Alejandro Rosas .....	P. " Im.
Antonio Rodriguez .....	CP. " Im. en Loreto
Luis Quintero .....	P. " en el dho. Pueblo

## RESUMEN

Con sueldo y racion .....	P. " 11
Im. ....	CP. " 1

Total..... " 12

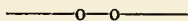
Nota: Que habiéndose comprendido en la Fa.

Nota del Antr. Extracto, al desertor Rafl. Mesa, como soldado se demuestra en su filiacion original, qe. ultimamente llegó, qe. su asiento fue de Poblador; pr. lo qe. queda excluido de la compania, correspondiéndole su haber de Poblador desde 12 de Junio de 1780, hta. el 10 de Octe. del mismo en qe. desierto—Ortega.

Es conforme a la revista, y como dho. es, he pasado a los Pobladores qe. estan en actual gose, en el referido Pueblo, en el día, mes, y año expresados de que certifico.

Joseph. Franco. de Ortega.

p. 423



1786—Agosto 14, Monterey.

PEDRO FAGES: REPARTICION DE SOLARES Y SUERTES DE  
TIERRA DE REGADIO Y SECADAL

**P**OR cuanto en el Tit. 14 del Rl. Reglamto. qe. gobierna en esta Peninsula se previene el arreglo, metodo, y ordenacn. conqe. deben repartirse las solares y suertes de tierra de regadio y secadal, con todo lo demás anexo al cultivo de labores, cria de Ganados, y fomento de los Pueblos de Gente de razn. qe. se situen en los territorios adjactes. á los Presos. de estos nuevos establecimientos, y conviniendo verificar las formalidades requisitas pa. dar posesn. á los vecinos del Pueblo de la Reyna de los Angeles pa. qe. subsistan en quieta y pacifica uniformidad; Pr. tanto Comisiono al Afs. del Preso. de Sta. Bárba. Dn. José Argüello, pa. qe. pase á dcho. Pueblo y con arreglo á la instruccion de sitado Rl. Reglamto. dé posesn. á nombre de S. M. (Q. D. G.) á cada uno de los Pobladores de las suertes de tierras, y solares qe. les están consignados, practicándolo pr. autos formales, qe. seguirá á continuacn. de esta mandamto. y formando



pa. cada interesado un despacho con insercion de copia de este Expedte. y de las Diligs. respectivas á cada uno, los remitira pa. su revalidacn. (y qe. sirvan de Titulos) á este Gobo. pa. en su vista determinar lo qe. sea mas convente. siendo prevension qe. debe hacerse constar qe. quedan los vecinos entendidos de lo qe. es realengo, y lo qe. del comun, como son los Ejidos, agua, pastos, leña, etc., qe. deben expresarse en cada despacho, ó diliga. de Posesn. qe. la admiten bajo las condiciones y penas qe. previene la insinuada Instruccn., como los privilegios, escepciones, y gracias con qe. el soberano les hace esta merced, qe. firmaran ellos, ú otro á su ruego, con el comisionado, y testigos; Y pr. últmo. qe. en el libo Mtro. se tome razn. de cada una de estas Posesiones, como de los fierros qe. se les dan pa. marcar sus Ganados; y qe. de todo se saque testimonio qe. se archivará en el expresado Preso. de Sta. Bárbara.

#### AUTO DE OBEDECIMIENTO

**E**N el Pueblo de la Reyna de los Anqs. á 4 dias del mes de Sete. de 1786, Yo Dn. José Argüello Alfs. de la Compa. del Rl. Preso. de Sta. Bárbara, en conseca. del mandamto. qe. antecede del Sr. Tente. Corl. Dn. Pedro Fages, Gober. de la Peninsula; Dije se proceda á su puntual cumplimiento. de posesionar á los vecinos del citado Pueblo de la Reyna de los Angeles á nombre de S. M. (Q. D. G.) de los solares y suertes de tierras qe. les estan consignado, con arreglo á lo dispto. en la instron. qe. inserta el Rl. Reglamto. de esta Prova. pa. los Pueblos de Gente de razn.; y enterado de sus articulos, con lo demás anexo al literal conteste del citado expedte.: mandé qe. concluidas qe. sean estas diligs. con las formalidades y requisitos necesarios, actuadas y con dos testigos de asista. se remitan (conforme y como se manda) á dcho. Sr. Gobrn. pa. su revalidacn., ó lo qe. sea de su Supr. agrado; y se saque testimo. de ellas qe. se archivará, en el Rl. Preso. de Sta. Bárba. así lo proveé, mandé, y firmé de qe. doy fé—Josef Argüello.

#### NOMBRAMIENTO Y ACEPTACION DE DOS TESTIGOS DE ASISTENCIA

**E**N dho. Pueblo, y en el día mes y año expresados, Yo el refdo. Alfs. Comiso.; en vista delante qe. antecede; siendo preciso nombrar 2 testigos pa. qe. asistan a las subsecuentes diligs. pa. cuyo efecto mande comparecer ante m. al cabo Victo. Felix, y al soldo. Roque de Cota (ambos del Preso. de Sn. Diego) á quienes haciendo saber dcho. nombramto.; respondieron le aceptaban, prometiendo su asista. con puntualidad á cuanto se ofreciera durante estas diligs.; y lo firmaron conmigo de qe. doy fé—José Argüello—Victo. Feliz—Roque de Cota.

#### AUTO DE POSESION AL PRIMER POBLADOR FELIX VILLA- VICENCIO DE SU RESPECTIVO SOLAR—

**E**N el refdo. Pueblo, y en el día, mes, y año citados; Yo el nominado Alfs. comiso., en continuacn. de estas diligs., mande comparacer ante mí y testigos de asista. á los 2 Pobladores incluso el hijo de Anto. Navarro, qe. pr. estar ausente este hace las veces de su Padre; y estando todos presentes, dí posesn., en nombre de S. M. de su respectivo solar de 20 vs. de ancho, y 40 de largo, al Poblador Félix Anto. Villavicencio, á qn. le hice saber; y respondió queda entendido de los Privilegios, escepciones y gracias con el soberano le concede esta merced bajo las penas impuestas á los desobedientes; y preguntado si admite su efectuada posesn? responde

la admite, se obliga y ofrece cumplir las obligaciones constituidas en su establecimto., y pr. no saber escribir hizo la señal de la Cruz, firmandolo yo con los de mi asistencia de qe. doy fé—entre rengls.—Excepciones: vale—  
José Argüello—X—Victe. Felix—Roque de Cota.

#### DILIGENCIA DE POSESION DE 4 SUERTES DE TIERRA PERTENECIENTES A DICHO VILLAVICENCIO

**E**N dho. Pueblo, y en el día, mes y año citados: Yo el referido Alfs., acompañado de los de asista. y Pobladores, pasé a las tierras de labor, donde precedida la correspte. medida de 200 varas en cuadro pr. cada suerte de tierra dí posesion á dho. Felix Anto. Villavicencio de sus 4 suertes de tierra qe. le correspden. todas de regadio, respto. de haber las suficites. de esta especie, y habiendose efectuado dicha Posesion con las mismas formalidades y requisitos qe. expresa la antecede. diliga. y satisfecho y enterado de todo pr. no saber escribir hizo la señal de la Sta. Cruz, firmandolo yo con los de mi asista. de que doy fé—

José Argüello—X—Victe. Felix—Roque de Cota.

#### DILIGENCIA DEL FIERRO DE HERRAR DEL CITADO VILLAVICENCIO

**E**N dho. Pueblo, y en los dias, mes y año, Yo el refdo. Alfs. teniendo presentes á los Pobladores ante mi y los de asista., he entreguí al nominado Villavicencio su correspte. fierro de herrar (cuya forma se demuestra al margen) quedando inteligenciado ser el mismo con qe. debe herrar sus Ganados mayores, y dho. fierro se ha registrado sin dro. algo. segn. previene el Arto. 8 de la citada Instruccion: y pr. no saber firmar hizo la señal de la Sta. Cruz, firmandolo y con los de mi asista. de qe. doy fé—

José Argüello—X—Victe. Felix—Roque de Cota.

#### AUTO PARA SEÑALAR LAS TIERRAS DE PROPIOS Y REALENGO COMO EJIDO Y DEHESAS—

**E**N el Pueblo de la Reyna de los Angeles a 5 dias del mes de Sete. de 1786. Yo Dn. José Argüello Alfs. de la Compa. del Rl. Preso. de Sta. Bárba., y comisiondo. pa. estas diligs. dije qe. hallandose concluidas las posesiones de solares, y suertes de tierra qe. a cada un poblador correspondió: Pasé con ellos, y los testigos de mi asista. á las tierras existes. sin sortear y efectuada la correspte. medida desde cerca de la Presa., hta. el lindero ó termino diviso. de las tierras repartidas, en cuya medicion resultaron 2200 varas de largo de norte á Sur, las qe. se han señalado pa. propios del Pueblo; quedando realengas todas las tierras de la parte opuesta de este rio y pueblo qe. pasan de 2000 vars. de largo, como así mismo las qe. no son comprendidas en las referidas suertes de Posesion ni de propios, señalando les, y igualmte. suficiente ejido pa. pueblo y dehesas, pa. pastar sus ganados, todo lo cual le hice saber y entender, como tambn. el goze de mantener sus ganados del aprovechamto. comun de aguas, y Pastos, leña y Madera con todo lo demás anexo al Espíritu de la citada Instruccion de Pueblos de Gente de razon; a todo lo cual respondieron acordes, quedan entendidos; y pr. no saber escribir hicieron la señal de la Santa Cruz, firmándolo yo con los de mis asista. de que doy fé—

José Argüello—X—Victe. Felix—Roque de Cota.

EN el Rl. Preso. de Sta. Bárba. a 18 días mes de Sete. de 1786. Yo Dn. José Argüello Alfs. de la compa. de dicho Preso. y comiso. en las prestes. diligs., en vista de su conclusn., y habiendose tomado razon de cada una de los respectiv. posesnes. y sus tierras. en el libro de Poblacn. del cargo del Tente. y Comte. de dho. Preso. Dn. Felipe de Goycoechea pr. qn. se sacó testimo. de todo qe. quedó archivado; dije se remitan estos originales al Supr. Gobrn. de esta prova. como previene su encabezamto., asi lo provei, mandé, y firmé de qe. doy fé— José Argüello.

## CUENTAS DE HABILITACION DE LOS POBLADORES<sup>1</sup>

No. 71

ANTONIO Mesa, negro de edad de 38 años, natural del Real de Los Alamos, casado su muger Anna Gertrudis Lopez de dicho Real, mulata de edad de 27 años, 2 hijos, Antonio Maria, y Maria Pasquala, el primero de 8 años, y el segundo de 10. Se registro de Poblador para los Nuevos Establecimientos de Monterrey, en la Villa de Sinaloa en 4 de Junio de 1780, y queda avecindado en el Pueblo de la Reina de los Angeles.

Primeramente tomo por principio de cuentas de mano del Capitan Don Fernando de Rivera lo siguiente—

	Ps.	DEVE	
		Rs.	Grs.
1 Silla con su fuste de Casa de Don Prudencio, en 13 ps. 4 rs.	013	4	0
1 par de Armas de montar en 20 rs. ....	002	4	0
1 terno de fierros de silla, en 12 rs. ....	001	4	0
2 frenos y un par de espuelas a 9 rs. pieza.....	003	3	0
2 pares de Riendas y un Cabresto, en 10 rs. ....	001	2	0
2 guruperas, a 3 rs. ....	000	6	0
1 Bota para agua .....	001	0	0
3 ps. para un par de Botas de poner .....	003	0	0
2 Sombreros, a 18 rs. ....	004	4	0
1¼ varas de Cotense para maleta, a 6 rs. ....	000	7	6
1¼ dichas de Ruan para paño, a 6 rs. ....	000	7	6
2 pares de Zapatos para la muger, y un par (de) dichos para hombre .....	001	7	0
1 fresada camera en Casa de Cornes, en 4 ps. 4 rs. ....	004	4	0
1 real de hilo para el paño .....	000	1	0
Por 94 diarios a 2 rs. cada uno desde el 1o. de Noviembre de '80 hasta (hta) el 2 de Febrero de (17)81, que salió socorrido del R(ea)l de Los Alamos .....	023	4	0
COPIA de su Libreta que principio desde el dia—4 de Junio de (17)80, de letra del Alferes (Alfs. D.) Don Man(ue)l Ruiz—			
En dicho dia 4 de Junio, 2 ps. de diario, y 6 grs. valor de la libreta .....	002	0	6
En 5 de dicho, 3 ps. para una mascada .....	003	0	0
En 13 del mismo de diario, 2 ps. ....	002	0	0
En 14 para Bastimento y diario para marchar a los Alamos	003	6	0
En 29 cargo para bastimento, 3 ps. (vastimto) .....	003	0	0
Item 10 rs. de Flete, o bagaje hasta el Fuerte .....	001	2	0
En 8 de Julio para carne fresca, 12 rs. ....	001	4	0
En 9 de dicho 1½ Almudes de maiz, a 6 rs. ....	001	1	0
Item ½ [Almud] de frijol, en 3 rs. ....	000	3	0
En 15 de dicho, ½ Almud de maiz .....	000	3	0
Item 2 dichos de lo mismo .....	001	4	0
Item 2 reales para Cigarros .....	000	2	0

<sup>1</sup> Archivo General de la Nacion. Provincias Internas Tom. 199.

	DEVE		
	Ps.	Rs.	Grs.
En 22 de dicho, un Almud de maiz en 6 rs. ....	000	6	0
Item un dicho de frijol, en item .....	000	6	0
Item 2 reales de Jabon .....	000	2	0
En 24 para curarse, 4 rs. ....	000	4	0
En 28 del mismo, ½ Almud de maiz .....	000	3	0
En 29 de dicho, 2 Almudes de maiz .....	001	4	0
Item, 2 reales para Jabon .....	000	2	0
En 5 de Agosto 2 Almudes de maiz y frijol a 6 rs. ....	001	4	0
Item 1 par de Zapatos de muger, en 6 rs. y 2 rs. de jabon	001	0	0
En 5 de Agosto 12 reales para bastimento .....	001	4	0
En 9 de dicho ½ almud de frijol en 3 rs. ....	000	3	0
En 12 de dicho 1 almud de dicho y 2 rs. en plata.....	001	0	0
Item 6 rs. en rs. para maiz .....	000	6	0
En 17 de dicho, 1 almud de maiz y frijol .....	000	6	0
En 19, 2 almudes de maiz y 2 rs. para jabon .....	001	6	0
En 22, ½ almud de maiz .....	000	3	0
Item un almud de dicho en 6 rs. ....	000	6	0
En 27 de dicho 2 almudes de maiz y frijol .....	000	6	0
Item 2 reales en dinero .....	000	2	0
En 2 de Setiembre, 2 almudes de maiz y frijol, en 6 rs...	001	4	0
Item 2 reales en dinero .....	000	2	0
En 9 de dicho 2 almudes de maiz y frijol, y 2 rs. en rs....	001	6	0
En 16 de dicho, en rs. de su Racion, 14 rs. ....	001	6	0
En 23 de dicho de su diario en rs. 14 rs. ....	001	6	0
En 30 del mismo de su Racion en rs. 14 rs.....	001	6	0
En 7 de Octubre, 14 rs. de su racion .....	001	6	0
En 14 de dicho, 14 rs. de racion .....	001	6	0
En 18 de dicho, Cargo 42 ps. que importaron los efectos ministrados para su vestuario como consta por menor en la <i>Minuta</i> .....	042	0	0
Idem cargo 48 ps. 4 rs. 8 grs. importe (impte.) de lo subministrado a su muger, como consta por la misma...	048	4	8
Idem (yt) cargo 26 ps. 1 grano, imp(or)te de lo subministrado a sus hijos como consta de la dicha.....	026	0	1
En 21 de dicho mes, cargo (co), 20 reales de diario hasta ultimo de este .....	002	4	0
En 24 un par de zapatos de Cordovan, en 6 rs. ....	000	6	0
Haviendo leído el todo de su cuenta combiene ser las partidas q(u)e señala, las mismas que recibio y puso una cruz, firmando Don Josef Arguello.			
Son a favor del Capitan Dn. Fernando Rivera..	231	3	3
Suma del Frente .....	231	3	3
Se le habona al contenido en esta cuenta los Diarios que le corresponden desde el 4 de Junio que se registro de Poblador, hasta el 2 de Febrero que salio socorrido de los Alamos .....			
Idem se le habona 10 rs. importe de un bagaje en que se condujo de la Villa del Fuerte a el Real de los Alamos	061	0	0
	001	2	0
	062	2	0
Resulta liquido en contra del Poblador .....	169	1	3

Conquerda con la cuenta que se ha formado a este Individuo, conforme a su Declaracion, e informes que se han tomado a causa de haverse perdido las originales que existian en poder del Capitan Don Fernando Rivera y



Moncaña en su muerte hacaesida en el Rio Colorado.

Mission de San Gabriel y Setiembre 18 de 1781.

V. B. [Visto Bueno]

José de Zúñiga.

Neve (Rúbrica)

(Rúbrica)

No. 72

**A**NTONIO Villavicencio, Español de 38 años, natural de la Villa de Chihuahua, casado, su muger Maria de los Santos Severina, natural del Real del Rosario, india de edad de 26 años, una hija Maria Antonia Josefa, mestiza de 8 años. Se registro de Poblador para los Nuevos Establecimientos de Monterrey en la Villa de Sinaloa, en 6 de Junio de 1780,—y queda avesindado en el Pueblo de la Reyna de los Angeles.

	DEVE		
	Ps.	Rs.	Grs.
Primeramte. declara haber tomado 20 ps. que le parese se pagaria al difunto Dn. Migl. Aviles minero de Sivorifoa	202	0	0
Item tomo en la sitada Villa 4 varas de Bretaña a 7 rs. para camisas a su muger .....	003	4	0
6½ varas de sarga a 12 rs. para Naguas.....	009	6	0
1½ de dichas (a 2½ rs.) de Mitán pa. forro.....	000	3	9
1¼ de seda y 4 varas de liston de a un real .....	000	6	6
7 vs. de Revecillo a 1 rl. y 12 rls. de echura al Sastre..	002	3	0
8 vs. de Manta Lanquina a 4 rls. ....	000	4	0
13 rls. de la Arras quando fue padrino .....	001	5	0
1 par de Medias de seda en 3 ps. 4 rs. ....	003	4	0
2 Bagajes desde Sinaloa a los Alamos a ½ rl. por legua..	005	0	0
1½ vars. de paño Querétaro para Chupa .....	003	0	0
4 dhas. de Manta de 2/3 para forro a 3 rs. ....	001	4	0
¼ de seda y 14 rls. de echura .....	002	0	6
½ de Botones a 3 rs. ....	000	4	6
2½ varas de tripe a 2 ps. para Calzons. ....	005	0	0
¼ de seda y una dozana de botons. en 5½ rs. todo .....	000	5	6
1 Peso y 2 rs. de echura, y 3 vars. de manta a 3 rs. pa. forro	002	3	0
6½ vs. de paño de Queréto. a 2 pesos para Capa .....	013	0	0
¼ de seda y la echura al sastre .....	001	2	6
1½ vrs. de Bayeta de Castilla para forro a 20 rs....	003	6	0
Un sombro. negro de Tarea en 18 rs. ....	002	2	0
16 vs. de manta de 7/8 para 2 mudas de Ropa a 4 rs..	008	0	0
½ de seda en 5 rls. ....	000	5	0
1 vara de Bretaña para Pañuelos en 6 rs. ....	000	6	0
2 pañitos poblanos en 5 rs. ....	000	5	0
2 Pars. de Zapatos en 5 rs. ....	001	2	0
2 dhos de Calzetas a 4 rls. ....	001	0	0
3 ps. para un par de Botas .....	003	0	0
1½ varas de liston a 2 rs. ....	000	3	0
1 paño de Bretaña en 6 ps. para camisas a la mugr....	006	0	0
1 par de Naguas de Bayeta azl de las que dio el Alf. Ruiz, en el Rl. de los Alamos, en 3 ps. 2½ rs. ....	003	2	6
1 faldellín de Paño de Queretaro de los qe dio el diho...	007	2	6
2 armadores de Crea de los que dio el diho .....	002	7	0
2 pars de calzetas a 4 rs. ....	001	0	0
3 pares de naguas blancas poblanas, a 15 ½ rs.....	005	6	0
2 pares de medias de Nimes a 14 rs. ....	003	4	0
2 pares de zapatos pa. mugr. a 6 rs. ....	001	4	0
2 rebozos a 11½ rs. ....	002	7	0
1 sombo. Negro de Tarea en 18 rs. ....	002	2	0

	DEVE		
	Ps.	Rs.	Grs.
6 varas de liston a un rl. ....	000	6	0
1 fresada y ½ camera en 4 ps. 4 rs. ....	004	4	0
5 varas de Crea pa. Camisa a 5 rs. ....	003	1	0
6 varas manta languina a 4 rs. ....	003	0	0
1 pañito de Rebozo chico, en un peso. ....	001	0	0
1 onza de seda en 10 rs. ....	001	2	0
1½ vars. de Bayeta azl. a 6 rs. ....	001	1	0
1 diha. de Mitan en 2½ rs. ....	000	2	5
2 vars. de Liston ....	000	2	0
2 vs. de seda y 6 rs. al sastre de la echura ....	001	0	0
1¼ vars. de Paño azl. Queretaro a 2 ps. pa. faldellin...	002	4	0
2 vars. de Liston, 2 rs. de seda y 6 rs. echura al sastre	001	2	0
1 fresada Pastora, en 9½ rs. ....	001	1	6
2 Pars. de Zapatos de muchachita a 4 rs. ....	001	0	0
1 Silla de Casa de Dn. Prudo., en 13 ps. 4 rs. ....	013	4	0
1 par de Armas de Montar, en 20 rs. ....	002	4	0
1 terno de fierros de silla, en 12 rs. ....	001	4	0
1 Cabresto en 3 rs. ....	000	3	0
2 pars. de Riendas a 3 rs. ....	000	6	0
2 frenos, y un par de Espuelas a 9 rs. pza. ....	003	3	0
3 pesos para un fuste y estribos ....	003	0	0
2 votas para Agua ....	002	0	0
1¼ vars. de Cotense para Maleta ....	000	7	6
3 pares de zapatos a 5 rs. ....	001	7	0
Un par dhos. a su Muger, en 6 rs. ....	000	6	0
Por 231 diarios a 2 rs. desde el 6 de Junio inclusive tomo partido, hta. el 2 de Febrero de 1781 que salio socorrido del Rl. de Los Alamos ....	060	2	0
	251	5	3

Y habiendole leído las partidas de su cuenta a este yndividuo, dijo estar conforme, y ser las mismas que tiene recibidas, las señalo con una Cruz, y firmo a su ruego el Alfz. Dn. Ramon Laso.

Sumas del Frente al favor del Cap. Moncada.....	251	5	3
Se le habonan al contenido 5 pesos que tiene cargados del importe de 2 bagages en que se trasporto con su muger del Rl. de Sinaloa a el de Los Alamos .....	005	0	0
Ydem 241 a 2 rs. conque se le socorrio, desde el 6 de Junio de (17)80, hasta el dos de Febrero de (17)81, por racion	060	2	0
	065	2	0
Resulta liquido en contra del Poblador.....	186	3	3

Conquerda con la cuenta, que se le ha formado al contenido, conforme a su declaracion e informs. que se han tomado ha causa de haberse perdido las originales que existian en poder del Capitan Don Fernando Moncada, en su muerte hacaesida en el Rio Colorado, Mision de San Gabriel, y Septiembre 13 de 1781.

V. B.

Neve.

José de Zúñiga.

## No. 73

**J**OSEF Banegas, indio de edad de 28 años, Natural del Rl. de Bolaños, casado su muger, Maria Maxima Aguilar, natural del (Rosario) yndia de edad de 20 años, un hijo Cosme Damien, de un año y dos meses. Se registro de poblador para los Nuevos Establecimientos de Monterrey, en el Rl. del Rosario, el 11 de Agosto de 1780, y queda avesindado en el Pueblo de la Reina de Los Angeles.

	DEVE		
	Ps.	Rs.	Grs.
Primeramente declara haber tomado en el Rl. del Roso.			
por el Capitan Dn. Fernando Moncada, 6½ vs. de sarga			
en la tienda de Josef Maria Farro, a 12 rs. vara...	009	6	0
1½ dhas. de Mitan a 2½ rs. ....	000	3	9
4 vars. de Liston a 1 rl. y ½ de seda.....	000	6	6
7 varas de Revecillo a un real .....	000	7	0
1 de Bretaña corriente, <i>Pza.</i> .....	006	0	0
1 onza de seda en 10 rs. ....	001	2	0
1 Silla Rosareña en 10 ps. 4 rs. ....	010	4	0
1 par de Coxinillos nuevos, en 3 ps. 4 rs. ....	003	4	0
1 Terno de fierros de silla en 12 rs. ....	001	4	0
2 frenos y un par de espuelas, a 9 rs. pza. ....	003	3	0
2½ vars. de tripe azl, a 20 rs. ....	007	4	0
3 vs. de Manta de 2/3 a 3 rs. pa. forro .....	001	1	0
¼ de seda y 10 rs. de hechura .....	001	4	6
1 doza. de Botons. de Metal, en 3 rs. ....	000	3	0
6 vars. Paño Queretano a 2 ps. pa. <i>Capa</i> .....	012	0	0
¼ de seda y la echura al sastre .....	001	2	6
1½ vars. Paño de Quereto. a 2 ps. ....	003	0	0
2 varas de manta de 2/3 a 3 rs. pa. forro .....	001	4	0
1½ dozenas de Botons pa. la chupa a 3 rs. ....	000	4	6
¼ de seda y 14 rs. de echura al sastre .....	002	0	6
1 sombo. en 18 rs. ....	002	2	0
3 pares de Calzetas a 4 rs. ....	001	4	0
16 varas de Manta Lanquina a 4 rs. para 2 mudas de ropa	008	0	0
½ onza de seda en 5 rs. ....	000	5	0
1 vara de Bretaña para pañuelos en un peso .....	001	0	0
2 Pañitos Poblanos a 2½ rs. ....	000	5	0
2 Pars. de zapatos de hombre. a 5 rs. ....	001	2	0
1¼ vars. de Liston pa. barbiquejo en 3 rs. ....	000	3	0
4 reales para unas botas en San Sebastian (Obispado de Durango) .....	001	6	0
1 pieza de Bretaña en 6 ps. ....	006	0	0
2½ varas de Bayeta a 6 rs. ....	001	7	0
1 vara de Mitan en 2½ rs. ....	000	2	6
3 varas de liston a un rl., y ¼ (vara) de seda.....	000	5	6
6 rs., hechura de las Naguas .....	000	6	0
1 onza de seda blanca .....	001	2	0
9 varas de Ruan flonte. a 6 rs. ....	006	6	0
1 par de medias de Mugr. en 3 ps. 4 rs. ....	003	4	0
2 vars. de Crea para Armadores, a 5 rs. ....	001	2	0
2 pars. Calzetas a 4 rs. ....	001	0	0
2 revozos a 11½ rs. ....	002	7	0
1 sombo. en 18 rs. ....	002	2	0
6 varas de liston de a un rl. ....	000	6	0
2 pars. de Zapatos de Mugr. en 12 rs. ....	001	4	0
1 fresada mo. camera en 4 pesos 4 rs. ....	004	4	0
1 dha. pastora para su hijo, en 9 reales .....	001	1	0

	DEVE		
	Ps.	Rs.	Grs.
1¼ vs. Cotense para maleta, a 6 reales .....	000	7	6
6 rs. pa. unos estribos .....	000	6	0
3 vars. de Ruan para dos paños de manos a 6 rs. ....	002	2	0
3 varas de Crea pa. la muchachita a 5 rs. ....	001	7	0
1 par de Riendas de Casa de Dn. Prudo., en 3 rs. ....	000	3	0
2 Jaquimas, y 2 Cabrestos, las las. a 3½ rs. y las otras a 3 rs. ....	001	5	0
1 Bota para Agua en un peso .....	001	0	0
1 Quarteron de Baqueta en 5½ reales, ¼ po. ....	000	5	6
1 real para Zudadero .....	000	1	0
3 Guruperas a 3 rs. ....	001	1	0
1 mascada en 18 rs. ....	002	2	0
Por 2 bagages del Real de Roso. a los Alamos, que regulan 120 leguas, 15 ps. ....	015	0	0
Por 176 diarios a 2 rs. desde el 11 de Agosto de (17)80, hta. el 2 de Febrero de '81, qe. salio socorrido del Rl. de los Alamos, 44 ps. ....	044	0	0
Habiendosele leido el todo de su cuenta a este individuo expuso. ser conforme las partidas de Generos, y efectos qe. contiene con las qe. ha recibido, y las señalo con una Cruz, firmando a su ruego el Alfs. Don Ramon Laso a Sn. Gab.			
Son a favor del Capitan Don Ferno. Ribera y Moncada..	194	6	3
Suma del Frente .....	194	6	3
Se le habonan 2 bagages con que se condujo el y su muger del Rl. del Rosario a el de los Alamos, a medio rl. por legua .....	015	0	0
Idem se le habonan 176 diarios a 2 reales que persivio y tiene cargados desde el 11 de Agosto de '80 hasta el 2 de Febrero de 1781, por racion .....	044	0	0
Resulta liquido en contra del Poblador .....	059	0	0
	135	6	3

Conquerda con la cuenta que se le ha formado al contenido conforme a su declaracion é informs. que se han tomado, a causa de haberse perdido las originales que existian en poder del Capitan Don Ferno. Rivera y Moncada en su muerte hacaesida en el Rio Colorado.

Mision de San Gabriel, y Septiembre 20 de 1781.

V. B.

Neve.

José de Zúñiga.

No. 74

**A**LEJANDRO Rosas, Yndio de Edad de 19 Años, natural del Rl. del Rosario casado, su muger Juana Rodriguez, natural de San Blas, coyota de edad de 20 años. Se registro de Poblador para los Nuevos Establecimtos de Monterrey, en la Villa de Sinaloa, el 7. de Noviembre de 1780, y queda avesindado en el Pueblo de la Reina de los Angeles.

	DEVE		
	Ps.	Rs.	Grs.
Primeramte. declaró haber tomado por primera partida en la Villa de Sinaloa, por los Dres. de su casamiento, 25 ps. ....	025	0	0
1 la. de zera en 5 rs. ....	000	5	0
1 par de medias de seda en 4 ps. ....	004	0	0
6½ varas de sarga pa. Naguas de la Mugr. ....	009	6	0
1½ dhas. de Mitán a 2½ rs. ....	000	3	3



	DEVE		
	Ps.	Rs.	Grs.
$\frac{1}{4}$ de seda en $2\frac{1}{2}$ rs. y 7 vars. de Revesillo a 1 rl.....	001	1	6
4 vars. de liston a un rl. ....	000	4	0
2 pesos de la hechura al Sastre .....	002	0	0
1 pieza de Bretaña corrte. en .....	006	0	0
1 de seda en onza .....	001	2	0
2 pars. de Calzetas a 4 rs. ....	001	0	0
2 dhos. de zapatos a 6 rs. ....	001	4	0
2 rebozos a $11\frac{1}{2}$ rs. ....	002	7	0
1 va. de Crea para Armador en 5 rs. ....	000	5	0
1 sombrero en 18 rs. ....	002	2	0
$1\frac{1}{2}$ vs. de liston pa. barbiquejo a 2 rs. ....	000	3	0
$2\frac{1}{2}$ vs. de Tripe azl. a 20 rs. para calzones .....	007	4	0
3 dhas. de manta de $\frac{2}{3}$ para forro a 3 rs. ....	001	1	0
$\frac{1}{4}$ de seda en $2\frac{1}{2}$ rs. ....	000	2	6
1 doza. de Botons. y la hechura todo en 11 rs. ....	001	3	0
16 vars. Manta Lanquina a 4 rs. ....	008	0	0
1 de seda en 10 rs. ....	001	2	0
1 Gurupera en 3 rs. ....	000	3	0
3 vars. de liston de a un real .....	000	3	0
1 pza. de Bretaña que saco en <i>Los Alamos</i> en 6 ps.....	006	0	0
6 vars. Paño de Queretaro a 2 ps. para Capa .....	012	0	0
$\frac{1}{4}$ de seda y un peso de la hechura .....	001	2	6
2 pares de calzetos a 4 rs. ....	001	0	0
2 pares Zapatos de hombre a 5 rs. ....	001	0	2
$1\frac{1}{4}$ varas de Cotense para Maleta .....	000	7	6
$\frac{1}{4}$ dhas. de Ruan para Paño de manos .....	000	7	6
1 real de seda pa. coserlo .....	000	1	0
1 vara de Bretaña para Paños .....	000	6	0
1 fresada Camera en 4 ps. 4 rs. ....	004	4	0
1 sombrero Negro de Tarea, en 18 rs. ....	002	2	0
1 silla aviada con fuste en <i>el Rosario</i> .....	010	4	0
1 terno de fierros de silla en 12 rs. ....	001	4	0
2 frenos y un par de Espuelas a 9 rs. ....	003	3	0
1 par de Riendas en $3\frac{1}{2}$ reales .....	000	3	6
1 Bota para agua en 1 peso .....	001	0	0
1 silla Rosareña pa. muger en .....	010	4	0
2 Bagages a un real pr. legua desde el Roso. hta. el Rl. de los Alamos .....	015	0	0
1 par de zapatos a su muger para salir de Los Alamos..	000	6	0
Por 88 diarios a 2 reales cada uno desde el 7 de Novre. que tomo partido, hasta el 2 de Febrero que salio socorrido	022	0	0
1 par de cojinillos en 3 pesos .....	003	0	0
Leida la cuenta del Ynteresado contesto sus partidas, y las señalo con una Cruz, y la firmo el Alferéz Dn. Josef Arguello.			
Son a favor del Capitan Don Fernando Rivera y Moncada	178	6	9
Se le habonaron al contenido en esta cuenta 15 ps. importe de los bagages en que se condujo el y su muger del Rl. del Rosario a los Alamos .....			
Item se le habonaron 88 diarios a 2 reales que tomo y tiene cargados desde el 7 de Nbre. de (17)80 hasta el 2 de Febrero de (17)81 .....	022	0	0
	037	0	0
Resulta liquido en contra del Poblador .....	141	6	9

Concuenda con la cuenta que se le ha formado al contenido, conforme a su declaracion é informes que se han tomado a causa de haberse perdido las originales que existian en poder del Capitan Don Fernando Moncada, en su muerte acaesida en el Rio Colorado.

Mision de San Gabriel y Setiembre 18 de 1781.

V. B.

Neve.

José de Zúñiga.

No. 75

**P**ABLO RODRIGUEZ Yndio de edad de 25 años, natural del Rl. de Santa Rosa, jurisdiccion de Bolaños, casado, su muger Maria Rosalia Noriega natural del Real de Panuco, jurisdiccion del Rosario, india de edad de 26 años, una hija Maria Antonia, de un año. Se registro de Poblador para los Nuevos Establecimientos de Monterrey en el Rl. del Rosario en 13 de Agosto de 1780, y queda avesindado en el Pueblo de la Reyna de los Angeles.

	DEVE		
	Ps.	Rs.	Grs.
Primeramente declara haver tomado por primer partida,			
un peso en reales de mano del Capitan Dn. Fernando,			
pa. curarse en el Real del Rosario .....	001	0	0
3 vars. de Bretaña ancha comprada en Casa de Don Lorenzo Moro a 10 rs. vara .....	003	6	0
1 sombrero negro de Tarea en 18 rs. ....	002	2	0
1 par zapatos de muger .....	000	6	0
1 par dhos. de hombe. ....	000	5	0
1 par espuelas en 9 rs. ....	001	1	0
1 silla Rosareña aviada .....	010	4	0
2 frenos a 9 rs. ....	002	2	0
1½ vars. de Paño de Quereto. a 2 ps. para Chupa.....	003	0	0
4 dichas de manta de 2/3 a 3 rs. para forros.....	001	4	0
1½ docenas de Botons a 3 rs. ....	000	4	6
¼ de seda y 14 reales de hechuras .....	002	6	0
2½ varas de Tripe para Calzons, a 2 ps. ....	005	0	0
3 dhos. de manta para forro a 3 rs. ....	001	1	0
¼ de seda y una dozana de botones .....	000	5	6
Un peso echura al sastre .....	001	0	0
16 varas manta Lanquina a 4 rs. ....	008	0	0
1 de seda en 10 rs., onza .....	001	2	0
2 pars. de calzetetas a 4 rs. ....	001	0	0
2 pares de zapatos de hombe a 5 rs. ....	001	2	0
2 pañitos Poblanos a 2½ rs. ....	000	5	0
1 vara de Bretaña en 6 rs. ....	000	6	0
6½ vars. de paño para Capa, a 2 pesos .....	013	0	0
¼ de seda y un peso al sastre .....	001	2	6
3 ps. 4 rs., pa. un par de botas .....	003	4	0
1 pza. de Bretaña par Camisas .....	006	0	0
1 par de medias de seda en 3 ps. 4 rs. ....	003	4	0
1 mascada de Marca .....	002	2	0
6½ vs. de sarga a 12 rs. ....	009	6	0
1½ dhos. de Mitán para forro a 2½ rs. ....	000	3	9
¼ de seda en 2½ reales .....	000	2	6
4 varas de listón a un rl. y 7 de revecillo.....	001	3	0
2 pesos de la hechura al sastre .....	002	0	0
2 varas de crea para armadores .....	001	3	0
1 onza de seda en 10 rs. ....	001	2	0
3 varas de Bayeta azl. para Naguas a 6 rs. ....	002	2	0

	DEVE		
	Ps.	Rs.	Grs.
1 dha. de mitan en 2½ reales .....	000	2	6
¼ de seda y 3 varas de liston a un real .....	000	5	6
2 pares de zapatos a 6 rs. ....	001	4	0
1 fresada camera en 4 ps. 4 rs. ....	004	4	0
1 cabresto en 3 reales y una Jaquima en 3½ rs. ....	000	6	6
1 Bota de Agua en 1 peso .....	001	0	0
1 terno de fierros de silla en 12 rs. ....	001	4	0
1¼ varas de cotense pa. Maleta a 6 rs. ....	000	7	6
1¼ varas de Ruan bramante pa. paño de manos.....	001	1	6
4 varas de manta para pañales a su hija, a 3 rs.....	001	4	0
2 dhas. de bayeta azl. para mantillas a 6 rs.....	001	4	0
Por 2 bagages del Rosario a los Alamos a mo. real po. legua .....	010	0	0
Por 173 diarios a 2 reales cada uno desde el 13 Agosto de (17)80 hta. el 2 de Febrero de (17)81 .....	043	2	0
Item 1 reboso que recibio en el Rl. de los Alamos.....	001	3	6
	168	4	3

## NOTA

Que este individuo aunque trajo dos bagages le dieron uno sin pago desde 20 leguas del Rosario hta. Sinaloa qe. se regulan 80 leguas, y se le vajan los correspondientes cuarenta reales, y habiendose le leido el todo de su cuenta, dijo ser las partidas en ellas constantes, las mismas que tiene recibidas, y son a su cargo, y la señalo con una Cruz, firmando a *su ruego* el Alfs. Dn. Josef Argüello.

Sumas del frente a favor del Capitan D. Ferno. Rivera y Moncada .....	168	4	3
Se le habonan a el contenido 10 pesos que tiene cargados del importe de los bagages en que se condujo con su muger del Rl. del Rosario a el de los Alamos .....	010	0	0
Item se le habonan 173 diarios a 2 reales que persivio y tiene cargados desde el 13 de Agosto de (17)80 hasta el 2 de Febrero de 1781 .....	043	2	0
	053	2	0
Resulta liquido en contra del Poblador .....	115	2	3

Conquerda con la cuenta que se le ha formado al contenido conforme a su declaracion e informes que se han tomado ha causa de haberse perdido las originales que existian, en poder del Capitan Don Fernando Rivera y Moncada en su muerte hacaecida en el Río Colorado.

Mision de San Gabriel y Setiembre 18 de 1781.

V. B.

Neve

(Rúbrica)

José de Zúñiga.

(Rúbrica)

# REGLAMENTO

Para los Presidios de la Peninsula de Californias, ereccion de nuevas Misiones, y fomento del pueblo y extension de los Establecimientos de Monterey.

**H**AVIENDOSE dignado S. M. determinar por Real Cédula de 21 de Marzo de 1775 se varíe el Reglamento provisional que actualmente gobierna en la Peninsula de Californias, para dar el debido cumplimiento á esta Soberana Resolucion se ha advertido ser el medio mas oportuno y conforme adaptar en todo lo posible á las reglas establecidas por el Real Reglamento de Presidios, el gobierno económico de los de la Peninsula y su Tropa, variando el pie, paga y manejo de intereses de un modo que, proporcionando con ventajas la fuerza de las Guarniciones para las salidas y demas funciones del Servicio, se verifique ahorro á los presentes gastos que eroga la Real Hacienda en los Presidios de Loreto, San Diego, Monterey y San Francisco aumento de Oficiales, igualdad y proporcion en sus sueldos los de Sargentos, Cabos, Soldados, Cirujano, Oficiales, mecánicos y Pobladores, de suerte que sean los precisos para la subsistencia, responsabilidad y atenciones de cada clase, comprendidos los Dependientes del corto Departamento de Marina de Loreto; Sínodos que han de continuarse á los Religiosos Misioneros, y orden con que deben situarse nuevas Reducciones, estableciendo reglas que aseguren el fomento, pueblo y extension de los antiguos y nuevos Establecimientos, con cuyo importante objeto, el de asegurar la comunicacion, y atraer al verdadero conocimiento de la Religion la numerosa Gentiudad que habita el preciso estrecho y arriesgado paso del Canal de Santa Bárbara, está determinada su ocupacion, estableciendo en él un Presidio y tres Misiones con un Pueblo que, situado en su inmediacion, pueda abastecer de Víveres con la produccion de sus siembras dicho Presidio y el de San Diego: y respecto de no ser asequible que el Inspector de los Presidios de Frontera reviste los de esta Península, por impedirlo la travesía de mar y enormes distancias á que están, se hace inescusable que el Gobernador ejerza las funciones de Inspector (como lo ha practicado) atendido á ser el Gobierno puramente Militar, y no estar este Gefé comprendido como Capitan de ninguno de los Presidios de su mando; y no siendo posible desempeñe por si este encargo, como, está ordenado, siendo de la Superior aprobacion se nombrará y creará un Ayudante que, bajo su direccion y órdenes, reviste los Presidios á que se le destine, cele la uniformidad, servicio, disciplina y subordinacion de la Tropa, como la mas puntual observancia de quanto está prevenido en el citado Real Reglamento, con la única variacion que advierten los Titulos siguientes.

## TITULO PRIMERO.

### 1.

**N**O permitiendo el presente estado de la Península variar el orden establecido de transportar de Nueva España de cuenta y riesgo de la Real Hacienda las Ropas, Efectos, Viveres y Caballerías para la subsistencia y entretenimiento de la Tropa, Pobladores y demas Dependientes de los Presidios, deberá seguir esta práctica remitiendose por el Factor de la Península y Comisario de San Blas lo correspondiente á las Memorias que han de pasarse anualmente por el Gobernador al Exmo Señor Virey, para que se digne determinar su compra y remision, ex-



ceptuado el Presidio de Loreto, cuya considerable distancia no permite la direccion de sus Memorias en tiempo oportuno, por lo que en derecho se pasan á S. E. por el Capitan.

2. Los Víveres, Vestuario, Armamento, Montura, Ropas, Caballerias y demas efectos que se remitan de México, San Blas ó Sonora, han de recibirse y distribuirse á la Tropa sobre precios en que resulten de primer compra, bajo cuya consideracion van reglados los sueldos; consiguientemente no han de tener otra intervencion que la del pago de los Individuos que la gozan y comprehenderá este Reglamento.

3. Asi como al presente está al cuidado del Comisario de Loreto y Guarda Almacenes de los restantes Presidios el pago de la Tropa y Dependientes de ellos, como el recibo de las respectivas Memorias y su distribucion, correrá en lo sucesivo con inspeccion del Capitan en Loreto, y de el Comandante en los Presidios de los nuevos Establecimientos, á cargo del Habilitado que ha de nombrarse entre los Subalternos de la Compañia, bajo las reglas que se expresarán adelante.

4. El Pago de Situados ha de continuarse en la Real Caja de México en el mismo orden que se practica, haciendose entrega al Factor de la Península, en virtud de Superior Decreto del Exmo Señor Virey, de la cantidad que se regula suficiente á habilitar las Memorias de géneros y efectos, en que se incluirá el tanto que ha de remitirse en pesos á cada Presidio, acreditandose asimismo al Comisario del Departamento de San Blas el caudal necesario para la compra de Víveres y Efectos de Racion, como lo demas que por Factura de dicho Comisario le remita conforme á las Memorias; y respecto que la citada entrega y compras se executan en los últimos meses del año y se verifica el recibo en los Presidios en Mayo ó Junio del siguiente, no deberá variar el método establecido de aviar la Tropa, con arreglo al alcance que cada individuo se deduzca por su jauste del año anterior, subministrandose entre año las Raciones y demas gastos inescusables que ocurran al Soldado ó su familia, por cuya razon se escusa la asistencia con dos reales diarios á Cabos y Soldados, resultando satisfacer la Real Hacienda los Situados en fines del año en que se vencen, y pagarse la Tropa á mediados del subsecuente: con cuyo conocimiento y prudente regulacion al importe de los Víveres, Vestuario, Armamento, Montura, Ropas, Efectos y Caudal que necesiten las Compañias, contando con el total á que asciende el Situado, y que han de satisfacerse en pesos los Sueldos de Oficiales y Cirujano, verificado el descuento de lo que entre año reciban, como los alcances que avienda la Tropa le resulte, formarán los Habilitados las Memorias, teniendo presente para su deduccion los rezagos que existen, ya sea dimanados de la entrega que ha de hacerseles, ó por sobrantes de uno á otro año, é igualmente que el dinero que se pida no ha de exceder por ahora de la quarta parte del Situado, excluido el sueldo del Gobernador y Ayudante (si se cría este empleo) que han de percibirlo separadamente como les convenga.

5. Como los precios de Ropas y Efectos están sugetos á alteraciones, siempre que por esta razon, ó la de ascender la Memoria á mayor cantidad de la que corresponda á las dos quartas partes del Situado, no pueda verificarse el surtimiento, se suplirá la falta de la quarta parte que ha de remitirse en pesos; y respecto de que la restante quarta parte se regula para costear los Víveres y Efectos que comprehenda la Memoria de San Blas, en quanto no alcance, se suplirá en los términos dichos.

6. Siempre que adelantadas las siembras, cosechas y esquilmos en los nuevos Establecimientos, puedan proveerse los Presidios en el todo ó parte de los Víveres que necesiten, en tal caso se pedirá por los Habilitados la cantidad que corresponda á su compra, á mas de la que queda

señalada, baxará su equivalente en Semillas en la Memoria de San Blas, y proporcionalmente de la consignacion hecha en pesos para su surtimiento.

7. La suma dificultad y pérdidas que ofrece el transporte y conduccion de Caballerias desde Sonora á esta Península, obliga á mantener con tres, ó quatro cada Soldado, y á que exista de cuenta de la Real Hacienda en cada Presidio una Recua de veinte y cuatro ó treinta mulas para la conduccion de la carga de las Embarcaciones, proveer de Víveres las Escoltas, y socorrer el Presidio que, por pérdida, arribada, ó considerable retardo de un Barco, falten las semillas y Efectos de primera necesidad; y substituyendo dichos motivos, el de la conduccion de Raciones á los Pobladores del nuevo Pueblo de S. Joseph Guadalupe, la que ha de hacerse á el Pueblo que está determinado fundar, y las demas faenas que han de ocurrir para el establecimiento del Presidio y Misiones en el Canal de Santa Bárbara, á que en el primer año ha de conducirse por tierra todo bastimento y demas preciso para su subsistencia, á que se agrega deberse acarrear en lo sucesivo los frutos de los Pueblos para proveer los Presidios: no siendo verificable poner esta Tropa en el pie de Caballerias que está la de la Frontera, hasta tanto que aumentada la cria de caballada en la Península, se facilite, es conforme, que completandose las Recuas de Loreto y San Francisco al número de veinte y quatro mulas cada una con su correspondiente apero, y de treinta mulas la de S. Diego, se surta de otras treinta el Presidio que ha de situarse en el Canal, igualmente aviadas, todo de cuenta de la Real Hacienda, quedando su conservacion, y reemplazo de las que mueran ó se inutilicen, como el reparo y entretenimiento de aparejos y demas perteneciente, como el pago de un Arriero en cada Presidio, de cargo del fondo de gratificacion, como gasto general en lo sucesivo; y en el caso de que por las otras atenciones á que está destinado, no alcance á cubrir este gasto, sea la falta de cuenta del Comun de las Compañias que en todo tiempo han de responder de la existencia de dichas Recuas, comprehendida la de Monterrey, que en el día existe en quarenta mulas de carga.

8. Siendo inescusable mantener los oficios de Carpinteria y Herreteria á estas recientes adquisiciones de Monterrey, quedarán con los Sueldos que se les consignan los dos Maestros, el Carpintero, y tres Herreros que actualmente existen; y este gasto se comprehenderá como parte del Situado de Monterrey y San Diego, en que están destinados, siendo éste el único que por esta razon ha de impender la Real Hacienda: pues quedando á beneficio de estos establecimientos todos los útiles y herramientas correspondientes á dichos oficios y el de Albañil, que sean existentes en la entrega que ha de formalizarse á los Habilitados, ha de costearse de su conservacion y reparo, y el producto de las composiciones y obras que se hagan á particulares, aplicandose el sobrante que resulte á el pago ó racion de quatro Aprendices que han de solicitarse paradichos oficios, á cuyo efecto ha de llevarse la correspondiente cuenta; debiendose entender la conservacion de los referidos oficios, y respectivo gasto de la Real Hacienda.

#### TITULO SEGUNDO.

*Pie, paga y gratificacion de las Compañias y Dependientes de Presidios y Departamento de Marina de Loreto; puestos que cubre la Tropa, y distancias á que estan situados.*

##### 1.

**L**A Compañia del Presidio de Loreto, Cabecera de la antigua California, consta y ha de permanecer en el pie de Capitan, Teniente, Alférez, y quarenta y quatro Plazas, incluidos dos Sargentos y tres Cabos, con que debe conservar el pequeño Destacamento de un Sargento y seis

Soldados en el Real de Santa Anna del Sur, distante cien leguas del Presidio: cubre con un Oficial subalterno, dos Cabos y veinte y tres Soldados las tres Misiones de la Frontera del Norte, cuyo intervalo se regula de doscientas ochenta leguas de la última á Loreto, donde ha de continuar la existencia del Capitan, un Oficial subalterno, que ha de ser el Habilitado, un Sargento, un Cabo y diez Soldados: dista del siguiente trescientas cincuenta leguas.

2. El de San Diego constará de Teniente, Alferez y cincuenta y dos Plazas, incluso un Sargento y cinco Cabos, aumentandose el pie actual el empleo de Alferez. Debe cubrir las tres Misiones de su distrito con un Cabo y cinco Soldados cada una, y verificada la fundacion del nuevo Pueblo, pondrá en él una Salvaguardia de quatro Soldados, que solo permanecerá los dos primeros años: con lo que queda reducida la Guarnicion á un Teniente, un Alferez, y treinta Plazas, incluso un Sargento y dos Cabos, con que ha de atender á las salidas y demas funciones del Servicio: regulando al que sigue ciento setenta leguas.

3. El de San Carlos de Monterey constará de las mismas Plazas que el antecedente, proveyendose á la Compañia los empleos de Teniente y Alferez; quedarán suprimidas tres Plazas sencillas de su actual pie; debe continuar las Escoltas de un Cabo y cinco Soldados en cada una de las tres Misiones de su pertenencia; tiene empleados quatro Soldados en el pueblo de San Joseph; y quedarán existentes en la Guarnicion para las funciones del Servicio un Teniente, un Alferez, un Sargento, dos Cabos, y veinte y siete Soldados. Se halla quarenta y dos leguas del que sigue.

4. El de San Francisco constará de Teniente, Alferez treinta y una Plazas, incluso un Sargento y quatro Cabos; se aumenta á su actual pie el empleo de Alferez, y se le suprimen tres Plazas sencillas; debe cubrir con dos Cabos y diez Soldados las dos Misiones de su término; y le resultarán para el servicio del Presidio y salidas un Teniente, Alferez, y diez y nueve Plazas, incluso un Sargento y dos Cabos.

5. El Canal de Santa Bárbara se halla á setenta y quatro leguas del Presidio de San Diego, y setenta del de Monterrey; se dilata entre la Costa y Sierra de la Cieneguilla como veinte y seis leguas, siendo media á tres quartos su mayor anchura; es lleno de altas lomerias, barrancos y quebras profundas, cuyo preciso paso, en que se regulan de ocho á diez mil Gentiles los que pueblan veinte y una Rancherias numerosas que á cortas distancias estan situadas en las alturas y puntas contiguas á la Playa, á cuya inmediacion, bien sea por ella, ó por la altura, dirige el camino real, lo que evidencia el riesgo á que pasan expuestas las pequeñas Partidas que le giran, y que si algun incidente pone de mala fé, ó declara enemiga aquella Gentilidad, quedaria cortada la comunicacion de los antiguos y nuevos Establecimientos, cuyo surgentes motivos han fundado la determinacion de ocupar este paso en la forma siguiente.

6. El Presidio que ha de situarse en el centro del Canal constará su Compañia de Teniente, Alferez, y veinte y nueve Plazas, incluso un Sargento y dos Cabos; ha de establecerse á su abrigo una Reduccion, que en adelante variará su posicion á el parage inmediato que proporcione mas tierras y suficiente agua para el beneficio de labores, y entonces ha de darsele de la Guarnicion la Escolta de un Cabo y cinco Soldados; deben fundarse á los estremos de dicho Canal para su perfecta ocupacion otras dos Reducciones, y guarnecerse con un Sargento y catorce Soldados cada una; se considerarán dichas Plazas como supernumerarias á la Compañia del Presidio, interin se aseguran estos Establecimientos con la paz y buena admision de la Gentilidad: conseguido con los rápidos progresos que de ben esperarse en la espiritual conquista, se reducirán proporcionalmente hasta que queden en la regular Escolta de un Cabo y cinco Soldados cada una; los Sargentos se incorporarán de aumento á



las Compañías de San Diego y Monterrey, y las diez y seis Plazas restantes se destinarán á guarnecer otras Reducciones que se determine fundar, en cuyo caso se agregarán á las Compañías mas inmediatas de los sitios en que se verifique.

7. El Situado anual del Presidio de Loreto será 12522 ps. 4 rs. á que agregados 1996 ps. á que asciende el correspondiente al Departamento de Marina, que por surplus han de acreditarse anualmente al Situado del Presidio, importa 14518 ps. 4 rs. distribuidos en esta forma.

	Pesos	Rs.
Sueldo anual del Capitan .....	1500	
Del Teniente .....	550	
Del Alferez .....	400	
De cada uno de los dos Sargentos 262 ps. 4 rs.....	525	
De cada uno de los tres Cabos 225 ps. ....	675	
De cada una de las treinta y nueve Plazas de Soldados á 217 ps. 4 rs. ....	8482	4
Por la Gratification de 10 ps. anuales por Plaza sencilla.....	390	
<b>Total del Presidio .....</b>	<b>12522</b>	<b>4</b>

#### DEPARTAMENTO DE MARINA

##### *Del Referido Presidio.*

	Pesos	Rs.
Sueldo de un Carpintero de Ribera al año .....	132	
De un Herrero .....	120	
De un Galafate .....	120	
<i>Tripulacion de la Balandra el Pilar.</i>		
Sueldo anual del Patron .....	120	
Del Guardian .....	84	
De ocho Marineros á 72 ps. cada uno .....	576	
<i>Tripulacion de la Lancha Lauretana.</i>		
Su Arraez al año .....	84	
De ocho Marineros á 60 ps. cada uno .....	360	
Por gasto, anual de carenas recorridas y arboladuras de una Balandra y dos Lanchas se regulan .....	400	
<b>Total Situado del Presidio by Departamento..</b>	<b>14518</b>	<b>4</b>

Queda suprimida por este Reglamento la Tripulacion de la Lancha San Juan Nepomuceno, cuyo Buque ha de conservarse listo para armarle siempre que por grave motivo y por solo el término que la urgencia, sean precisas las tres Embarcaciones, y á este efecto quedará el actual arraez de Guardian de la Balandra.

El Situado Anual del Presidio de San Diego será de 13162 ps. 4 rs. distribuidos en el orden siguiente:

	Pesos	Rs.
Sueldo anual del Teniente .....	550	
Del Alferez .....	400	
Del Sargento .....	262	4
De cada uno de los cinco Cabos 225 ps. ....	1125	
De Cada una de las 46 Plazas sencillas de Soldados 217 ps. 4. rs. ....	10005	
Por la Gratification de 10 ps. anuales por Plaza sencilla.....	460	
	12802	4
Un Carpintero al año .....	180	
Un Herrero idem .....	180	
<b>Total .....</b>	<b>13162</b>	<b>4</b>



El Situado Anual del Presidio que ha de establecerse en el Canal de Santa Bárbara, será de 7577 ps. 4 rs. á que agregados 6895 ps. que importa el correspondiente á las dos Escoltas que han de proveerse interinamente asciende á 14472 ps. 4 rs. distribuidos así:

	Pesos	Rs.
Sueldo anual del Teniente .....	550	
Del Alferez .....	400	
Del Sargento .....	262	4
De Cada uno de los dos Cabos 225 ps. ....	450	
De cada una de las 26 Plazas de Soldados á 217 ps. 4 rs. ....	5655	
Por la Gratificacion del fondo comun á 10 ps. por Plaza ....	260	
	<hr/>	
	7577	4

*Escoltas.*

	Pesos	Rs.
De cada uno de los dos Sargentos 262 ps. 4 rs. ....	525	
De cada una de las 28 Plazas de Soldados 217 ps. 4 rs. ....	6090	
Por la Gratificacion del fondo comun á 10 ps. por Plaza ....	280	
	<hr/>	
Total .....	14472	4

El Situado Anual del Presidio de S. Carlos de Monterey será de 17792 ps. 4 rs. distribuidos de este modo:

	Pesos	Rs.
Sueldo anual del Gobernador .....	4000	
Del Teniente .....	550	
Del Alferez .....	400	
Del Cirujano .....	450	
Prest del Sargento .....	262	4
De cada uno de los cinco Cabos 225 ps. ....	1125	
De cada una de las 46 Plazas sencillas de Soldados 217 ps. 4 rs. ....	10005	
Por la Gratificacion del fondo comun á 10 ps. anuales por Plaza ....	460	
	<hr/>	
	17252	4
Un Carpintero al año .....	180	
Dos Herreros con 180 ps. cada uno .....	360	
	<hr/>	
Total .....	17792	4

El Situado Anual del Presidio de S. Francisco será de 8027 ps. 4 rs. distribuidos en esta forma:

	Pesos	Rs.
Sueldo anual del Teniente .....	550	
Del Alferez .....	400	
Prest del Sargento .....	262	4
De cada uno de los quatro Cabos 225 ps. ....	900	
De cada una de las 26 Plazas de Soldados á 217 ps. 4 rs. ..	5655	
Por la Gratif. del fondo comun á 10 ps. anuales por Plaza..	260	
	<hr/>	
Total .....	8027	4
Un Poblador en cada uno de los dos primeros años por sueldo y racion .....	116	3½
Por la racion en cada uno de los tres años siguientes que le están concedidas .....	60	
	<hr/>	

## TITULO TERCERO.

*Vestuario.*

## 1.

**A**SI como se han comprehendido en las Memorias anuales las Ropas y efectos correspondientes á uniformar la Tropa de estos Presidios, siguiendose al Soldado considerable atraso, ya por excedente lo que para vestuario se le ha subministrado, ó porque faltando Sastres para la construccion, permanecen tiempo con falta de las precisas prendas, ó inutilizan el género errando su corte, deberán los Habilitados pedir en lo succesivo l vestuario correspondiente á sus Compañías, hecho á proporcion de tallas, individuando las prendas ó vestidos pertenecientes á cada uno; y como quiera que el todo del vestuario he de ser conforme á lo prevenido por el Real Reglamento, así como su distribucion, se tendrá presente, que no bastando para la continua fatiga de este servicio un par de Calzones, y algunos la Chupa, para la duracion de un año, ha de pedirse el aumento de estas prendas que se regule preciso é igualmente que siendo embarazosa la Cartuchera de madera y dobles Cañones, deben hacerse de una hilera y veinte y quatro cañones de oja de lata, que forrados en baqueta, fijen unidos en la correa que ha de ceñir el cuerpo, y á cuyo efecto ha de ser de vara y media de largo con el correspondiente ancho; la cañonera ha de cubrirla una cartera de baqueta suave, dará principio á seis dedos de la evilla, que será de laton, lisa, con dos clavillos y dos pequeñas bolsas en los extremos de dicha cañonera, la una con un pequeño polvorin de oja de lata.

## TITULO CUARTO.

*Armamento y Montura.*

## 1.

**H**A de ser en todo igual á lo prevenido por el Real Reglamento; y no siendo asequible poner la tropa de esta Península en el pie de ocho caballerías cada Soldado por la dificultad de su transporte y conduccion, se mantendrán con las mas que se pueda, interin que fomentada la cria en los nuevos establecimientos, sea suficiente á la Remonta de todos los Presidios.

2. Respecto de mantenerse la cavallada á la inmediacion de los Presidios, á los que se trae diariamente mañana y tarde, no estando expuesta la tierra á rebatos de enemigos, y que una pronta salida no se demora por la union y cuidado con que conserva, no se variará la práctica establecida de tener quatro caballos de día y ocho de noche atados en el Presidio, cuyo número se aumentará siempre que se advierta motivo que obligue á ello.

## TITULO QUINTO.

*Distribucion de Caudales, y orden con que han de llevarse las quantas generales y particulares por el Habilitado.*

## 1.

**S**UPUESTO que ha de asistirse entre año la Tropa por el Habilitado en los gastos particulares que ocurran á sus individuos y familias, que por no haber comercio en la Península, forzosamente han de impenderlos en los respectivos Almacenes, se excusa socorrer diariamente á Cabos y Soldados con dos reales diarios, como se practica en los Presidios de Frontera; bien que de ocurrir algun urgente motivo al que se halle con suficiente alcance, y en el buen estado que corresponde, con conocimiento y orden del Capitan ó Comandante de la Compañía, podrán anticiparsele veinte ó treinta pesos; pero por ningun caso he hará á el que no esté en el estado y alcance expresado, de que será responsable el Comandante.

2. Atendido que el cobro del Situado de estos Presidios se hace en fines del año, como queda expuesto, y que el avio y pago de la Tropa no se efectúa hasta mediados del siguiente, por cuyo medio, en qualquier tiempo que se verifique la salida del Saldado, supuesto el obierno económico que ha de seguirse, se hallará con suficiente alcance, á mas del valor de armamento y caballerias, solo se retendrán á Cabos y Soldados cincuenta pesos de fondo, que han de descontarse en los quatro primeros años para los fines que expresa el Tit. 4. Art. 2. del Real Reglamento.

3. De dos descuentos que anualmente se verifican para el fondo de alcances de la Compañía, ha de hacerse por el Habilitado la correspondiente entrada en Caxa con lista que individúe los nombres de Cabos y Soldados, cantidad retenida á cada individuo, y total caudal á que ascienda; á quien para su resguardo se firmará un tanto de dicha Lista, con expresion de quedar depositada en Caxa la cantidad de su importe por el Depositario, que ha de reputarse como tal el Capitan en Loreto, y el segundo Oficial que no ejerza la habilitacion en los restantes Presidios: el segundo y siguientes años se hará la introduccion del caudal perteneciente á este fondo con su respectivo ajuste, formandose el cargo de la existencia de fin del año anterior, y monto de los descuentos del presente, se manifestarían los pagos hechos en él, y el total en que queda dicho fondo.

4. El ajuste de la cuenta del año verificados los descuentos antecedentes, y el de dos por ciento que ha de percibir el Habilitado, ha de hacerse con intervencion del Capitan ó segundos Oficiales expresados en el antecedente Articulo, y del Interesado ó Sugeto que nombre para que la examine, abonando en dinero de contado á cada uno lo que devengue, en el mismo orden que advierte el Real Reglamento.

5. El fondo de gratificacion del Presidio á razon de diez pesos por Plaza sencilla, tiene por objeto, á mas de los gastos generales, anticipar el coste de la racion con que ha de asistirse á los Indios Prisioneros, ó á los que se presenten á tratar de treguas, y anticipar la habilitacion de las Reclutas, bajo las precisas reglas prevenidas en el Art. 5. de este Titulo en el Real Reglamento el costo que ocasione el salario de un Arriero, reparo y entretenimiento de aparejos y demás avios, y el reemplazo de mulas de requa que mueran ó se inutilizen en cada Presidio, que dando responsables el comun de las Compañías (segun queda advertido) del tanto que no alcance á cubrir el fondo, prorrateandose el descubierto qué resulte proporcionalmente comprehendidos Oficiales, atendido á que quedan las requas destinadas á beneficio de las Compañías, y consiguientemente han de responder de su existencia en todo tiempo, y por ningun caso hacerse cargo á la Real Hacienda de lo que puedan exceder los gastos de ésta y demás atenciones á que está aplicado el fondo.

6. Su cuenta ha de llevarse por el Habilitado, intervenida por los demás Oficiales del Presidio, con la mayor exactitud y justificacion; anualmente se introducirá en Caxa con el Caudal correspondiente á este fondo su respectivo ajuste, con los documentos que comprueben la legitimidad de sus gastos, que ha de hacerse de acuerdo y determinacion de los Oficiales de la Compañía, los que sean inexcusables y no permitan la demora de consultar al Gobernador, y esperar su resolucion, lo que precisamente ha de observarse en todos los que no sean executivos, como dar cuenta de los que por serlo se hubiesen practicado, sin embargo de que ha de examinar en las Revistas su bueno y legal gobierno, para dar cuenta anualmente de las existencias y gastos juntamente con lo demás relativo al estado de cada Presidio y Compañía al Señor Comandante General.

7. Las cuentas generales han de llevarse en un Libro, que se intitulará de Caxa; su primer partida de cargo será la cantidad que resulte

existente por la entrega ó cuenta anterior en ropas, efectos, víveres, reales ó caballerías; seguirán las del valor de las memorias que se reciban de México y San Blas, el total de alcanzes de la Compañía y dependientes del Presidio, y el importe producido de potros, reses y demás ganados que en el año se huvieren distribuido á la Tropa, cuyas partidas han de ser las últimas de cargo, así en esta cuenta, como en las particulares. Los referidos cargos han de comprobarse con el Inventario de entrega en el primer año, y en los siguientes con el Inventario de existencias, que ha de formalizarse en fin de cada año (con intervencion de los Oficiales del Presidio) y su respectiva cuenta: las Facturas originales de México y San Blas con copias de los correspondientes Recibos dados por el Habilitado, los particulares ajustes y cuentas de la Compañía y dependientes del Presidio, y los documentos que justifiquen las entradas pertenecientes á la Real Hacienda, que han de hacerse por lo respectivo á ganados en cuenta separada; las partidas de data son y han de calificarse el pago de prest y sueldos con los ajustes y cuentas particulares de Tropa y dependientes del Presidio; la introduccion en caja del caudal correspondiente á la gratificacion comun, y retencion hecha á Cabos y Soldados, hasta verificar el fondo de alcance prevenido en sus respectivos ajustes; las deudas de individuos de la Tropa y dependientes del Presidio por sus cuentas; y el monto de las existencias de fin del año se justificarán por su Inventario, con lo que, deduciendo del total de data el de cargo, se demostrará la igualdad, alcance ó descubierto que resulte.

8. Los ajustes y cuentas particulares de Oficiales, Cirujano, Sargento, Cabos, Soldados y dependientes se llevarán en un Quaderno que anualmente ha de formarse á este efecto: dará principio con Indice que exprese los nombres y folio en que se halle la cuenta de cada uno, que encabezada con su empleo y nombre, se hará el asiento de la partida que le resultó el año anterior de alcance ó débito, que se sacará al margen y rayará, para seguir las subministraciones que en el presente se le hagan. Las partidas han de instruirse con la cantidad, calidad, precio y total valor del efecto, notando al contramargen el mes y día de su dacion, que ha de ser reglada en precios á los que consten de las originales Facturas, ó exprese el Arancel, que ha de formarse en fin de Diciembre; se cerrarán las cuentas, deduciendo del total de distribucion y débitos el de haber, se manifestará el alcance que resulte, cuya satisfaccion ha de notarse á presencia del interesado segun queda prevenido.

#### TITULO SEXTO.

##### *Subministracion de las prendas de vestir y otras necesarias al avio de las familias de la Tropa.*

##### 1.

**N**O siendo combinable en estos Presidios sujetar el surtimiento de sus Memorias á las listas que previene el Real Reglamento dén los individuos de la Tropa de las ropas y efectos que necesiten para su avio y el de sus familias, así por la intermision de un año ó mas en que ha de verificarse su arribo y recibo, como porque no habiendo otro medio para surtirle el Soldado ó proveerle, que el de la remesa general, se seguiria falta de los renglones precisos, pues anciosos de percibir el sobrante de su haber en dinero, lo preferiria al forzoso entretenimiento de su muger, hijos y demás familia, por lo que es indispensable variar esta práctica en estos Presidios, y que solo dén dichas Listas los Oficiales, Cirujano y Sargentos, reglandose para la formacion de Memorias á lo prevenido en el Art. 4. Tit. 1. de este Reglamento.

2. Pudiendo verificarse que alguno de los géneros efectos que se remitan por el Factor no sean absolutamente de recibo justificado, y no



siendo causado el deterioro por averia padecida en su transporte, se le hará cargo en primera ocasion, y de ser posible, con la misma embarcacion que lo haya conducido.

3. Siendo inevitables las mermas que padecen las semillas y efectos de racion despues de su recibo, principalmente el Maiz que comunmente se desembarca agorgojado, la Manteca y Panocha, que derrite y reviene el calor de las bodegas, y el segundo efecto permanece revenido, y aun llega á derretir las frecuentes nieblas y humedad de este temperamento, á que se agrega la diferencia y desperdicio que ofrece la distribucion por menor, y la que causa la conduccion de dichos efectos, víveres y menestras para la subsistencia de la Tropa empleada en escoltas, no debiendo el Habilitado reportar estas pérdidas, in menos las que ofrecen los géneros, cuyos aneages no corresponden con su respectivo vareo, siendo conforme sufra estas quiebras el Comun; para proceder con la justificacion que corresponde, no se le siga agravio, y quede indemnizado el Habilitado, se observará que, precediendo nombramiento, que harán los Cabos y Soldados de la Compañia, de dos Apoderados, en los mismos términos que se prevenirá en el Cap. 9 del Tit. 13. á su presencia y de los Oficiales se haga tanteo de una, dos ó tres piezas de cada género, vareandolas por distintas manos; y descubierta la falta que resulte, y numero de varas que produzcan, se deducirá por el valor que señale la Factura á las piezas, cotejadas el precio de cada vara á el que ha de reglarse el dispendio de las restantes de su calidad, practicando lo mismo con todos los demás efectos que ofrezcan diferencia, se notarán todas las que se reconozcan en el mismo acto, y firmadas por los Oficiales y Apoderados, será el Arancel que fixe los precios de distribucion á los géneros y efectos que ofrezcan merma; y para cubrir las de semillas y efectos de racion, se aumentará un real á el precio de cada fanega de Maiz, Frijol, Garvanzo y Lenteja; un real á cada arroba de Manteca y Arroz, y dos reales la arroba de Panocha, con lo que quedarán á cargo del Habilitado las mermas y diferencias prevenidas, como las que resulten por descuido en la colocacion y resguardo de quanto se fie á su cuidado.

#### *TITULO SEPTIMO.*

##### *Pólvora.*

##### 1.

**H**A de observarse puntualmente lo prevenido en los Articulos 1, 2, 3 y 5 de este Tit. en el Real Reglamento, diferenciando el 4, en que el repuesto de Pólvora y Balas existente en cada Presidio, ha de ser correspondiente á diez y seis libras por Plaza, atendida la dificultad y riesgos que ofrece la conduccion desde México, donde ha de proveerse la falta que resultare, justificada en la cuenta particular que se ha de llevar de los consumos, que aprobada por el Gobernador, y á su pedimento, se suplirá por la Factoria de dicha Capital, dignandose determinarlo el Exmo. Señor Virrey.

#### *TITULO OCTAVO.*

##### *Provision de Empleos.*

##### 1.

**B**AJO las reglas establecidas por el Real Reglamento en este Titulo, siempre que vacare la Compañia del Presidio de Loreto, Tenencia, ó Subtenencia de los restantes de la Península, propondrá el Gobernador los referidos empleos, dirigiendo las Propuestas al Señor Comandante General.

2. Para la provision de Teniente y Alferez de la Compañia de Loreto, propondrá el Capitan tres Sugetos en quien concurren las calidades

que corresponden, y estén en actual servicio, pasando la Propuesta al Gobernador, y éste al Señor Comandante General con su aprobacion ó notas.

3. Para el reemplazo de Plazas vacantes de Sargentos, hará el Capitan igual propuesta, como los Tenientes de los restantes Presidios en que no hay Capitan (y han de exercer sus funciones en esta parte y demás relativo á las obligaciones de dicho empleo como Comandantes de la Compañía) entre los que se hayan distinguido mas por su conducta y valor, cuidando en cuanto sea posible de que sepan leer y escribir, y el Gobernador aprobará el que le parezca conveniente. Las Plazas de Cabos las nombrará por se el Capitan y Tenientes Comandantes de Presidio, con la diferencia, que éstos han de pasar el nombramiento para su aprobacion al Gobernador.

## TITULO NOVENO.

### *Revistas Mensuales.*

#### 1.

**E**L Comandante de cada Presidio pasará mensualmente revista á la Compañía, y formará un extracto con los nombres de Oficiales, Sargentos, Cabos, Soldados, Cirujano y demás dependientes: á los que se hallasen presentes pondrá al margen una P: á los empleados el destino, y los empleos ó plazas vacantes una V. Los reemplazos de las vacantes del mes anterior se justificarán por nota en dicho extracto: si fuesen de empleo de Oficial, con expresion de la fecha del cúmplase del Señor Comandante General, y Certificacion firmada de todos los Oficiales, del día en que se le dió posesion; si de Capellan, Sargento, ó Cabo, con este último documento, y si de Soldado, copiando la partida de asiento, que ha de ponerse en el Libro maestro, y el papel de tiempo de diez años, que ha de darse á todos á su entrada.

2. Para justificar las salidas solo variará de lo prevenido por el Real Reglamento en este Titulo, en las que se verifiquen por retiro de Soldados, respecto á que no permitiendo la suma distancia de esta Península lo verifiquen los mas hasta el regreso de las Embarcaciones que arriban á los Puertos con el Situado, y de cuya tripulacion se solicitan los reemplazos, por ser el medio que se proporciona en estos Presidios; consiguientemente ha de obligar dicho motivo á las Revistas las Licencias de cumplidos, ó que por otra razon convenga separar de las Compañías: por lo que se observará que, precediendo la licencia del Gobernador, se exprese en el extracto su fecha, y certifiquen los Oficiales el día en que se verifique el retiro, exceptuadas las ocasiones en que se halle presente el Gobernador.

3. Debiendo acreditarse como Surplus á el Situado del Presidio de Loreto el correspondiente á su pequeño Departamento de Marina, se incluirán sus individuos en los extractos de revista mensualmente con distincion, y á continuacion de la Compañía, observando con ellos respectivamente las formalidades que quedan prevenidas para el asiento de sus Plazas en el Libro maestro, y justificar las vacantes y reemplazos de Soldados; á diferencia, que el Capitan podrá por si licenciar á los Marineros segun convenga al servicio.

4. Las Revistas han de pasarse en todos los Presidios del primero al quarto día de cada mes; y quedando en cada uno el extracto original, se sacarán dos copias con las mismas formalidades, las que han de remitirse en primera ocasion de Loreto y San Diego, y mensualmente de los demás Presidios.

## TITULO DECIMO.

*Trito con los Indios enemigos ó indiferentes.*

1.

**H**ALLANDOSE en paz y tranquilidad esta Península y su numerosa Gentilidad, mediante los moderados castigos practicados con los que en distintas partes se inquietaron, causando hostilidades y muertes, junto con el buen trato, humanidad y dulzura que experimentaron los Prisioneros, permanecen amigos, conservandose libre la comunicacion de los Presidios y demás establecimientos, no deberán alterarse las reglas que anteriormente se ordenaron, conforme á las que prefine el Real Reglamento en este Titulo, que ha de cumplirse exactamente en todas sus partes, segun lo dicte la variacion y casos que puedan ocurrir.

## TITULO ONCE.

*Funciones del Gobernador como Inspector de los Presidios de la Peninsula.*

1.

**H**AN de ser en todo conformes por lo respectivo á los Presidios del Gobierno á las que exerce el Inspector Comandante de los Presidios de Frontera, segun y como está ordenado en el Tit. 12. del Real Reglamento, con la única variacion de deber revistarse el de Loreto cada segundo año, por la enorme distancia y áspero camino que intermedia: para cuyo efecto y el de que ha de desempeñar juntamente las demás atenciones del Gobierno, se le destinará un Ayudante, que ha de tener el grado de Capitan; y atendidos los gastos y continuos viages que ha de hacer para las Revistas y demás á que se le comisione, siendo aprobada su creacion, le regulo acreedor á el sueldo anual de dos mil pesos.

## TITULO DOCE.

*Funciones y facultades del Capitan y demás Oficiales,  
Sargentos, Cabos y Soldados.*

1.

**H**AN de ser en todo iguales á las que á cada clase prefine el Tit. 13. del Real Reglamento, con la variacion que queda proveniente por lo respectivo á Tenientes Comandantes de las Compañias y Presidios en los nuevos establecimientos.

## TITULO TRECE.

*Obligaciones, Nombramiento é Instruccion de Habilitados.*

1.

**L**A primera obligacion del Oficial Habilitado es la de acreditar el acierto de la eleccion y confianza que de él hace su Compañia, fiandole el manejo, custodia y distribucion de sus intereses, procediendo en todo con la limpieza y honor que es inseparable de su profesion.

2. Llevará las cuentas generales de cargo y data con la mayor claridad, justificacion y orden que queda prevenido, para que al cabo del año examinadas y aprobadas por el Capitan en el Presidio de Loreto, é intervenidas por los Oficiales que no exerzan la Habilitacion en los demás Presidios que no tienen Capitan, se eprueben igualmente por el Gobernador.

3. Tambien llevará con las mismas circunstancias y ordenacion advertida la cuenta particular de cada individuo, enterandose con frecuencia de las de Soldados, para sujetar las distribuciones que en el avio general y entre año se les haga á el alcance de cada uno, de modo, que exceptuados los Reclutas ninguno ha de percibir cantidad que no tenga devengada, prefiriendo en su dacion las prendas de vestuario, armamento



y montura, y caballerías que necesite, y han de constar por las Revistas semanarias que han de pasarse.

4. Siempre que muera ó se licencie algun Soldado, supuesta la urgencia de comprar sus caballerías y armamento para aviar al Recluta que lo reemplaze, ó completar las faltas que tengan otros, precediendo su justa tasacion, que han de intervenir los herederos si se hallasen presentes, las tomará el Habilitado, y las distribuirá (conforme á la orden que la comunique el Comandante de la Compañía) sobre los mismos precios en que las reciba, practicando lo mismo en caso de tomarlas por el fondo, para reintegrarle por deuda al difunto, cumplido ó licenciado.

5. Bajo la prohibicion y pena que previene el Art. 7 Tit. 14. del Real Reglamento, no podrán los Habilitados cargar al Soldado en las subministraciones de víveres, vestuario y demás efectos, mas de lo que resulte en las respectivas Facturas por primer costo, con el único aumento que expresa el Arancel, y se deduzca por la operacion prevenida en el Art. 4. Tit. 6. de este Reglamento, quedando igualmente comprehendido en la pena señalada en dicho Título, si incurriese en quiebra culpable, ó extravío de caudales.

6. Seguirán correspondencia con el Factor de la Península y Comisario de San Blas, por quienes se les dirigirán en derecho las correspondientes remesas, facturas y conocimientos; y será al cuidado del Factor solicitar los ajustes que anualmente han de formalizarse por Oficiales Reales de la Caja de México, con arreglo á los extractos de Revista á cada Presidio, los que dirigirá á los Habilitados, que han de archivarlos con los extractos generales, y servirles de gobierno de lo que á buena cuenta pueda resultar percibido de uno á otro año, alcance que quedó.

7. Siendo por ahora inexcusable se transporten de Sonora Caballos y Mulas para mantener en estado de servicio las Compañías de estos Presidios, precediendo la correspondiente superior orden, deberá anticiparse el caudal preciso para su compra, y verificado el arribo, y distribucion de caballerías, segun las que á cada Compañía se destinen, con arreglo á su numero, calidad y precio de primer compra, formarán los Habilitados sus recibos, que han de pasarse al Gobernador, para que por su mano se dirijan á Oficiales Reales de la Caja de México para que se formalice el debido cargo; en inteligencia, que las bestias que mueran, se pierdan ó inutilicen despues de la entrega en la Península, ha de cargarse prorateado su importe en las restantes, y sobre los precios que resulten han de distribuirse.

8. Sin embargo que estos Habilitados no han de hacer salidas para surtir la provision de víveres, ropas y demás efectos, siendo ligados á los gastos, responsabilidad y cuidado de los repuestos y su distribucion por menor, llevar las cuentas generales y particulares de Tropa y dependientes del Presidio, deberán descontar al Capitan, Oficiales, Cirujano, Sargento, Cabos, Soldados y dependientes dos por ciento las agencias y gastos que le ocasiona su comision.

9. Quando se huviere de nombrar Habilitado en el Presidio de Loreto, respecto de no haver en él Capellan (ni en los restantes de la Península) suplirá la falta de este voto un segundo Apoderado de la Compañía, que, en consideracion de tener empleadas 32 Plazas de las 44 de su dotacion en los Destacamentos del Real de Santa Anna del Sur y frontera del Norte, prevendrá el Capital con la anticipacion que convenga, que los Sargentos, Cabos y Soldados juntos en sus respectivos destinos nombren dos Apoderados por la Compañía entre ellos mismos, lo que executado, se dirigirán los votos por escrito de los Individuos de cada puesto en derecho al Capitan, que hará practicar lo mismo á la Tropa existente en el Presidio, con asistencia del Patron de la Balandra y Oficiales de Maestranza del Departamento de Marina, que han de votar por Sugeto de



la Compañía; y vistos los que resulten nombrados por pluralidad de votos, y de hallarse empleados en los Destacamentos, se releverán para que se trasladen al Presidio, mandando el Capitan al Oficial destinado en la Frontera remita su voto cerrado, é inmediatamente que se verifique convocará á su casa al Oficial subalterno, y á los Apoderados de la Compañía; abierto y visto en el Lugar que corresponda el voto del Oficial ausente, quedará nombrado uno de los Oficiales subalternos, y no otro por Habilidadado.

10. Si de los cinco votos huviése dos por uno y tres por otro, havarán de conformarse los dos que fueron de contrario dictamen, y constituirse responsables, como si huviesen votado á su favor.

11. En los Presidios de los nuevos establecimientos en que solo hay dos Oficiales subalternos, se procederá al nombramiento de dos Apoderados en cada Compañía en los mismos términos y anticipacion que queda prevenida, lo que executado, convocará el Comandante al Alferéz y Apoderados para nombrar uno de dichos Oficiales y no otro por Habilidadado; en caso de que los quatro votos huviese tres por uno, quedará executada la eleccion, debiendo conformarse el que fuese de contrario dictamen, y constituirse responsable, como si huviere votado á su favor; en el caso de resultar dos votos á favor de cada uno, decidirá el Gobernador.

12. Luego que esté formalizada la eleccion se extenderá el Nombramiento y Poder, de que ha de sacarse copia para dar cuenta con ella al Gobernador, debiendo cada tres años proceder de nuevo á la nominacion de Oficial Habilidadado, bien para reelegir el actual, ó para nombrar otro.

13. Consiguiente á los referidos primeros nombramientos deberá hacerse entrega á los respectivos Habilitados por le Comisario del Presidio de Loreto, y Guarda Almacenes de los de San Diego, Monterrey y San Francisco, por formulas Inventarias de todos los géneros, víveres y efectos que existen en los Almacenes, con la debida distincion de calidades, medida, peso y valores sobre precios de primer compra, y gruesa que forme su total, en que no han de incluirse los efectos que no se han distribuido á la Tropa y Dependientes, incluso Pobladores, pues de estos ha de formalizarse separado Inventario, señalando con claridad su estado y valor en quanto sea posible, lo que así practicado, quedará en deposito en poder del Habilidadado, hasta tanto que dando cuenta con dicho Inventario al Superior Gobierno, se determine la salida que deba darse á lo que de esta clase resulte.

14. Debiendo quedar las Mulas de Requa con todo lo correspondiente á sus aperos, herramientas de Carpintería, Herrería y obras materiales á beneficio de los Presidios y Compañías, que han de responder de su existencia, segun queda precenido para la debida constancia, se procederá á la entrega de dichos útiles, Mulas de carga, aperos, costalería, aparejos, y demás avios, precediendo valuación, que con la debida expresion del estado, calidad y valor de cada pieza, ha de hacerse por los Peritos que á este efecto se nombren por el Comandante del Presidio que ha de intervenir la entrega y valúo firmando con los Peritos y Habilitados, Comisario ó Guarda Almacén las diligencias, que ha de acumularse al Inventario.

15. Existiendo en el Presidio de Monterrey un pie de Ganado Bacuno, que en el día excede de quinientas cabezas de todas edades, otro de Yeguada, que igualmente pasa de ciento y setenta cabezas, y como doscientos y cincuenta de Ganado menor de pelo y lana, con algunas Burrales y de Ganado de zorda, y en el Presidio de S. Francisco hay ciento veinte y quatro cabezas de Ganado Bacuno, perteneciente todo á la Real Hacienda, deberán comprehendirse en el primer Inventario de en-

trega con distincion deespecies y edades en Ganado mayor y Yeguada, quedando á cargo de los Habilitados que, baxo las órdenes del Gobernador celarán el pastorio y cuidado de dichos Ganados, su aumento, distribucion á Pobladores con calidad de pago ó reintegro, y conservando el vientre dará salida de Potros, Toros, Novillos, Carneros, Castrados de Pelo, Zerdos y demás que por viejo ó infecundo deba expendirse en pie, llevará la cuenta de estos Ganados, para dar la cuenta de sus productos y aumento á la Real Hacienda anualmente, como se expresará adelante.

16. El Comisario de Loreto y Guarda Almacenes de los restantes Presidios han de formalizar sus cuentas de modo que no queden los Habilitados sujetos á responder en lo sucesivo al Real Tribunal y Audiencia de Cuentas de resultas de las anteriores: conseqüentemente ningun otro Documento debe quedar en su poder que en tanto del último ajuste ó cuenta, y los Inventarios de entrega, y ha de ser solo el cargo de cada Habilitado, y parte de pago de sus respectivos Situados la cantidad en que excedan el valor de los enseres distribuidos y cargables á la Tropa, Dependientes y Pobladores, y el de sus débitos al total de alcances (vendidos desde el año de 1774, inclusive hasta el dia de la entrega) que han de satisfacerse enteramente á los Interesados; pero si por el contrario excede la partida de alcances á la de los débitos y enseres, su residuo será á favor del Habilitado en quien se verifique, y ha de acreditarsele por la Real Caxa de México con el primer ajuste que se le formalice deducido el aumento respectivo.

17. Como en el transporte de las remesas anuales ocurren y causa el calor de las Bodegas de la embarcacion y otros incidentes, pérdidas, averias y mermas principalmente en la Manteca, Panocha, Caldos y Semillas, debe verificarse la entrega con entera satisfaccion del Habilitado, precediendo peso, medida, y desatará de los citados renglones y demás que convenga, y en el caso de resultar averiado, roto ó mal condicionado algun fardo, tercio ó caxon, para calificar su deterioro en el todo ó parte, se procederá á su formal reconocimiento á bordo con intervencion del Comandante de la Embarcacion y de él del Presidio, confrontando por la Factura los géneros ó efectos que contenga, y efectuado, se certificará por dichos Oficiales el menoscabo ó pérdida que haya causado la averia, ó algun otro incidente, que deberá expresarse, y asi practicado, se desembarcará y recogerá el Habilitado dicha Certificacion, que ha de deponerse por cabeza de las diligencias de tasacion, que ha de hacerse en el Presidio con intervencion del Capitan y Oficiales subalternos, antecediendo nombramiento de los Peritos (que hará el Comandante) que con presencia de los precios y Factura, y del daño causado, con citacion de él, y de los géneros ó efectos que le tengan, se señalará el justo valor á que queden reducidos, y al que sin alteracion han de distribuirse y cargarse á la Tropa; el Habilitado se formará cargo del líquido valor en que queden los géneros y efectos averiados, como de los que no lo sean, segun resulte de las diligencias, de que dexando Copia certificada por los Oficiales en el Presidio, se remitirán las originales por el Habilitado al Factor, para que por ellas compruebe y se acredite la pérdida.

18. Para evitar la confusion con que se hace la entrega y medida del Maiz y Frijol en las Bodegas ó Paños de la Embarcacion, en las que forzosamente ha de seguirse menoscabo al que entrega midiendose bien, por recalar los valances la Semilla en la medida, ó al que recibe, por medires mal, ó derramarse al tiempo de vaciar la medida en los costales, por la prisa é incomodidad con que se executa, y á que atribuyen los Guarda Almacenes mucha parte de mermas; para excusar en lo sucesivo dichos inconvenientes, se hará la medicion de granos en tierra, bien sea en la Playa, ó en los Presidios inmediatos al desembarcadero, como siempre

se executó en Loreto, y algun año en Monterrey, con corta ó ninguna falta, habiendose experimentado crecidas en la contraria práctica.

19. Los Habilitados otorgarán asi de los Fardos, Tercios y Caxones remitidos de México, como de los víveres y efectos que lleguen de San Blas, á continuacion de los Conocimientos, con expresion de las faltas, pérdidas ó mermas que resultaron en la entrega, y el tanto recibido en cada Semilla, Arina y efectos de racion, cuyor documentos firmados por el Habilitado se entregarán al Sugeto que cenga hecho cargo de la remesa, por quien ha de firmarse en los Conocimientos que por duplicado se remiten de la Comisaría de S. Blas la declaracion de la entrega que haya verificado cada ramo ó efecto de los contenidos en los mismos Conocimientos, que han de quedar en poder del Habilitado para calificar su recibo, á cuyo efecto deberá remiti-los (quedando una Copia certificada por los Oficiales de la Compañia) al Factor de la Península para que lo presente en donde corresponda, y por ellos se haga el debido abono, respecto de que conforme al total importe de las Facturas, se habrá formado el cargo al Situado, por el atrazo con que forzosamente han de llegar estos comprobantes.

20. Habiendose establecido do pocos años á esta parte hacer entrega de la remesa general á los Contramaestres de las Embarcaciones, los que por falta de inteligencia y precisa asistencia en ellas, ocasionan atrazo para puntualizar su entrega, debiendo ser en lo succesivo un Oficial el que reciba, es conveniente se varíe esta práctica, y que de no ser el encargado el Comandante de la Embarcacion, lo sea el Piloto, en quien hay mas proporcion y responsabilidad para dicha comíision.

21. Estando establecido que el Capitan del Presido de Loreto, como Teniente de Gobernador, dé las Licencias á los Armadores que entren al busco de Perlas en su Costa é Islas contiguas, regulando el tanto que ha de pagar por quinto cada Canoa, que actualmente está reglada en cien pesos, atendida la escasez á que han venido los Placeres, por cuya razon pasaron años en que no entró Armador alguno, no excediendo el presente de dos ó tres Canoas las que lo verifican, cuyo producto con orden de dicho Capitan lo ha cobrado el Comisario que ha dado su correspondiente entrada á la Real Hacienda con el producido de la venta de Sal, y algunos Toros del Ganado orejano que compra la Tropa y Vecinos del Real de Santa Anna: debiendo seguirse esta práctica en lo succesivo por los Habilitados, darán éstos anualmente la correspondiente entrada del producto de estos ramos y demás que pertenezcan á la Real Hacienda en cuenta separada, é intervenida por el Capitan, en la que se datarán los gastos que ocasionen lasecarenas, recorridas y arboladuras de la Balandra y Lanchas del Departamento, la que con los correspondientes justificantes de cargo y data, se dirigirá al Factor de la Península, para que la presente en el Real Tribunal de Cuentas, y se hagan los cargos ó abonos que correspondan al Situado.

22. Respectivamente deberán los Habilitados de Monterrey y S. Francisco formar anualmente cuenta de cargo y data de los Ganados que sean de su cargo, con distincion de especies, expresion del aumento de cabezas, y producto en pesos de las que en el año se huviere expendido, para cuyo efecto se arreglarán al Formulario que irá al fin de esta Instruccion.

23. Asimismo ha de ser el cargo del Habilitado de Presidio en cuya inmediacion ó término se sitúe nuevo Pueblo de Gente de razon, formar asiento y abrir cuenta á los Pobladores, hacerse cargo y dar los correspondientes resguardos de las cantidades que para su habilitacion se les haya suplido en Sonora, como de los granados ó herramientas que para el mismo efecto se remitan de otros Presidios, acreditarles su respectivo haber desde el dia de su entrada, y verificar el cobro de la subministracion que á cada Poblador resulte y deba descontarsele, formando anualmente



cuenta, en que con la debida claridad y comprobacion se den los gastos y entradas que correspondan á la Real Hacienda.

24. Los asientos que á todo Poblador ha de formar el Habilitado, han de instruirse con su nombre, calidad, edad, patria, y Pueblo en que queda avecindado, y con igual distincion se expresará el nombre, calidad y edad de su muger, hijos y hijas, dia, mes y año en que se le dió entrada á el goce de sueldo y racion que está consignada á cada uno, reglandose en esta parte á lo que irá prevenido en la Instruccion de Poblacion, de no oponerse á ello las condiciones con que se hayan registrado los que de Sonora vengan á poblar estos establecimientos.

25. La entrada de nuevo Poblador y data de su haber en la cuenta particular que queda prevenida, se justificará con la orden que ha de anteceder del Gobernador, y copia de la partida de asiento. Las salidas por muerte se comprobarán con copia de la partida de entierro y cese de sueldo ó racion que en cada año resulte, se distinguirá en la partida en que con separacion ha de datarse el residuoque de uno á otro perciba en el año el individuo á que termine, pues su comprobacion se deducirá del respectivo asiento, respecto á que de todas se ha de acompañar copia á la primer cuenta.

26. En los dos primeros años ha de descontarse á los Pobladores el importe de las herramientas que hubieren recibido, y en los siguientes tres años se verificará el pago de todo lo demás que se les hubiere suplido para la habilitacion de sus labores, conforme á lo que se prevendrá en su correspondiente Instruccion.

27. El Maiz, Frixol, Garvanzo y Lentejas que produzcan las cosechas del Pueblo, reservando los vecinos lo preciso para su subsistencia y siembras, no tiene ni pueda darsele por ahora otro destino que el de proveer los Presidios. Consecuentemente los Habilitados comprarán estas semillas sobre los precios que están establecidos, ó en adelante se establezcan, con consideracion á que han de conducirse con las Reguas de los Presidios.

28. Si en el Presidio á que se agregue Pueblo existe algun pie de ganado perteneciente á la Real Hacienda, se acumulará su cuenta á la de Poblacion, en la que se formará el correspondiente cargo el Habilitado del producto de las cabezas que se hubieren distribuido, é igualmente ha de comprehender en ella con la correspondiente aprobacion lo producido por qualquier otro efecto perteneciente á dicha Real Hacienda, teniendo presente, que toda la costaleria de Esmiquilpa que se remita de San Blas (exceptuada la de empaque de Arina que viene comprehendida en el valor de cada tercio, y las cargas de costales que se distribuyan á su cuenta á la Tropa) como los cascos de Barril, han de volverse de un año á otro, para por este medio excusar su repetido gasto; á los abrigos y petates de fardos que vienen de México, como á los caxones, se les procurará dar salida á los que lleguen buenos, y los que por podridos ó rotos no la tengan, como los cabezados de cuero, deberán considerarse como gasto legítimo de la Real Hacienda, calificando lo que asi resulte, con certificacion firmada por los Oficiales que intervengan el Inventario de existencias de fin de año, la que ha de acompañarse á la expresada cuenta particular, que ha de dirigirse anualmente al Gobernador, por quien reconocida, aprobada y visada, se remitirá á los Oficiales Reales de las Caxas de México, para que por ella se acrediten los gastos que correspondan al Habilitado.

#### *Formulario.*

Cuenta de Cargo y Data de los Ganados que quedan existentes en el Presidio de San Carlos de Monterrey pertenecientes á la Real Hacienda, que por comision están á mi cargo como Habilitado de la Compañia, en que con distincion de especies, manifiesto en sus respectivas cuentas el cargo que se dedujo por el Inventario de entrega, la naciencia del presente



año, la distribucion de cabezas que en él se hizo, su producto en pesos, la existencia y aumento que resulta en fin de Diciembre de 1780.

*Cuenta de Yeguas y Potros.*

	Cabezas.	Pesos.	Rs.
Primeramente: son data ciento noventa cabezas, que con la distincion de clases que consta del Inventario de entrega quedaron existentes en .....	190		
Son cargo treinta y dos Potrillos producidos de la nacencia del presente año .....	32		
Son cargo treinta y ocho Potrancas de la misma nacencia .....	38		
	<hr/> 260		

*Data en su especie, y producto en pesos.*

Son data veinte Potros demaderos que se distribuyeron á seis pesos cada uno en la Compañía...	20	120	
Son data diez Potros de tres años que se vendieron al Habilitado del Presidio de San Francisco al mismo precio .....	10	60	
Son data dos Yeguas que murieron, cuyos fierros se manifestaron y quemaron .....	2		
	<hr/> 32		
Data .....	32		
Cargo .....	260		

	Cabezas.	Pesos.	Rs.
Quedan existentes en fin de Diciembre .....	228		
La existencia del año anterior fué de .....	190		
	<hr/> 38	<hr/> 180	<hr/>
Su aumento y producto en el presente año es .....			

*Cuenta de Ganado Bacuno.*

Son cargo quinientas setenta cabezas, que en las clases que expresa el Inventario quedaron existentes en .....	570		
Son cargo ochenta y tres Terneros producidos en la nacencia del presente año .....	83		
Son cargo ciento y seis Terneras de dicha nacencia.	106		
	<hr/> 759		

*Data en especies y producto en pesos.*

Son data quarenta y seis Novillos de quatro años que se remitieron á D.....N.....Habilitado de..... para distribuir á Pobladores, de cuyo cargo queda dar entrada de su importe al respecto de seis pesos cabeza á la Real Hacienda..	46	276	
Son data diez Toros que se distribuyeron á la Tropa á cinco pesos .....	10	50	
	<hr/>	<hr/>	<hr/>
	Cabezas.	Pesos.	Rs.
Son data quatro Vacas, que por viejas se vendieron á seis pesos cada una .....	4	24	

Son data dos Toros que se lastimaron, y fué distribuida la carne de cada uno en veinte raciones á dos reales .....	2	10
Son data tres Terneros y dos Terneras que mataron los Lobos .....	5	
	<hr/>	<hr/>
Data .....	67	
Cargo .....	759	
	<hr/>	
Quedan existentes en fin de Diciembre .....	692	
La existencia del año anterior fué de .....	570	
	<hr/>	<hr/>
Su aumento y producto en el presente es .....	122	360
	<hr/>	<hr/>

Con este orden seguirán las cuentas de los demás Ganados poniendo á continuacion resumen de las cantidades que produxeron en pesos para manifestar su total, contra el que se datarán las partidas producidas por Ganados que hayan salido para Pobladores, cuya satisfaccion deba hacerse por otro Habilitado, y las únicas de gasto que han de ofrecer por el salario del Pastor de Ganado menor, y dos ó tres arrobas de Yerba de Puebla que ha de pedirse uno ú otro año, con lo que deduciendo la data del cargo, quedará demostrado el que resulte contra el que dá la cuenta, y relacionando al pie el total cargo y distribucion de pesos, pondrá la fecha y firmará.

#### TITULO CATORCE.

##### *Gobierno Político, é Instruccion para Poblacion.*

###### 1.

**S**IENDO el objeto de mayor importancia para dar cumplimiento á las piadosas intenciones del Rey nuestro Señor, y perpetuar á S. M. el dominio del dilatado terreno que en la extension de mas de doscientas leguas comprehenden los nuevos Establecimientos de los Presidios y respectivos Puertos de San Diego, Monterrey, y S. Francisco, adelantar la Reduccion y hacer util al estado en lo posible tan vasto Pais, habitado de innumerable Gentilidad, exceptuados mil setecientos quarenta y nueve Christianos de ambos sexos que tienen las ocho Misiones que se hallan sobre el camino que direge del primero al último Presidio, erigiendo Pueblos de gente de razon, que congregada fomenta la labranza, plantío, y cria de ganado y sucesivamente los demás ramos de industria, de modo que á discurso de algunos años basten sus producciones á abastecer de víveres y caballerías las Guarniciones de Presidios, excusando por este medio el dilatado transporte, riesgos y pérdidas con que de cuenta de la Real Hacienda se conduce, con cuya justa idea se halla poblado y fundado el Pueblo de San Joseph, y está determinada la ereccion de otro, para el que han de dirigirse Pobladores con sus familias de la Provincia de Sonora y Sinaloa, cuyo progresivo aumento y el de las familias de la Tropa, proporcionara el establecimiento de otras Poblaciones y Reclutas para las Compañías Presidiales, libertandose el Real Erario de los forzosos gastos que actualmente impende para el logro de uno y otro; y conviniendo establecer reglas que lo aseguren, se observará la Instruccion siguiente.

2. Asi como hasta ahora fueron consignados á cada Poblador, á mas de la racion, 120 ps. en cada uno de los dos primeros años, y solo la racion en los tres siguientes, regulada en real y medio diario, francos, gozarán por lo equivalente en lo sucesivo ciento diez y seis pesos tres

y medio reales en cada uno de los dos primeros años, entendiendose comprehendida en dicha cantidad la racion, y por ella en los años siguientes sesenta pesos en cada uno, con lo que queda compensado con ventaja el antecedente goce; deducido el aumento con que se pagaba, y baxa con que se les subministró la Racion, cuyos efectos y demás han de recibir al coste desde que aprobado, se declare la práctica de este Reglamento; siendo prevencion, que el referido tiempo de cinco años ha de contarse para sus goces desde el día que se verifique la posesion de Solares y Suertes de tierras que han de repartirse á cada Poblador, como se expresará adelante, debiendo correr el tiempo que anteceda desde sus registros baxo las condiciones de Contratas; y para que se evite este gasto, se providenciará de modo, que luego que lleguen nuevos Pobladores sin intermision se sitúen y dé la referida Posesion.

3. A cada Poblador y al Comun de Pueblo han de darse con calidad de reintegro en Mulas y Caballos, que sean de dar y recibir, y pago de los demás, genado mayor y menor, baxo los justos precios que han de arancelarse, y las herramientas al coste, como está ordenado, dos Yeguas, dos Bacas con una cria, dos Ovejas, y dos Cabras, todo de vientre, y una yunta de Bueyes ó Novillos, una reja ó punta de Arado, un Azadon, una Coa, una Hacha y una Hoz, un Cuchillo de monte, una Lanza, una Escopeta, y una Adarga, dos Caballos y una Mula de carga; igualmente y á cargo del Comun se darán los padres que correspondan al número de cabezas de ganado en sus especies del todo del vecindario, un Burro maestro, otro comun y tres Burras, un Barraco y tres Puercas, una fragua aviada de yunque y demás herramientas que le corresponda, seis barras, seis palas de fierro, y la herramienta necesaria de Carpintería y Carretería.

4. Los Solares que se concedan á los nuevos Pobladores se han de señalar por el Gobierno en los sitios y con la extension correspondiente á la que tuviere el terreno donde se establezcan los nuevos Pueblos, de modo que quede formada plaza y calles, conforme á lo prevenido por Leyes del Reyno, y con su arreglo se señalará Exido competente para el Pueblo y Dehesas con las tierras de labor que convenga para Propios.

5. Cada Suerte de tierra, así de riego como de temporal, ha de ser de doscientas varas de largo, y doscientas de ancho, por ser este el ámbito que regularmente ocupa una fanega de Maiz en sembradura; el repartimiento que de dichas Suertes, como de los Solares ha de hacerse á nombre del Rey nuestro Señor á los nuevos Pobladores, se hará por el Gobierno con igualdad y proporcion al terreno que logre el beneficio de riego, de forma, que precediendo la correspondiente demarcacion, y reservando baldíos la quarta parte del número que resulte contando con el número de Pobladores, si alcanzansen, se repartirán á dos Suertes á cada uno de regadío, y otras dos de secadal, y de las realengas se separarán las que parecieren convenientes para propios del Pueblo, y de las restantes se hará merced á nombre de S. M. á los que de nuevo entrasen á poblar por el Gobernador, igualmente que de los respectivos Solares, y señaladamente á los Soldados, que por haber cumplido el tiempo de su empeño, ó abanzada edad, se retiren del Servicio, como á las familias de los que mueran, los que habilitarán sus labores con el fondo que cada uno debe tener, sin que á estos se asista de cuenta de la Real Hacienda con sueldo, racion ni ganados, por ser limitada esta gracia á los que con aquel destino se extrañan de su país para poblar éste.

6. Las casas fabricadas en los Solares concedidos y señalados á los nuevos Pobladores, y las Suertes de tierra comprehendidas en sus respectivas mercedes, serán hereditarias con perpetuidad en sus hijos y descendientes, ó hijas que casen con Pobladores útiles, y que no tengan repartimiento de Suertes por sí mismos, cumpliendo todos ellos con las condiciones que irán expresadas en esta Instruccion; y para que los hijos

de los poseedores de estas mercedes tengan la obediencia y respeto que deben á sus padres, ha de ser libre y facultativo en éstos, si tuvieren dos ó mas hijos, elegir el que quisieren de ellos, siendo secular y lego, por heredero de la Casa y Suertes de Poblacion, y tambien podrán disponer que se repartan entre ellos, pero no que una sola Suerte se divida, porque han de ser todas y cada una de por sí indivisibles é inagenables perpetuamente.

7. Tampoco podrán los Pobladores ni sus herederos imponer censo, vínculo, fianza, hipoteca ni otro gravamen alguno, aunque sea por causa piadosa sobre Casa y Suerte de tierra que se les conceden, y si alguno lo hiciere contraviniendo á esta justa prohibicion, quedará privado de la propiedad irremisiblemente, y por el mismo hecho se dará su dotacion á otro Poblador que sea útil y obediente.

8. Gozarán los nuevos Pobladores para mantener sus ganados del aprovechamiento comun de aguas y pastos, leña y madera del Exido, Monte y Dehesa que ha de señalarse con arreglo á las Leyes á cada nuevo Pueblo, y además disfrutar á privativamente cada uno el pasto de sus tierras propias, pero con condicion, que debiendo tener y criar toda clase de ganado mayor y menor, no siendo posible cuide por sí cada uno el corto número de cabezas que para pié les quedan consignadas, pues de ello se seguiria desatender las labores y obras públicas, deberá por ahora pastorearse unido el ganado menor de la Comunidad, de cuyo cargo ha de ser el pago del Pastor, y por lo respectivo á rodear el ganado mayor y traerle al corral, como Yeguas y Burras, segun convenga, han de serlo dos Pobladores, que diariamente, ó como les parezca, nombrarán entre sí de caballada con lo que estará cuidado el ganado en sus especies, evitado el riesgo de alzarse, y atendidas las labores y demás faenas del comun, cuidando cada individuo señalar sus respectivas cabezas de ganado menor, y marcar el mayor, para el que se darán los registros de fierros correspondientes sin derecho alguno; con prevencion, que cada Poblador en lo sucesivo no ha de exceder de cincuenta cabezas de cada especie el que posea, para que de este modo se distribuya entre todos la utilidad que producen los ganados, y que no se estanque en pocos Vecinos la verdadera riqueza de los Pueblos.

9. Serán esentos y libres por término de cinco años los nuevos Pobladores de pagar diezmos ni otro derecho alguno de los frutos y esquilmos que les produzcan las tierras de su dotacion y ganados, con tal que en el primer año contado desde el día que se les señalen los Solares y Suertes construyan en la forma posible sus casas y las habiten, abran las zanjias correspondientes al riego de sus tierras, poniendo á las lindes divisorias en lugar de mojonas árboles frutales ó silvestres que sean útiles, á razon de diez en cada Suerte, é igualmente se abra la azequia ó zanja madre, formen presa, y demás obras públicas y precisas para el beneficio de las labores á que con preferencia ha de atenderse por el Comun, de cuyo cargo ha de ser dar construidas las Casas Reales en los quatro años, y en el tercero una troxe capaz y suficiente para Pósito, en que han de custodiarse las producciones de la siembra de Comunidad, que al respecto de un almud de Malz por Vecino, ha de hacerse desde dicho tercer año, hasta el quinto inclusive en las tierras que se señalen por propios del Pueblo, debiendo hacerse todas las faenas que ofrezca hasta poner sus cosechas dentro del Pósito por el Comun, a cuyo beneficio han de servir únicamente; y para su gobierno y aumento se formarán oportunamente las Ordenanzas que han de observarse.

10. Despues de los cinco años satisfarán los Diezmos á S. M. para que los aplique segun fuere de su Real agrado, como que enteramente le pertenecen, no solo por el Patronato Real absoluto que tiene en estos Dominios suyos, sino tambien por ser novalles, pues han de producirse en terrenos hasta ahora inclutos y abandonados, y que van á hacerse fructíferos á costa de los grandes dispendios y gastos que eroga la Real Hacienda.



Pasado el referido término de los cinco años, én recono cimiento del directo y supremo dominio, que pertenece al Soberano, pagarán los nuevos Pobladores y sus descendientes media fanega de Maíz por cada Suerte de tierra de regadío, y en beneficio de ellos mismos será obligacion indispensable y comun de todos concurrir á reparar la azequia, presa, tagueas, y las demás obras públicas de su Pueblo inclusa la Iglesia.

11. Multiplicado el ganado de zerda y burrada, ahijados los Burros que convenga para garañones de las Yeguas, siendo asequible la reparacion de cada una de las dos especies, se executará de comun consentimiento de los Pobladores entre sí con toda la igualdad posible, de modo que del primer ganado que dé cada Vecino con dos Cabezas, macho y hembra, y con una del segundo, lo que verificado, se señalarán y marcarán por sus dueños.

12. En los cinco años prevenidos estarán obligados los nuevos Pobladores á tener dos yuntas de Bueyes, dos arados, dos rejas ó puntas para labrar la tierra, dos hazadones, con la demás herramienta precisa de labranza, y finalizadas en los tres primeros años enteramente sus casas, y pobladas en ella seis Gallinas y un Gallo, prohibiendose absolutamente que en el término señalado de cinco años puedan enagenarse por venta, cambio ú otro pretexto, ni matar ninguna cabeza de ganado de las que se les subministran, ni de las de su respectivo procreo, exceptuado el ganado menor de lana y pelo, que á los quatro años es preciso darle salida, pues de lo contrario muere, y en su consecuencia podrán disponer á su arbitrio de las cabezas que sean de dicho tiempo, pero no de las que no lo sean, baxo la pena al que contraviniese á esta providencia, dirigida á su propio beneficio y aumento de sus bienes, de quedar por el mismo hecho privado del goce de racion que se le concede por un año, y el que en qualquier modo reciba una ó mas cabezas de dicho ganado en el referido tiempo, de qualquier estado ó condicion que sea, será obligado á devolverlas.

13. Cumplido el término de cinco años conservando el vientre de todas especies, exceptuado el de zerda y burras, que solo será obligado á tener cada Poblador una Puerca, y un Burro ó Burra, teniendo habilitadas sus labranzas con las yuntas de Bueyes y Novillos señaladas, hallandose aviados de Mula de carga y Caballos precisos, serán libres para vender los Toros, Novillos, Potros ó Caballos, Burros, Carneros, Castrados de pelo, Zerda y Puercas, quedando prohibido se mate Baca, no siendo vieja ó machorra, y por consiguiente infecunda, Ovejas ó Cabras que no sean de tres años arriba, ni vender Yeguas ni vientres útiles hasta tanto que se verifique por cada Poblador la posesion de quince Yeguas con un Caballo padre, quince Bacas con un Toro, doce Ovejas y un Carnero entero y diez Cabras y un Macho.

14. Será prohibido á todo Poblador y Vecino vender Potro, Caballo, Mula ó Macho, ni cambiar dichas bestias no siendo entre sí mismos, estando aviados de las que les sean necesarias, pues á las restantes no ha de darseles otro destino que el de la Remonta de la Tropa de los Presidios, y han de pagarse á los justos precios que se establezcan, exceptuando todo Caballo ó Mula especial en los mis mismos Pueblos, baxo la pena de veinte pesos, que han de exigirse á el que contraviniere á esta providencia por cada cabeza á que diese otra salida que la que queda expresada, lo que se aplica por mitad al denunciador, y gastos de República.

15. El Maix, Frixol, Garvanzo y Lenteja que produzcan las cosechas de los Pueblos, reservando los Vecinos lo preciso para su subsistencia y siembras, ha de comprarse y satisfacerse de contado sobre los precios que estén establecidos, ó en adelante se establezcan para la provision de los Presidios, y de su importe se harán á cada Poblador los prudentes descuentos que convengan, para reintegrar á la Real Hacienda de las cantidades que para su habilitacion se les hayan suplido en reales, caballerias, gan-

ados, herramientas, semillas y demás efectos, de modo que en los cinco primeros años ha de quedar verificado el pago.

16. Todo Poblador y Vecino, Cabeza de familia á que se hayan repartido ó en adelante se repartan Solares y Suertes de tierras, y los que los succedan, serán obligados á mantenerse equipados con dos Caballos, silla aviada, escopeta y demás armas que quedan expresadas, y han de subministrarseles al coste para defender sus respectivos distritos, y acudir sin abandonar aquella primera obligacion donde con grave urgencia se ordene por el Gobernador.

17. De las mercedes de Solares, Tierras y Aguas concedidas á los nuevos Pobladores, ó Vecinos á que se concedan en lo sucesivo, se librarán por el Gobernador ó Comisario que nombre á este efecto los correspondientes despachos, de que ha de tomarse razon y de los registros de fierros en el Libro general de Poblacion que se ha de formar y guardar en el Archivo del Gobierno, en el que se pondrá por cabeza copia de esta Instruccion.

18. Y conviniendo para el buen gobierno y policia de los Pueblos, administracion de Justicia, dirigir las obras públicas, repartimiento de las tandas de agua, y celar el cumplimiento de quanto queda prevenido en esta Instruccion, se les dé á proporcion de sus vecindarios Alcaldes, Ordinarios y otros Oficiales de consejo anuales, se pondrán por el Gobernador en los dos primeros años, y en los siguientes nombrarán por sí y entre sí los oficios de República que se hayan establecido, cuyas elecciones han de pasarse para su confirmacion al Gobernador, por quien se continuará dicho nombramiento en los tres años siguientes si advirtiese convenir así.

#### TITULO QUINCE.

##### *Ereccion de nuevas Reducciones.*

#### 1.

**R**ESPECTO de que situadas en el Canal de Santa Bárbara las tres Reducciones que están determinadas, quedará cubierta la Demarcacion que ha gobernado de Sur á Norte el establecimiento de las ocho anteriormente fundadas sobre el comino que dirige del Presidio de San Diego al de Monterrey, y de éste al de San Francisco, y consiguientemente queda facilitada la comunicacion de los nuevos Establecimientos, pues quedan las once Misiones y Presidios distantes entre sí de trece á veinte leguas, exceptuado el intervalo que media de la de S. Antonio á S. Luis, y de S. Juan Capistrano á S. Gabriel, que se regulan de veinte y cinco leguas: es de suma importancia para adelantar la reduccion de la numerosa Gentilidad que puebla esta parte de la Península, variar el establecimiento de nuevas Reducciones á los rumbos opuestos, proporcionando en quanto lo permitan los sitios, que han de solicitarse de las calidades que conviene para la estabilidad, de forma que cada una de las que en lo sucesivo se sitúen (que á excepcion de una ó dos serán las restantes al Este) queden en la distancia de catorce á veinte leguas de dos de las antiguas, por cuyo medio se ocuparán los intervalos que estas tienen entre sí, se irán ciñendo las Rancherías de Gentiles, se aumentará considerablemente la Christianidad y descubrirá la Tierra.

2. Supuesto que es mas de doscientas leguas la extension en que se hallan situados los referidos Establecimientos de Monterrey, no estando descubierto el ancho de la tierra, se infiere ha de corresponder con exceso, atendido se cuenta por miles lo mas que se dilata, y consiguientemente se hace inexcusable verificar el aumento de Reducciones con proporcion á el vasto País ocupado; y aunque debe executarse sucesivamente en el orden que queda expresado, segun se aseguren las anteriores fundaciones minorando sus Escoltas, para que la Tropa sobrante guarnezca las que se aumenten, siendo forzoso sean muchas, en consiguiente han de gravar con-

siderablemente el Erario, o caminar con morosidad la ereccion, y para facilitarla conviene que exceptuadas las tres Reducciones que han de situarse en el Canal de Santa Bárbara con dos Religiosos cada una, por las justas causas que allí concurren y quedan expuestas, las demás que subsigan se establezcan conforme á la antigua práctica de esta y demás Provincias internas con un Ministro, pero sin variacion de la limosna de quatrocientos pesos que á el año estan consignados á cada uno, en cuya cantidad han de entenderse comprehendidas todas las necesidades religiosas, asi como el avío temporal de Mision y labranza, en los un mil pesos concedidos para cada fundacion, permitiendose para el mas pronto incremento de las nuevas, que las antiguas las socorran con las cebezas de ganado y semillas, que sin falta en sus especies, regule el R. P. Presidente puedan dar, y con un Ministro en el primer año de la fundacion.

3. Las ocho Misiones actualmente establecidas quedarán con los dos Ministros que cada una tiene; pero no han de reemplazarse los que por muerte ó retiro vayan faltando, hasta tanto que queden reducidas á un solo Ministro, á excepcion de las inmediatas á los Presidios, en que han de subsistir dos Religiosos, y uno con la precisa asistencia al Presidio como Capellan de él, interin no se determine proveerlos de Capellanes seculares: conseqüentemente si resultase la falta en estas Misiones, ó en las del Canal, pasará á ocupar su lugar uno de las de San Juan Capistrano, San Gabriel, San Luis, San Antonio, ó Santa Clara, ó concurrir como queda dicho, á nuevas fundaciones.

4. En el mismo orden que explica el Artículo segundo deberán reducirse á un solo Ministro las Doctrinas que administran los Religiosos del Orden de Santo Domingo en la antigua California, exceptuada la de Loreto, en que han de existir dos Ministros, uno como Capellan del Presidio, y las dos últimas del Norte que al presente ó en adelante sean fronterizas, y en un y otras se reemplazarán las faltas que ocurran con los segundos Ministros de las restantes, interin subsistan, quedando todas con el sinodo de trescientos cincuenta pesos que á cada uno están señalados; pero sin arbitrio los Prelados de remover con este ni otro motivo alguno á los Religiosos de una á otra Doctrina, para lo que precisa y cumplidamente ha de guardarse la forma del Real Patronazgo, en todas sus partes, y casos que puedan ocurrir.

5. Supuesto estar solo fundadas la Reduccion de Nra. Srâ. del Rosario de Viñadaco y la de Santo Domingo de las cinco que deben situarse conforme á la demarcacion anteriormente acordada por la Real Junto de Guerra y Real Hacienda, para cubrir el camino que intermedia de la Frontera al Presidio de San Diego, siendo de la mayor importancia verificar la ereccion de las tres restantes, con lo que quedará facilitada la comunicacion de los antiguos y nuevos Establecimientos, deberá executarse con la posible brevedad.

Es cuanto dexo expuesto lo que la experiencia y conocimiento adquirido, mi zelo y amor al Real Servicio, y cumplimiento de las Superiores Ordenes me han dictado por mas conveniente para desempeñar la Real Resolucion y piadosas intenciones del Rey.

FELIPE DE NEVE.

*Real Presidio de S. Carlos de Monterrey*  
1. de Junio de 1779.

*Es copia de su original, que queda en la Secretaria de la Comandancia General de mi cargo, de que certifico.*

ANTONIO BONILLA.

*Arispe, de Febrero de 1780.*

*Ha visto el Rey el Reglamento para el gobierno de la Provincia de Californias, formado por el Gobernador de ella D. Felipe Neve en virtud de lo dispuesto en Real Orden de 21 de Marzo de 1775. del qual remite V. E. Testimonio con Carta de 49 de Enero de este año número 856. Se ha dignado S. M. aprobarlo, y de su orden lo prevengo á V. E. para su inteligencia y gobierno. Dios guarde á V. E. muchos años.*

JOSEF DE GALVEZ,

Senor Virrey de Nueva Espana

San Lorenzo, 24 de Octubre de 1781.

Mexico 26 de Marzo de 1782.

*Sáquese copia certificada de esta Real Orden. y agregada al Reglamento que se expresa para constancia de la aprobacion que ha merecido á S. M., imprimanse los exemplares correspondientes, y diriganse con los respectivos Oficios los necesarios al Señor Comandante General de Provincias internas, á los Oficiales Reales de estas Casas, al Real Tribunal de Cuentas, al Factor Don Manuel Ramon de Goya, al Comisario del Departamento de San Blas, y al Gobernador de Californias, para su constancia y cumplimiento en la parte que á cada uno toca: de cuya providencia se avisará en respuesta de dicha Real Orden.*

MAYORGA.

*Es copia de su original, de que certifico. Mexico tres de Abril de mil setecientos ochenta y dos.*

PEDRO ANTONIO DE COSIO.

*Para el Archivo del Gobierno. Monterrey 18 de Septiembre de 1784.*

PEDRO FAGES.



# INSTRUCCION

Teodoro de Croix a Fernando de Rivera y Moncada.

PROVINCIAS INTERNAS TOM. 122 ARCHIVO GENERAL.

//4



INSTRUCCION que deve observar el Capitan Dn. Fernando de Rivera y Moncada para la Recluta y avilition de familias pobladores y tropa, acopio de remontas, transporte de todo, y demás auxilios que há solicitado y se conceden al Coronel Dn. Phelipe Neve Gobernador de Californias para el resguardo, beneficio y conservacion de los nuevos y antiguos establecimientos de aquella Peninsula.<sup>2</sup>

1.

Resuelto el aumento de dos Oficiales Subalternos en el Presidio de Monterrey, el de vn Alferez en el de Sn. Franco, lo mismo en el de Sn. Diego, y la Creacion de vn Tente. vn Alferez y tres Sargtos. en el nuevo Presidio de Sta. Barbara que há de erigirse en el centro de la Canál de este nombre hé expedido los corresptes. interinos despachos de Tentes. á los Alferezes Dn. Alonso Villaverde, y Dn. Diego Gonzalez, y de Alferезes al Sargo. Dn. Mariano Carrillo, y á los Cadetes Dn. // Manuel Garcia Rovi y Dn. Ramon Laso de la Vega reservando el despacho del Oficial qe. falta de esta clase pa. proveerlo á consulta del Govor. de la Prova. de Californias, y asimismo se hán sacado tres Sargentos, dos Cabos y 20 Soldados voluntarios de las Compañias Presidiales de esta Prova. para qe. continuen sus servicios en la citada de Californias.

2.

De los Citados Individuos existen dos en la Peninsula, y los demás deverán reunirse el día 1. de febrero proximo en Sn. Miguel de Orcasitas disfrutando desde el proprio día los Sueldos y haveres corresptes. á sus nuevos empleos conforme al Reglamto. que gobierna en Californias.

3.

Determino esta Reunion para que // Sugetos los Oficiales, Sargtos. y Cavos á las inmediatas Orns del Capitan Dn. Fernando de Rivera elija los que concidere mas a proposito para que le ayuden al desempeño de sus Comisiones.

4.

Como es regular que para este desempeño necesiten asi al pral. comisionado como los qe. hán de ayudarle algunos auxilios de Dinero para su asistencia y marchas, me pedirá el primero las cantidades que considere precisas y justas para cada vno a fin de que Yo disponga las anticipaciones por la Rl. Caxa de los Alamos á buena cuenta De los respectivos Sueldos y Haveres.

<sup>1</sup> Numerals refer to page numbers of original ms.

<sup>2</sup> Spelling and abbreviations retained as in original documents; as transcribed for the Historical Society of Southern California from the Archivo General, Mexico City, by Vernon D. Tate.

## 5.

Evacuadas estas previas diligencias distribuirá el Capitan Rivera su gente en los destinos oportunos, y pidiendome los Corresptes. Pasaportes partirá sin demora á hazer la recluta de // Tropa y familias, y el acopio de Mulas y Cavallos en el numero que previenen las dos adjuntas relazes. ns. 1 y 2.

## 6.

*Prevenciones para la Recluta.* Para la proporcion y logro de la insinuada recluta y remonta no limito territorios pero señalo al Comisionado los que comprehenden las Provincias de Ostimuri, Sinaloa y demás que median hasta Guadalajara inclusive, pues en los que no recocen la Comanda. genl. de mi cargo procederá, en virtud de superior permiso que hé pedido al Exmo Señor Virrey bajo cuio concepto siendo distintas las atenciones de recluta y las de remonta prevendré vnas y otras con separacion.

## 7.

Veinte y quatro familias y 59 Hombres son los que por aora se // necesitan en Californias para erigir vn nuevo Presidio y Poblazn. pero si este numero de Gente se saca de los territorios de mi mando hará falta con el que yá se ha extraido, y con el que sucesivamente podrá extraerse para el necesario repueble de la Sonora en que igualmte. és interesada la California, como que vna y otra Provincia deven vnirse y comunicarse por los establecims. de los Rios Colorado y Gila, y si bien es mas a proposito para ellos y para los de la Peninsula la Recluta de Gente de estos Países internos, és asimismo cierto que no hay la suficiente para ambas atenciones y que será siempre preciso ocurrir á las Provincias inmediatas que vulgarmte. llaman de tierra afuera, bajo cuios presupuestos há de dedicar su esmero el Comisionado á llenár la idea de hazer vna ventajosa Recluta para la California, sin que sea mui sensible á la Poblazn. de Sonora arreglándose en lo // posible á los puntos que previenen los Articulos siguientes.

## 8.

Para dirijirse el Capitan Dn. Fernando de Rivera á la Ciudad de Guadalajara há de trancitar forsozante. por todas las Provincias sugetas á la Governazn. de Sonora en las que tiene libre arvitrio para reclutar así las familias como los Soldados, pero conciderando que no podrá conseguir el todo de la Recluta voluntaria sera indispensable que la complete en Guadalajara y de esta manera se minorará la extracion de Gente de Sonora.

## 9.

Yá se hán sacado tres Sargentos, dos Cabos y 20 Soldados de los Presidios de esta frontera, y deviendo mantenerse vacantes sus Plazas para ocuparlas con igual numero de Reclutas de las calidades que se prevendra en su lugar y há de traer de Guadalajara el Capitan Comisionado, es consiguiente // que para los Presidios de Californias solamte. tendrá que reclutar 34 Hombres, y si logra el completo de estos Vltimos en las Provincias, del Gobierno de Sonora, no repetira esta Recluta en Guadalexra. entendiendose lo mismo por lo que corresponde á las familias pobladoras; pero, dudandose de estos logros tendrá presente el Comisionado el numo. de Gente que reclute en los territorios internos para completar en los de afuera, el que se necesita y se le há prevenido pa. la California.

## 10.

*Recluta de las 24 familias Pobladoras.*

La Caveza ó Padre de cada familia há de sér Hombre de Campo, Labrador de exercicio, Sano, robusto, y sin conocido vicio ó defecto que pueda constituirle perjudicial en vnos Pueblos que ván á cituarse en medio de

numerosa Gentilidad docil, y sin malicia pero facil como toda clase de Indios á las primeras // inprecciones del buen ó mal exemplo de los Españoles que se radican en sus Países para civilizarlos con el buen trato y para atraerlos gustosos con la practica de la verdad Justicia y buenas costumbres al conocimto. de nra Sagrada Religion, y al suave Dominio de nro Catholico Monarca.

## 11.

En el numero de las expresadas familias han de incluirse vn Albañil, vn Carpintero que entienda de hazer Yugos, arados, Rodadas y Carretas, y vn Herrero que bastará con que sepa calzar rejas, azadones, hachas y Barras.

## 12.

*Reclutas para los Presidios de California.* Los Reclutas Soldados para la California hán de sér Casados, y de las mismas Calidades y circunstancias qe. los vecinos Pobladores, añadiendo las de mayor robustéz y aptitud para las fatigas del servicio de frontera.

## 13.

*Reclutas para los Presidios de Sonora.* Todos los que se recluten para los Presidios de Sonora hán de sér Solteros, Mozos que no pasen de 25 á 30 años, y que no vajen de 18 de dos varas lo menos de estatura, de buen colór, robustéz, presencia y sin defecto en el cuerpo y rostro.

## 14.

Ningun Recluta ha de entrár forzado sino voluntario, y no se le há de engañar ofreciendole más de lo que se há de cumplir, y explicará esta Instruccion.

## 15.

Desde el dia en que sea admitido el Recluta hán de disfrutar los qe. se destinen á *Californias y Sonora* los Haveres que les corresponden respectivamte. por los Reglamentos de aquella Provincia y de estas fronteras, y el vecino Poblador su sueldo de diez pesos mensales y la racion de estilo, pero á cada Recluta sin distincion se le asistirá con el socorro diario de dos Rs. en dinero // donde tuvieren comodidad para invertir en mantenerse, y en viveres quando transiten por parajes despoblados ó de frontera donde de nada les sirve la moneda, reservando el resto de sus haveres para cubrir los enpeños que hán de causar su marcha y avilitazn.

## 16.

Todos los Reclutas sin distincion se empeñarán por diez años que enpezarán á correr desde el dia de la fecha de sus filiaciones.

## 17.

Las que se formalizen á los Soldados serán con arreglo al formulario de las ordenanzas geners. del exercito, pero con la expresion genl. de que sientan la Plaza en vno de los Presidios de *Californias ó Sonora*, deviendo entregar el comisionado las correspondtes. filiaciones al *Govr. militar de esta Dn. Jacobo Vgarte y Loyola* y al de aquella Dn. Phelipe Neve para que estos Jefes distribuyan como les // paresca los Reclutas en las Compañias presidiales.

## 18.

A los vecinos Pobladores se les filiará del proprio modo y con el mismo empeño de diez años para qualquiera de los Pueblos de Sn. Joseph de Guadalupe ó de la Reyna de los Angeles de la Porciuncula, añadiendose á continuazn. de sus filiaciones las de sus Mugerres, hijos, hijas, y Hermanas ó Parientas Solteras que voluntariamte. quieran aconpañarlas,

pues á estas se les posibilita tomár estado con los Individuos de tropa qe. se mantienen Celibatos en la California por falta de Mugerres Españolas, segun las noticias comunicadas á este Superior gobierno.

19.

Convendrá que el Comisionado lleve desde Sn. Miguel de Orcasitas en su compañía para // solo las atenciones de Reclutas tres Oficiales ó dos oficiales y vn Sargo. y ademas pequeña partida de tropa.

20.

En su marcha hasta los confines de la Jurisdiccion del Virreynato de Nueva España és regular la proporcion de hazer algunos Reclutas de Soldados y vecinos para Californias, y como á vnos y otros se les há de asistir con sus socorros diarios, se les há de avilitár, y conducir nombrará el Comisionado á vno de los oficiales que le acompañen con parte de su pequeña Partida para que desde el Lugar de Prova. interna donde se hiciere el vltimo Recluta retroceda recogiendo á este y á los demas y los transporte al Rl. de los Alamos.

21.

En el interin que se verifica el retroceso // del Oficial comisionado cuidarán los Justicias de asistir al Recluta ó Reclutas con el socorro diario de dos Rs. dexando en poder de aquellos el Capitan Dn. Ferndo. de Rivera la cantidad corta qe. considere suficiente segun los dias qe. pueda tardar el regreso del Subalterno encargado. de recoger los Reclutas.

22.

Con ellos no há de hazer otros gastos el Oficial Subalterno qe. el de los Socorros diarios, vagajes, y demas mui preciso para la marcha hasta el Rl. de los Alamos, pues alli, donde hay mejor proporcion, se avilitaran los reclutas Soldados, Pobladores y familias de todo lo pertenezte. á Vestuarios, Armas, Montura y Remonta.

23.

Para los incinuados gastos de asistencia diaria y transporte de Reclutas Necesita el Capitan Dn. Ferndo. Rivera la anticipazn. de algun dinero, pero no pudiendo Yo regularla, me expondrá dho Capitan la qe. // estime suficiente para disponer su libramiento por el Govr. Intendte. de esta Prova. Dn. Pedro Corvalan, pues en el caso de que sean mayores los gastos qe. la Cantidad que aora se entregue, se admitirán y pagarán los Libramtos. del Capitan Rivera en la Caxa de los Alamos dandoles aquel con distincion y claridad que exprese los fines en que se haya invertido la cantidad librada, y los ofics. Rs. de aquella Caxa me pasarán sus avisos por conducto del Govr. Intendte.

24.

Desde la Raya de estas Provincias hasta Guadalaxara continuará el Capitan Dn. Fernando de Rivera la Recluta de Pobladors. y Soldados pa. Californias llevandolos en su Compa. á aquella ciudad, ó encargando su transporte á otro oficial Subalterno, y el cuidado de socorrer á los Reclutas con el diario de dos Rs., Bagajes y demas auxilios nesarios de marcha.

25.

// Luego que llegue á Guadalaxara se presentará al Sr. Regente, y entregandole el Pliego adjunto pedirá alojamiento para los Reclutas de que trata el antecedente Articulo (1), para los oficiales y tropa de su Partida, y para la Gente que ha de reclutar en dha Ciudad y deve destinarse a los Presidios de Sonora.



26.

Si el Capitan no huviere podido completár en la marcha las Reclutas pa. Californias hará las que falten en Guadalajara, y ocurrirá con el Pliego qe. acompaña á oficiales Rs. de aquella Caxa para que en virtud de las ordenes que oportunamte. les comunicará el Exmo Sr. Virrey entreguen las cantidades necesarias para avilitar á los Reclutas de Vestuario y menages de Montura con arreglo á la relazn. no. 3.

27.

// Por Sn. Blas hán de transportarse á la California los Reclutas Soldados y Pobladores que hiziere el Comisionado para la Peninsula desde los Confines de estas Provincias hasta Guadalajara, bajo cuia inteliga. avilitados los Reclutas y sus familias de lo qe. necesiten de Vestuarios y demas que expresa la Relazn. no. 3. marcharán á su destino, quando lo disponga el Sr. Regente, bajo la direccion y orns de otro de los oficiales Subalternos á quien dará el Capitan Dn. Ferndo. de Rivera las Instrucciones por escrito de lo que deva executar, entendiendose que hasta el dia del embarco de Reclutas en Sn. Blas se les há de asistir con el socorro diario en dinero ó viveres segun lo permita la posibilidad.

28.

Para los socorros de estos Reclutas // gastos de marcha hasta Guadalajara me dirá el Capitan Comisionado la prudente cantidad que podrá anticiparsele por la Caxa de Alamos, y para los Mismos fines hasta Sn. Blas ocurrirá á pedir la qe. se necesite á oficiales Rs. de Guadalajara.

29.

Hé dicho en el Arto. 26 que estos Sres. Minros. entregarán al Capitan Dn. Ferndo. de Rivera los Caudales para avilitar á los referidos reclutas de Californias de Vestuarios y demas que se indica, pero tendrá entendido que esta avilitacion há de hazerse con intervencion y anuencia de los citados Minros. y que há de constar en las cuentas que sobre este punto deve rendir y pasarme el Capitan Comisionado.

30.

Recivirá por via de suplemto. de la Rl. Caxa de Guadalajara y con calidad de reintegro por la de Alamos el dinero qe. necesite // para socorrer á los Soldados Reclutas de Sonora, costear sus Bagajes, y suministrarles las prendas de Vestuario y montura que previene la Relazn. no. 4.

31.

Hecha y havilitada esta recluta, y despachada por Sn. Blas la de California encargará la marcha de la primera al otro oficial Subalterno con parte de la Gente de la partida de tropa, y tomando el Capitan la restante se adelantará para evacuar la Comision de Remonta.

32.

El todo de ella lo expresa la Relazn. no. 2. pero si se posterga su solicitud no podra combinarse las providencias para que los auxilios lleguen de vna vez con poca diferencia á Californias, y se perderán muchos dias.

33.

Para aprovecharlos al mismo tiempo // que el Capitan Comisionado desenpeña sobre su marcha á Guadalajara *el encargo* de Reclutas, puede tambien ocurrir al de remonta, teniendo quien le ayude á su solicitud y acopio, y para esto echará mano de los demas oficiales y Sargtos. provistos pa. Californias, y de los Cavos y Soldados que se reunirán en Orcasitas.

## 34.

Es escusado prevenir al Capitan Dn. Ferndo. de Rivera los Parajes donde puede facilitarse la remonta, y el de su reunion oportuna pues tiene sobrada inteliga. del territorio, tambien lo es la prevencion sobre la calidad de las Mulas y Cavallos pues yá save que para qe. este Ganado sea vtil en la California há de tener además de las circunstancias de sano fuerte, de Rollo, hueso y regular alzada, la de *nuevo* pues las Bestias Viejas se inutilizan en // marchas dilatadas, y no es posible su renplazo en qualquier tiempo, y por vltimo conprehendo inecesario encargar al Comisionado el cuidado al tiempo de celebrar las compras las condiciones ventajosas de ellas, y la economia en el ajuste de precios, pues estos son puntos que acreditarán su zelo inteliga. y cumplimto. de sus obligaciones; pero si le prevengo que en el supuesto de que las remontas no hán de reunirse (si fuere posible) en paraje determinado *hasta* la llegada de las Reclutas, procure estipular con los vendedores de Remonta que los Cavallos Mulas Yeguas y demás han de mantenerse de su cuenta y riesgo en sus Agostaderos hasta qe. los Oficiales y tropa que elija el Capitan Comisionado los vayan recogiendo y trasportando al Paraje de Reunion que se señalará oportunamte. pues esto no quita pa. qe. el Hacendero // ó Ranchero vendedor perciva sin demora el importe de las Bestias que vendiere con tal que haga obligacion formál de entregárlas en su completo y de las Calidades. y circunstancias que se estipulen, siendo de su cuenta y riesgo las qe. se mueran pierdan o inutilizen ó se lleven los Indios Enemigos hasta el dia de la entrega á los Comisionados pa. recoger las remontas

## 35.

Para acopiarlas me informará el Capitan Dn. Fernando de Rivera el Caudal que necesite. y si será mejor que por sus Libramtos. se paguen á los Hacenderos en la Rl. Caxa de los Alamos el importe de las Bestias que faciliten.

## 36.

Segun lo prevenido hasta el precedte. Artículo deven venir los Reclutas Soldados y Pobladores que se huvieren para Californs. // en el Pais interno al Rl. de los Alamos y al cargo de vn Oficial Subalterno: los que se recluten para la misma Prova. en territorios de afuera hán de transportarse á Guadalajara, y de allí á Sn. Blas para su oportuno embarco bajo las ordenes de otro oficial Subalterno, y los Reclutas destinados á los Presidios de Sonora que hán de hacerse en Guadalajara deven conducirse por otro Oficial en derechura á Sn. Miguel de Orcasitas, dedicandose el Capitan Comisionado en su marcha con el auxilio delos demas Oficiales Sargentos Cavos y Soldados inteligentes á la solicitud, ajuste y compra de la remonta, y en su regreso á la colleccion y transporte de ella al paraje oportuno de su reunion.

## 37.

Este Paraje há de proponermelo la practica del Comisionado en inteliga. de que toda la // Remonta há de transportarse por los Rios Gila y Colorado, y de que facilitaré los auxilios precisos para su custodia hasta el dia en que salga la Expedicion, y quando llegue este caso los que se necesiten para su feliz logro.

## 38.

Podrá ser convente. para desenbarazar la marcha por tierra, el transporte por Mar de las familias Pobladoras y de la Tropa pa. Californias que deve reunirse en los Alamos. El Comisionado me informará lo qe. se le ofresca y paresca sobre este punto á fin de dictar mis resoluzes.

39.

Todos los Individuos que exerzan Comision delegada por el Capitan Dn. Ferndo. de Rivera deven llevar cuenta y razn. clara y formál de los Caudales que recivan, y atenciones en qe. los inviertan, // tanto para satisfacer á los Interesados, quanto para rendirlas á su Comandte. quien deve aprovarlas si lo merecieren y justificar con ellas sus cuentas gens.

40.

Quatro há de rendir el Capitan Dn. Ferndo. de Rivera la la. de la remonta, 2a. de las familias Pobladoras, 3a. de los Soldados reclutas para Californias, y 4a. de los qe. vengan pa. los Presidios de esta Prova. arreglandose á los formularios que le pasará el Govr. Intendte. a quien entregará las cuentas para qe. disponga su glosa ó reconocimto. les ponga su aprovazn. y me dé cuenta.

41.

Como no todo puede tenerse presente ni es dable advertir todas las ocurrencias nuevas que regularmte. ofrezan estas Comisiones menudas y prolijas, procurará el Comisionado vencer con su zelo practica y experiencias las dificultades.

42.

Finalmte. de qualquiera paraje donde haya proporcion de Correos me avisará el estado de sus Comisiones, y si ocurriere algun punto grave ó novedad que pida vrgente Superior auxilio ó resoluzn. me despachará sus Cartas por cordillera, pues asi se superarán las dificultades. y Yo podré convinar mis sucesivas providencias.

Arispe 27 de Dizre. de 1779.

//17

No. 1

**R**ELAZION del Numero de Familias para el nuevo Pueblo de la Reina de los Angeles, y del de Soldados para Californias que deve reclutar el Capitan Dn. Fernando de Rivera y Moncada en los Parages, y de las Calidades y Circunstancias que previene la Ynstrucn. que se le acompaña con esta fha.

<i>Reclutas</i>	<i>Su Numero.</i>
Famas. Pobladoras .....	24
Soldados pa. Californias .....	59
Total.....	83

*Nota:* Que en las veinte y quatro familias Pobladoras han de incluirse vn Albañil, vn Carpintero, y vn Herrero.

El Cavro. De Croix (Rúbrica)

Arispe 27 de Diziembre de 1779 (4 Copias).

//18

No. 2

Relacion de la remonta que deve hazer el Capitan Dn. Fernando de Rivera y Moncada para la Provincia de Californias con arreglo á lo que se le previene en la Instrucn. que acompaña.

	<i>Mulas</i>	<i>Cavallos.</i>
Para los Quatro actyales	} .....	350      130
Presidios del Loreto, Sn. Diego,		
Monterrey y Sn. Franco.		

Para el nuevo de Sta. Barbara .....	153	102
Para los 24 Pobladores de la Porciuncula...	48	24

Para los Pueblos de Sn. Joseph, y del expdo. de la Porciuncula	}	Mulas .....	551	256
		Cavallos .....	256	
		Yeguas de vientre ...	60	
		Ydem aburradas .....	80	
		Burros Garañones ...	5	
		Cavallos Padres .....	4	
		Ydem desperillados ...	4	

Tótal de todo ... 961

Arispe 27 de Dizre. de 1779 (Dos Copias).

//26

Exmo Sr.

**M**UI Sor. mio: La Provincia de Californias es vna de las que particularmente me encarga S. M. en las Reales Instrucs. y el Govor. Dn. Phelipe Neve, á consecuencia de las ordenes del Exmo. Sr. Virrey antecesor de V. E. y de las mias me há propuesto varios puntos relativos á la mejor defensa, conservacion y fomento de aquel importante Pais.

Examinados con proligidad los Informes repetidos del Governor. y mereciendome el mismo buen concepto qe. al difunto Sr. Virrey hé dispuesto la Ocupacion del Canál de Sta. Barbara con vn Presidio de este nombre y tres Misiones, la erecion de vn Pueblo con el titulo de la Reyna de los Angeles sobre el Rio de la Porciuncula, y S. M. se dignó aprovár el que se fundó á las margenes del inmediato de Guadalupe titulado Sn. Joseph.

Estas providencias exigen el aumto. de Tropas qe. manifiesta el Estado // adjunto No. 1 para distribuir las con arreglo al Documto. no. 2 y á fin de que tengan efecto son necesarios los auxilios de recluta de familias Pobladoras y Soldados acopio de remontas y otros varios que expondre á V. E. en distintos oficios.

Para facilitar los que en este refiero formé la Instruccion de que incluyo Copia encargué la practica de sus reglas al Capitan Dn. Fernando de Rivera y Moncada, y yá este oficial há dado principio á sus Comisiones, pero necesitando para su despenño que V. E. se sirva auxiliarlas acompaño á este fin la adjunta nota No. 3. que indica las necesarias disposiciones de V. E. y pues por mi parte hé dado las conducentes á la Cuenta y Razn. de gastos que deve presen- // tar el Comisionado Rivera luego que concluya la Recluta de tropa y familias Pobladoras, y el acopio de remontas, quedan hasta este caso pendientes mis sucesivos avisos y remision de Documtos. á V. E. para los cargos y abonos que resulten á los Presidios de Californias y á las familias, y para el reintegro de los Suplementos que hicieren las Reales Caxas de Guadalupe y Alamos.

Sr. Mayorga.

Servr. &. Arispe 9 de febo. de 1780.



//29

No. 2

**D**ISTRIBUZN. de las Tropas de Californias segun los Detalls de Govor.  
Dn. Phelipe Neve.

<i>Destinos—</i>	<i>Ca- pits.</i>	<i>Teni- entes</i>	<i>Alfe- ress</i>	<i>Sar- genes.</i>	<i>Ca- vos</i>	<i>Sol- dads</i>	<i>To- tal</i>
Presidio del Loreto .....	1	..	1	1	1	10	14
Rl. de Sta. Ana del Sur .....	..	..	..	1	..	6	7
Misiones dela frontera del Norte .....	..	1	..	..	2	23	26
Presidio de Sn. Diego .....	..	1	1	1	2	27	32
Misiones de su distrito .....	..	..	..	..	3	15	18
Pueblo nuevo de la Reyna de los Angeles .....	..	..	..	..	..	4	4
Presidio de Monterrey .....	..	1	1	1	2	27	32
Misiones de su distrito .....	..	..	..	..	3	15	18
Pueblo nuevo de Sn. Joseph .....	..	..	..	..	..	4	4
Presidio de Sn. Franco. ....	..	1	1	1	2	16	21
Misiones de su distrito .....	..	..	..	..	2	10	12
Presidio nuevo de Sta. Barbara y Misn. del Centro .....	..	1	1	1	2	26	31
Mision de Sn. Buenaventura .....	..	..	..	1	..	14	15
Ydem de la Purisima Concepcion .....	..	..	..	1	..	14	15
Totales....	1	5	5	8	18	211	249

Arispe 9. de Febrero de 1780.













**HECKMAN**  
BINDERY INC.



**JAN 98**

Bound -To -Please® N. MANCHESTER,  
INDIANA 46962

